



Prologue

AN: This is extra story where that guy is the leading actor.

It's totally undecided just how far this will be!

Anyway, the prologue

Caution

- This work is a fiction. The appearing character, organization, and everything else are different from in reality!

(Hakumei's excuse=> When making earth in reality as the stage, various names and setting cannot be tampered around as I pleased. What if it's actually different from the actual condition because of my lack in knowledge.....then, it's similar but actually it's different from the actual earth! That's why, things like organization name or country name or weapon name, it will be okay even if they are subtly different!)

And so because of that, please take care of me.

Part 1

It shouldn't be like this.

Everyone without exception surely must have said that in their life. Or even if not then surely they must have thought those words in their mind.

Looking at an ideal, setting a target, making a resolve, with seriousness, one pushed forwards toward the future that they wished to be.

But, what was called as life, and what was called as world, were extremely malicious. As though it was the norm, matter went left when one wanted right, and then it went right when one thought it would be left, and in the critical time it would went "right outside the expectation". That's impossible, absurd, it's unreasonable, etc., even if one was thinking those they would still be toyed around by the raging stream of absurdity as though they were swallowed and washed away by flash flood, and then thrown out into a beach(reality) somewhere like a driftwood.

People with their dream destroyed, their heart broken, just like a scrap wood, they would stood up and start walking once more, or else they would keep being buried under the sand(reality) and vanished.....it depended on each person. Although, in most cases there would be salvation from somewhere else for them. Someone might come to clear away the sand, there was also a possibility of someone pulling at their hand to drag their buried body. Perhaps there

would also be someone who would stay close at their side for them until their wound was healed.

But.....

(Surely, there will be no salvation for me. It's beyond hope for me to meet something like that. Aa, I, just what have I done.....)

It was inside an equipment storeroom that was overflowing with iron shelves and crammed with cardboard box and fixtures. The place wasn't that spacious, it was a place to temporarily deposit fixtures that were taken out from large storehouse for the time being, there a girl was sitting down while hugging her knees.

That girl's body twitched from the sudden large impact sound and she froze from fear. *gan-gan-gan* The impact sound reverberated consecutively. Someone was hitting at the storeroom door from outside. The girl lifted her face fearfully.

She was a cute—or more accurately, a beautiful girl. Her age looked around 16, 17 years old. She had blonde hair that was tied into a side tail using scrunchie. Her almond shaped eyes that resembled a mischievous cat was colored with jade pupils and long eyelashes. On the whole she had slender body type, her legs that were stretching out from her skirt were long and slender, wrapped in black stocking. She was a girl that could even pass as a model.

But, this girl was not a model by any means, and that was shown by her clothes that a normal girl wouldn't wear in the first place. Yes, the girl was putting on “lab coat” on her blouse.

She wasn't wearing a lab coat because she was forced to wear it due to some kind of event or because of some particular hobby, which could be obviously seen from the lab coat's worn out state and her appearance that looked familiar wearing the coat which for some reason could be thought as "fitting".

That girl dressed in a bit particular look screamed "hii-" when a strong impact sound *gan-* reverberated once more and she held her head with both her hands. She shrunk her body really small, from her look she was in a state of fear, however, it seemed that fear wasn't because the ringing impact sound outside the storeroom was unknown for her, rather she was scared because she knew the true form of that impact sound.

Because, while the girl's expression was scared, at the same time colors of pity, sadness, and guilt were coloring her face.

"I'm sorry, I'm sorry, I'm sorry....."

The girl in lab coat were repeating words of repentance with a voice so small as though it would melt into the air and become nothing. Just what was that apology referring to.....

But at that time, the resounding impact sound stopped completely. The lab coat girl thought of a question "What is going on?" with tears gathering in the corner of her eyes. The behavioral principle of "them" that the lab coat girl created was extremely instinctual. Therefore they shouldn't be leaving away that easily from the storeroom where the "prey" that was the girl was inside. Then, perhaps something different that attracted the interest of "them" had appeared.

The girl wiped her eyes roughly with the sleeve of her lab coat and she advanced through the space between the shelves slowly and quietly on all fours. And then, the girl

who finally arrived like a scared cat until beside a shelf at the inner part where it became a blind spot from the door of the storeroom, quietly peeked out her face from the cover of the shelf, her gaze moving toward the door that stopped making sound.

□Hiu□

She raised a strange scream that normally she wouldn't let out. The inside of her throat reflexively tightened from looking at the state of the door. Ahead of the girl's gaze, the door of the storeroom was——dented all over where it was in the verge of breaking down.

It was a storeroom to deposit items temporarily, so the door was made from iron and fitted with lock. Regardless large number of dent was created on the door as though it had received abnormal and concentrated impact which distorted it terribly. The outside corridor could be peeked out from the edge of the door. If the door received one more impact, then it would collapse inside the room.

□.....□

Killing her breathing, the girl stared fixedly at the door for a while, before long strength suddenly left her shoulders. It seemed “they” had went away somewhere just before the door broke.....

But, it seemed it was a bit too fast to think that.

GOGAANN The door was blown away inside the room at the same time with that terrific impact sound.□Hih□The girl screamed and her body froze. The next moment, the door that flew inside with fierce momentum cut a swath through the shelves near the girl.

The girl fell on her butt and then perhaps because it was her habit when she was surprised, she hugged her head with both her hands once more, tears were gathering in the corner of her eyes while she fearfully opened her shut eyes.

□Fuuh——, fuuh——□

□a, ua□

Ahead of the girl's gaze was a man. It was a young man in the middle of his twenty wearing a lab coat similarly like the girl.

□Se, senpai.....□

A whisper leaked out from the girl. The young man seemed to be a “senpai” that the girl knew. But, if a person that didn't know the situation was in this place, surely they would be unable to comprehend the girl's words at all.

Because, no matter how anyone saw it, for someone who was called as “senpai” by this girl whose intellectual eyes weren't clouded even with her scared expression, he didn't look like that type of person, no, in the first place he didn't even look like human.

The man's eyes didn't have fixed focus, those were abnormal eyes that sometimes fully bared the white of the eyes, his face and arms had blood vessels rising to the surface, despite how his body should have slim figure originally, his flesh was swelling bizarrely like bodybuilder, his breathing was rough and saliva was dripping down from his mouth, and he was raising low growl like a beast. There was no reasoning that could be seen from him. While he was wearing similar lab coat with the girl, but that appearance was truly out of place.

And then what was the most strange, was his fists that were tightly clenched. Those fists that likely were continuously hitting the iron door until it was broken just now, their skin was peeled, the flesh gouged, bones were jutting out, and they were soaked in blood, but those fists were rapidly returning back to normal in a speed that was obvious in a glance. No, perhaps to say more accurately, the flesh was swelling up, the bones that were cracked were connected back, and the fist was repaired to the shape of a fist that was still warped.

□uUUa-□

□A, a.....□

The girl backed down while still on her butt slowly. The abnormal young man kept growling while heavily pursuing after her. The storeroom wasn't that big. Therefore, the back of the girl was immediately blocked by a wall.

The man was standing like a mindless beast in front of the cornered girl. Something warm was flowing out from between the legs of the girl who was holding her head. It was something that she did because of the extreme fear, but the girl herself had no composure to be care about that.

Toward such a girl, the fist of the young man that destroyed even a door made from iron was raised without even a shred of hesitation.

(I'm, sorry..... If only I didn't do that kind of research.....
I'm sorry, senpai.....everyone.....)

While trembling toward her death that would surely arrive a few beats later, the girl repeated her repentance inside her heart.

Like that, the fist that could easily crush the face of the girl was swung do——

□Doctor Grant!□

An angry voice of a young woman and dry bursting sound reverberated. The fist of the “senpai” stopped. And then, slowly he turned around while growling. The lab coat girl also directed her gaze toward the door from the shadow of the “senpai”.

There, was the figure of a tall woman wearing black suits with both her hands readying a handgun.

□Doctor Grant, please get down!□

□tsu□

Hearing the sharp instruction that shook the air like an electric shock, Doctor Grant——Emily Grant reflexively flopped her body low on the floor.

Right after that was the sound of gun discharging resounding consecutively. And then, a beast’s roar. Footsteps that were like earthquake was going away from Emily. When Emily moved her gaze while lying low on the ground, she could see the figures of the black suits woman firing toward the “senpai” and “senpai” who charged ahead without caring of that.

At first it seemed the woman was aiming at the shoulders and legs of “senpai”, but then she clicked her tongue looking that he didn’t even seem to itch when the bullets hit. The next moment, with an astounding speed that it wouldn’t be an exaggeration even if it was said that it was nearly instantly, the “senpai” closed the distance and he pushed out his fist toward the woman while screaming.

In no time, it seemed that the woman would become a mere lump of meat just like that, but at the next instant, it was proven that the woman wasn't an ordinary person.

□Haa-□

Along with a short breathing, the woman *stepped forward*. Like that, she weaved through the approaching fist and stepped inside the bosom of the "senpai" and grasped at his collar, and turned around. Without stopping she performed a splendid shoulder throw.

The "senpai" whose charging momentum was used for a throwing technique had his posture turned upside down and thrown onto the wall at the opposite side. Even so, as expected it was like he didn't feel any pain but.....

□.....Forgive me.□

That sentence was audible. At the same time, a dry bursting sound rang. The fired 9mm bullet penetrated from an eye of the "senpai" and mercilessly pulverized the brain. The body of the "senpai" twitched, and before long he stopped moving as though all strength had left him.

The woman held her handgun with both hands while observing the body with fixed stare for a while. Then with a sigh strength left her shoulders, it seemed she had judged that the "senpai" wouldn't move anymore. And then, she exchanged the gun's magazine with trained motion while taking a contact using her communication device to somewhere, with her quite expressionless face moving toward Emily that was sitting dumbfounded inside the storeroom.

□Doctor Grant, it's great that you are safe. I am Vanessa Paradis of state security. I come to pick you up. I will guard

you until a safe place from here on.□

The woman who introduced herself as Vanessa quickly approached Emily's side and calmly held out her hand. The girl who saw from nearby comprehended it, indeed this woman had an appearance and air where it could be glimpsed that she was used to rough scene. Long slit and sharp eyes, with very short hair that was colored between grey and beige. Her height seemed to surpass 179 centimeter easily. Her whole body was emitting cold presence that was sharp like a knife.

Surely it was because of that, Emily wrinkled her eyebrows in vigilance.

□.....I have grasped the gist of your circumstance. It's natural for you to be cautious. However, we don't have any leeway time wise. This facility is filled with the infected personnel. My colleagues are attracting their attention, but even so they cannot hold for long. That's why, please believe me for now and come with me.□

□.....senpai is.....□

□.....Forgive me. My priority protection target is you. I have no leeway to leave him as it was. Also, it was already too late when he became like that, that matter——□

□Yes. I am the one who know that the best.□

Emily stared for a while at the mere shadow of “senpai's” former self sinking in the sea of blood behind Vanessa, after that she moved her gaze to Vanessa. She was still having cold atmosphere and looked expressionless, but in her eyes that were so close Emily's figure was reflected on them, sympathy and apology toward could be seen somehow.

Emily stared fixedly at those eyes, then she took the hand of Vanessa that was still held out toward her.

□This doesn't mean I trust you but.....I still, cannot die.□

□Yes, I don't mind that. Don't be separated from me no matter what, please follow me.□

Emily roughly wiped the tears gathering at the corner of her almond-shaped eyes that looked like cat with her lab coat, and then she sternly raised the corner of her eyes. Vanessa who saw that nodded briskly. And then she exited the room while leading Emily.

□.....Senpai, I'm sorry. I swear, that I'll surely stop this.□

□.....□

Emily left behind her words for the “senpai” at the end.

Emily who was still young and unfamiliar with the world even though she was called as genius was always alone in the university that she was enrolled into by skipping grade. Her personality that hated losing by nature caused her to use speech and conduct that seemed to say ‘I'm totally okay!’ even in such an environment, but as expected for Emily who was still very young it was something tough.....

What let such Emily who was pretending to be tough to be a researcher in the true meaning, was the professor and the students of the laboratory where she was currently attached to. If the professor who she was indebted to for anything and everything was like her father, then the seniors were like her big brother and sister. They were affectionate to her like she was their little sister, and yet they treated her more than an equal as a researcher.

Even amidst those people, the completely changed “senpai” whose breathing stopped atrociously in front of her eyes was a benefactor who especially helped Emily warmly.

The silent prayer of Emily that went for less than a beat, was filled with really, really strong feeling that couldn’t be expressed with words.

Even while staying vigil at the surrounding, Vanessa sent a glance without emotion at such Emily. No, there was a slight tremor in that gaze. It was something like a sympathy, or possibly worry.....

However, the moment Emily finished her short silent prayer, Vanessa’s gaze returned to its former expressionless look where her emotion couldn’t be discerned.

□Let’s go.□

□Yes.□

Inside the facility where faint gunshot could be heard, while staying vigil toward the mindless superhumans infesting it, or possibly, fearing the worst reunion with the completely changed substitute father, big brothers, and big sisters, the two vanished inside the gloomy corridor.

Part 2

□Oo, so that's the famous clock tower. Yep, as expected something like this is best seen with your own eyes.□

There was a Japanese young man making click-clack sounds with his smartphone while making satisfied voice. Shouldering a largish rucksack, this young man wearing plain clothes with black tone didn't have any particular trait in his appearance.

That blackish young man took photo for a while, and then while confirming the result picture he lifted his face suddenly in realization.

□Crap, this is not the time to keep sightseeing. I've got to accomplish the instruction from my demon king-sama.□

The clock taken inside the photo was already showing the closing of the day. The surrounding scenery was already becoming quite dark with the cloudy weather although it wasn't as far as snowing.

The young man put away his smartphone and shouldered back his rucksack before he turned around while breathing out 'haa' white breath.

□Even though this doubled with my private business, but this is still a rough way of using someone. Well, I too am his relative more or less.....there is no way I can refuse. Let's do my best.□

The young man vanished between the people hurrying to return home while talking to himself like that. Before long, his figure was completely buried into the surrounding scenery and he couldn't be seen anymore.

Although, before that young man slipped into the crowd, there was not even a person who sent their gaze toward him. He was too much normal, and too much without presence.

Someone who was able to notice that abnormality, was of course didn't exist there.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

This might make me sound obstinate, but one more time,

This is different from real earth! That's why, if you want to retort 'What the hell is state security bureau, somehow various things are seriously wrong here!', I beg you to do it only inside your heart.

.....Really, sorry.

Ah, also, I uploaded my activity report. I also placed cover image and special illustration there.

If you don't mind please look over there too.

The next update will be at 6 P.M Saturday too.

Fuh, who am I you ask? I am——

London outskirts that was wrapped in thin mist. In a corner of a retro street where it felt like old fairy-tale or folklore might be hiding, there was a splendid residence where history could be felt from it conspicuously.

It appeared to be prudently maintained that it didn't look worn out. The garden that was spreading out at the front, the small path made from spread out white gravel and the flower bed where seasonal flowers were blooming, a small fountain where a beautiful goddess was sitting, all of those were first class work that gave elegant impression, from them it could be understood that really, really much labor, expense, and time were spent.

And that was how it should be, the master of this residence——Jefferson Allgrey was a famous wealthy person even at Britain. He was from a family lineage that was titled as the so-called “Real Estate King” that for generations possessed countless plot of land and building, buying and selling them.

Jefferson who was the current master of this generation Allgrey family also properly inherited the business talent from his ancestors, not only that he also seemed to possess political talent, he was a capable human that raised definite result while engaged in two trades of political world and real estate magnate at the same time.

The residence of such Jefferson was normally visited by many people. The type of people visiting was varied. If there were people from the same political world visiting, then there were also people from real estate companies who visited, there were also a lot of people visiting who were his personal friends.

Anyway, it was a house where the flow of people visiting it never ceased, and it was also a well-known fact for the people at the surrounding area.

Today too, a few hours already passed since the sun set, there was also the shrouding mist that it was a time where darkness had completely descended. The principal residence of Allgrey was lighted with brilliant illumination. Several high class cars were being parked nearby the main gate, showing how there were many guests visiting.

Although, each of the visitors today were definitely well-known characters, but it seemed they weren't friends that were invited for simple dinner, they also didn't appear to be guests who came for work-related matter to speak about politics or business.

□Now then, chief. Don't you think that we should get down to business soon? For you to assemble more than half of the society's upper echelons.....it must be something really considerable isn't it? My guess that it must be a matter about them.□

A middle-aged man whose body was wrapped in a suit that was obviously high quality in a glance, with splendid moustache and belly meat, he addressed Jefferson as "chief".

Even though Jefferson was called with that designation that wasn't used that often in general, but he still behaved

naturally. Looking from that attitude of him, it could be understood that it was only the matter of course for him to be called like that by the people who were called to this place today.

Jefferson slowly ran his gaze at the surrounding. It seemed that he had finished his meal, there was only wine put in front of him. Other than them, there were several servants of Allgrey family and the respective bodyguards that were brought by each guest.

Tonight there were nine guests gathered. Everyone of them were prominent figure that owned phenomenal result in their respective field, but the fields they participated in were completely scattered. Seen from the side this was a gathering that really couldn't be understood, the biggest possibility was that these people were the personal friend of Jefferson. Even if there was an outsider who knew of this meeting, then surely they would only be able to think of this as a meeting of fellow friends all the same.

But, from how Jefferson was sitting at the seat of honor while the others were sitting around a long table, it seemed that there was a clear pecking order here. And that became even clearer from the atmosphere they were clad in.

□.....They are the real thing.□

A short sentence. For people who didn't know the circumstance, they would tilt their head wondering what he was speaking about. But, all the people at the dining table were instantly going astir from that sentence that was said by Jefferson with oppressive tone.

□Is that.....is that, really true?□

□Wasn't that just a mere group kidnapping.....□

□Certainly it was a inexplicable case, but.....□

□A case of that degree is not that rare. Chief, do you have any basis saying that?□

While their mouths were speaking words where confusion and expectation were mixing together, their gazes were concentrating at Jefferson.

□There is still only circumstantial evidence. But, I have no doubt of it.I have confirmed that all the people who were sent to investigate were returning to their daily life without getting any information. Far from investigating, they forget even the society.□

□No way.....□

□However, just with that..... It's not as though method to induce such situation doesn't exist you know?□

□Yeah, I know. Of course, I didn't make my conclusion just with that.This is the situation that can be currently confirmed. I judged that it is already at the level where there would be no problem calling it as *supernatural*.□

Saying that, Jefferson urged a servant with his gaze to distribute written report, the upper echelons sent their eyes to it. After they did that, they went astir once more.

The content that was written in that written report was,

It wrote, the house of the target group that had been confirmed once for some reason couldn't be approached for the second time. Even when they walked following map, when they noticed they were walking in circle at a completely different place.

It wrote, the observer was observing from a distance of 800 meter, regardless of that their gaze would meet without fail.

It wrote, the family register of the target that shouldn't exist until a few days ago was registered before they knew it.

It wrote, that abnormality wasn't noticed by anyone in the administration side. They didn't even feel that anything was out of place.

It wrote, everyday, their partners were disappearing one by one.

And then,

——It wrote, the people who were tasked to investigate, without exception all of them would have blank in their memory after a while. Even the matter that was being reporter right now, whether it was really true or not.....was unknown.

Surely everyone was scanning the report until the very last sentence. Silence descended on the dining table. Everyone was fixated on the content of the report.

But, after a while.....

□Fu, fuha, fuhahahahaha-□

One person raised a laughing voice looking like he couldn't hold it down. It was a hideously distorted laughing voice that was composed from joy and madness. However, such laughing voice that would grant discomfort to anyone hearing it whether one wanted it or not, was gradually spreading to the other upper echelons too.

□Finally, we found the *real thing*! Magnificent! I wonder just what kind of supernatural they are knowing!□

□At the very least, it seemed they have the skill to interfere with human's brain. That's something beyond the position of mere students.□

□It cannot stay like this. Chief! We have to immediately send assault force and secure one or two sample!□

Excitement was ruling over the place. It was a mad excitement, just like how someone who lost in a desert finally found an oasis, that feeling of insane arousal before their craving could be fulfilled.

Perhaps this was only natural for them. Because these people had been secretly maneuvering, searching for "that" through so many years and months that they couldn't count anymore.

□Calm down.....telling all of you that is impossible I guess. I understand well everyone's feeling. Then, everyone agree of the plan to move with the purpose of obtaining sample? There will be many troublesome things if we completely kidnapped all of them.....□

□What, they are people who had gone through group disappearance once you know, chief. Even if it happened for the second time, surely there will be no one who thinks it strange. Not to mention there are also those among them who didn't return before this.□

□The ability possessed by the samples are concerning matter but.....they are just children after all. It shows from how they are content with being student while possessing such power. We can do whatever we like if we involve their

family into it. I will immediately begin to prepare the experiment site.□

□The returnee, they obtained supernatural while they disappeared.....I'm bothered with the whereabouts of those that doesn't return. Perhaps, they are in the place that have to do with supernatural? If we grasped that, even us.....□

The upper echelons let out their opinion after Jefferson's words. The meeting tonight was obviously filled with passion that was never seen before.

Like that, when they had decided the most of their plan from here on, Jefferson opened his mouth.

□Then, all of you, proceed with the matter paying meticulous attention for the sake of the accomplishment of our dearest wish. The priority target for securing sample will be the girl who is called as "Yue" as the first in the list——□

□About that, I think it's better if you stop with that though.□

And also the girls who aren't Japanese that are around the returnees——Jefferson was about to say that, but his words were suddenly cut off.

For a moment Jefferson thought that it was someone among the upper echelon who cut him off, but he immediately discard that idea as impossible. The returnees from the group disappearance in the middle of day that agitated the society——if it was asked what was the aspect that was clearly different in them compared to before, then the first thing that would attract the attention was the existence of the not Japanese girls who suddenly appeared.

Thinking from how their family register was created before anyone noticed too, then it would be valid to think of them

as “visitor from the supernatural side”. Then it was natural to prioritize securing them as sample.

That was the common understanding between Jefferson and other upper echelons that they obtained from continuously investigating the series of turmoil of the returnees that started from the group disappearance. For that reason, it was impossible for anyone to object here. And above all, the *voice of young man* which cut him off was a voice he wasn't familiar with!

Jefferson felt something cold running through his spine while raising an angry voice that questioned the identity of the person.

□Who! Where are you!?!□

□No, I am right in front of you from some time ago. I was normally eating meal here.□

A voice that contained resignation resounded. At that moment, not only Jefferson, the upper echelons, the servants, and then the bodyguards too, they all finally aware.

□Yo□

With a really light mood, at the chair that was positioned at the opposite side of Jefferson, with his mouth stuffed with the same cooking that Jefferson and others were eating just now, was a Japanese young man greeting with his hand lightly raised!

□You bastard.....where did you enter from? What is the guard at the entrance doing?□

The upper echelons and the servants were greatly shaken, the bodyguards were in the middle of taking out their handgun in order to recover from their disgrace, while Jefferson was restraining them from firing before he opened his mouth calmly. It seemed that he was also shaken, but the speed of him rallying back his mind ought to be said just as expected from an authority of politic-real estate world that managed this meeting.

Right after he took back his calm, dominating aura overflowed from Jefferson. That aura was something intense, if an ordinary person felt it then not only they would wither down without being able to say anything, they would undoubtedly trickle cold sweats while getting all flustered.

But, that young man ward off such dominating aura like a swaying willow.....or rather, in the first place the young man didn't even pay attention to that aura, he kept eating the cooking of Allgrey residence with gusto while talking.

□Nguh. You asked me from where, I entered normally from the door you know. Mugu mugu, I even said excuse me. Though I was normally ignored.□

□.....That, seems to be the cooking of my residence though?□

□It's awfully delicious. As expected from the place of a big shot politician and the real estate king. There was leftover in the kitchen, so I loaded it onto a plate by myself.I, I pretty much asked okay? I took silence to mean OK, but I properly asked okay? I'm not stealing you know?□

For some reason the young man kept reminding something like□It's true you know?□. Jefferson knitted his eyebrows at such young man. The more he looked, the more this young man looked like a normal youth. No, in a sense, he was too

normal in presence and appearance that if he didn't concentrate it felt like he would naturally forget him, perhaps he should say that this young man wasn't normal in that sense.....

□Who are you.....or perhaps it's too unsophisticated for me to ask that? That remark of yours just now in this situation. And then that ability that managed to infiltrate here without anyone able to notice. You are.....a returnee huh?□

Jefferson spoke his conjecture with conviction, but for some reason the young man who heard his words frowned and his face looked a little sad. While Jefferson was perplexed from that inexplicable reaction, the young man asked with a voice that also sounded sad.

□A returnee huh? you asked, if you investigated about us, then shouldn't you know about me too? I expected a reaction like□You bastard-, you are a returnee huh!?□, but.....□

□What? A report of you is not.....□

Jefferson was perplexed. He had looked over all the report of the returnee, he had driven into his head all the information of the returnees' profile from their family until their relative. If the young man before his eyes was a returnee that had been reported, then there was no way he couldn't recall him.

But, when one of his servants excitedly showed to him the returnees written report that had been converted into digital data in tablet.....

□.....Returnee list No. 28——Endo Kousuke?
.....ah□

□Yep, you forgot aren't you? Isn't that right? That's fine, I understand. Hehe, I'm used to it. Although my shadow is thin even in digital data, I'm not co, concerned at all you know? I am a riajuu you know? That's why, I'm really, really not concerned at all okay?□

Strange silence descended on that place. The young man——Kousuke who seemed to be thin in shadow even inside digital data was making *kacha kacha* sound with the spoon and fork, only that sound was resounding with clarity inside that room. Word of□Delish-□that he was whispering until just now was changing into□It's salty huh□.

□S, so this is the supernatural that you possess.□

□.....I got this since birth. Even my mum, she often forget to do things like picking me up at kindergarten.....□

□.....I, I see. That, you know, must be hard for you huh.□

For some reason Kousuke received gentle words and sympathy from the man who was aiming at him and his friends. The salt content of the high class cooking was increasing! A female servant was wiping her eyes with a handkerchief. The eyes of the bodyguards who were readying their gun until just now were turning lukewarm!

While spouting complaint□If you sympathize than give me presence□inside his heart, Kousuke cleared his throat *cough*, he stopped eating and opened his mouth.

□So, about the reason I came here.□

□Mu, that's right. Certainly I've never thought that a returnee will directly march into here. It appeared that your side has also investigated us to a certain degree.You, don't tell me, you came alone here?□

□Well, yeah. Actually I was in the middle of personal travel though. But suddenly you guys are making conspiracy, so I was told to go here for a bit to crush all of you.□

Kousuke was looking at his smartphone while saying□In front of Rana, I cannot refuse that guy's request□with his shoulders dropping down. Seeing that Jefferson exchanged look with the upper echelons and the bodyguards while his expression turned ridiculing.

□Crushing us, is it. Looks like you are growing impudent after obtaining supernatural huh. It is overwhelmingly faster to shot your four limbs with lead bullet in this range. It seems that you have the technique to interfere with your opponent's awareness, but in this limited space, can you crush us faster than bullet?□

gacha Hard ominous sounds resounded countless time. The bodyguards were focusing their gun muzzle toward Kousuke. Their number was a little less than twenty people. The place was a large dining room where sixty people could enter with room to spare, but certainly in this limited space it was equivalent with not having any way to escape from twenty gun muzzles.

Jefferson who thought that this young man was showing composure because he was a child who was drunk in his own power reversely showed a composed attitude. He crossed his arms above the table, and then while hiding his mouth behind his joined hand, his sharp gaze was striking toward Kousuke.

□Young man. Won't you come to our side? According to the report, it seems that the livelihood of all of you doesn't change much before and after obtaining supernatural. It's worthy of praise that not one of you is running wild, but

surely that's only because you all don't understand the way to use the power you obtained. Then, we will teach you what is the right way to use that power. This Jefferson Allgrey can promise you, a life that is filled with riches and fame that is beyond your imagination.□

□.....You really can say that with straight face after calling human as sample huh. They said that the skin of a politician's face is thick but, that's really true. Scaryyy□

Kousuke didn't look like he was particularly moved by Jefferson's persuading words, rather he showed a creeped out look. While raising one of his eyebrows that money and fame didn't resound in Kousuke's heart, Jefferson continued his words.

□Then what about woman? You are ——□

□I have girlfriend, I'm fine in that. Rather, my girlfriend is a super beauty already. She is already the best-, yep.□

Having his words cut off and hearing Kousuke suddenly speaking fondly of his girlfriend in front of him caused Jefferson's gaze to become something severe.

□.....It's natural for you to feel almighty if you have a special power. But, what is called reality is something that is more heartless than what all of you is thinking. Perhaps if it's just you, or possibly it's just all of you returnees then you all might make it work out somehow. But, what about the people around you? Your family, your friends who are not returnee, relatives. Can you protect all of them? Our society is not just about violence you know?□

Saying that, Jefferson looked at his surrounding. Ahead of his gaze were the upper echelons of their society ——every one of them were successful people who possessed *social*

power. And then, the gaze of Jefferson spoke more eloquently than anything.

That this wasn't everything their society possessed.

In other words, even in the one in a million chance all the people here died, their society itself wouldn't be finished. There were still other people with power gathering in their society.

□I'll recognize your ability to gather information until this far and your guts to infiltrate into here alone. But, for you to be under the impression that the situation before your eyes is everything there is, you are still just a child. We have seek for supernatural from long ago, the society that have laid stretch our root to everywhere in the world, we are——□

□Hydra, right?□

Jefferson who implicitly pressed for obedience under the name of cooperation to Kousuke with condescending attitude was about to disclose the name of their society with plenty of emotion, but right before he could, Kousuke easily revealed that name.

Jefferson who twitched in reaction was about to open his mouth further, but ignoring him Kousuke ate the last of his food and operated his smartphone with one hand, then he spoke out the content that was displayed there.

□Abduction, murder, robbery, human experiment, on top of that even inducing war, a fanatic group of supernatural that will do anything——Hydra. Certainly it looks like you guys have long history. The origin of the name is because no matter how many upper echelons and parts of the organization are crushed, the survivor of the organization that is hiding somewhere will restore the organization back.

The organization had existed since before the colonial period, historically the organization has been crushed several times, but before one knows it the organization is revived. The current chief is you.....□

After that Kousuke read out loud the internal conditions of secret society Hydra. And then the information of upper echelon bunches who were here like their name, surface information, family, friends, work relatives, on top of that even the name of their illegitimate child or relationship with other organization that they kept secret even inside the organization. He didn't stop with just that, the concealed upper echelons who weren't here and the location of bases, and even further and further, things like the innermost thought of the upper echelons toward each other and so on, Kousuke disclosed everything.

It was clear that what was disclosed wasn't nonsense from the upper echelons who opened their mouth so wide it looked like their jaw might come off and their expression whose face turned completely pale.

Everything that they had done was impossible to be known by the information network of children or even by ordinary adult. Jefferson who had that fact thrust right back at his face not just by two fold but by ten thousand fold, the color of his face clearly shown how the capacity of his trained mind had completely went over capacity.

□When you peer into the abyss, the abyss will also peer back at you——su~ch famous expression, if it's you guys who loves supernatural then surely you have heard it before. We are standing in the superior position. Just how do you guys able to blindly believe such thing without any basis at all?□

□You, you bastard.....□

□Well, you guys, you all are veteran through many adversity in *the surface world* huh. You guys must have never even dreamed that children who is going through school life without a care after getting their hand on magic will be able to overwhelm you even in information volume.....□

□Why.....just how, you know that much.....□

□That's, if we know that there are some guys aiming for us, to say nothing of us, there is no way our demon king-sama will stay silent. Because that guy, he look like a cruel and heartless savage bastard, but actually he is totally spoiling the important people around him.□

□Demon king, you say?□

□Yeah. A godslaying demon king. That guy killed even god for the sake of a woman, and now you guys try to lay your hand on exactly that woman.□

Kousuke's gaze was growing to be filled with limitless sympathy. Jefferson's expression was grandly convulsing. There was already no dominating aura of a big-shot that could overpower ordinary person coming from him. Because he was a veteran manager and a politician who had piled up many experiences of going through adversity that he was able to understand Kousuke's experience and felt a sense of danger welling up inside him.

That was—they had touched something that should not be touched.

But, however, the people who were still relatively young among the upper echelons didn't have enough of that intuition.

□What is, what is, what demon king-. Just, what godslaying! Even nonsense has limit!□

□Tha, that's right! As expected you are just a kid. It seems that you don't even know how to bluff. Something like godslaying, as expected you have exaggerate too much.□

□Chief, no more word is necessary! Let's make this brat pay the compensation for looking down on the society! You guys, just keep him alive! Do it!□

Saying that, they started a reckless action without waiting for the order of the chief which was normally impossible. Jefferson immediately tried to raise his voice to stop them, but faster than he could, several of the black-suited bodyguards, because of the strange atmosphere and the mysterious uneasy feeling they had, as though aroused by their impulse they were aiming their gun toward Kousuke's limbs while jumping forward.

□.....Haa. I had more or less tried it, even though I thought of doing this by getting spared from releasing the shackle.□

Inside the situation that was moving all at once, there was *only* that whisper resounding.

□Wha-. Where is-□

□Shit-, what is going on!? Where did that guy go!?!□

□No way, he vanished!?!□

The jumping forward black-suited bodyguards were surrounding a chair that had no one on it in feeling dumbfounded. The chair should have Kousuke sitting on it until just a moment ago. From the beginning until the end

they didn't take off their gaze even for an instant from that chair.

He was certainly there. Right in front of their eyes. They would grip him up, pulled him down from the chair, and held him down. They reached out their hands without leaving any place to escape while even imagining how he would counterattack, they were certainly aware of him until the moment they could touch him. Yet despite so their hands moved through empty air and "when they noticed" the target had vanished. It was as though he wasn't there right from the start.

□-, our mind has been interfered already!? Be careful, our awareness is being manipulated!□

Jefferson, thinking that it couldn't be helped now it had come to this, he pushed at the emergency button at the other side of the table to summon the bodyguards standing by everywhere inside the residence while giving a warning. And then, he himself also took out a handgun from his breast pocket, at that time Kousuke's voice resounded once more. However, it was a voice with slightly different air than until just now.

□Interference to awareness? Fuh, what exaggeration..... My Ground Shrinker was beyond the pale of your perception ability, isn't that's all there is to it?□

□Wha-, impossible, standing on the ceiling!?!□

Jefferson and others who were staying on guard against the most likely possibility of Kousuke sliding under the table was thinking in the corner of their mind 'doesn't it feel like his tone is a little strange?' while they looked up in surprise, and then they exposed a really stupid expression from shock.

Although, surely such reaction was something that couldn't be helped if they saw a human standing really naturally on the ceiling as though to say 'Gravity? What's that?'.

Furthermore,

(Why, why, is he making a strange pose!?)

Yes, Kousuke was standing upside down on the ceiling while covering his face with one hand with his eyes glaring down at Jefferson and others from between his fingers' gap! On top of that, before they knew it his body was already in an appearance of total black clothes, his eyes were wearing a sunglass on one-lens type, and his other hand was holding a black knife in a position that was crossed with the hand that was covering his face! Surely if the rabbit eared assassination group of another world saw this, they would undoubtedly clap and cheer while giving high praise of
□What cool pose!!□!

□Fools who fell into the abyss of selfish desires and fanaticism. I'll teach into your body, that in this world, there are things that you ought not to know.□

For some reason, while rotating once before displaying a chuuni pose (version 24) again, Kousuke, no, the assassin of the strongest class who was awakened in various meaning at the other world, thrown a declaration of war toward the fanatic occult group. Together with that chuuni self-introduction!!

□The shadow of demon king, the vanguard of the dark rabbit ear family——Rapid Fang Shadow Claw, Kousuke E Abyssgate. Has arrived!!□

What does rabbit ear mean..... Abyssgate, gate to where..... Those retort of Jefferson and others didn't form

into loud words.

Because right after that, the peerless one even against the god's apostles in another world, the one with the thinnest shadow in the world, the best assassin in the world bared his fang.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Everyone's review that is like it has been planned beforehand blew away Hakumei.

Like, Endo-kun, you are loved huuh.He is loved, right?

I properly got his name out this time, so please remember it properly.

He is Endo Abyssgate-kun, okay.

PS

I placed the information about the special SS for each bookstore-sama in my activity report.

Please confirm it if you please.

The next update is planned at 6 P.M Saturday too.

Foreign Country is Scaryyyy

□Haaaa~~~~~□

It was past noon where warm sunlight was showering down. In a corner of a certain city, at a lovely café with wooden entrance and terrace, a groan of a zombie was resounding. Although, people who got startled from that groan that sounded like it was reverberating from the realm of the dead was nonexistent.

Whether it was the couple that was feeding each other with cute cake at the terrace, or the male customer with businessman appearance operating his tablet alone, or the old man walking his dog who just passed through in front of the terrace, none of them showed any sign of being bothered by that groan. Or rather, they didn't even look like they noticed the groan.

□aaa~~~~~□

The groan resounded once more. As expected no one noticed, but the owner of the groan who wasn't paid attention to, he also seemed to get used of not being paid attention to, so he groaned without any reservation regardless of him being in public space.

To say more while in this topic, that zombie imitation had his face pressed down on the café's table, with both his hands

holding his head. He looked like, someone who had made a mistake that couldn't be taken back and lamented his very life.

Just to make sure, this wasn't a zombie that escaped a research place somewhere and slipped into the street, as made evident by the glass with the logo of the café filled with beverage put in front of him, and the sandwich that still wasn't touched but had already been properly ordered.

But, at that time, the smartphone that was placed on top of the table of the zombie imitation was starting to play the BGM of a certain epic RPG's demon king battle. That ringtone caused the zombie imitation to twitch in reaction, his hand crawled with his face still pressed on the table and picked up the smartphone.

And then, he put the phone on his ear and took the call still with his face pressed on the table.

□.....*ba!*□

□What's with that voice? That voice sounds like you are going to drop dead anytime.□

□Yeah, I feel dying. I caused my shame to overflow.....□

□.....I guessed it already. So you done it again huh, Endo.□

□I done it.....I really done it, Nagumo. Perhaps, I'm no good already.□

□Endo.....□

From the other side of the phone receiver, the conversation partner—the one who requested for the annihilation of the occult fanatic group Hydra, Nagumo Hajime guessed the

mental damage of Kousuke and seemed to be exasperated, or perhaps it was sympathy in his voice that called Kousuke's name.

And then,

□Well, that doesn't matter——□

□It matter! Don't put it aside that simply! Give me more sympathy here! Have some more care! You are my kindred-spirit who know the same pain like me right!?□

Having his problem simply put aside like that, the excessive sadness caused Kousuke to succeed in coming back from zombie back to human. *Gabacho!* His face that was pressed on the table flew up and he raised the scream of his soul as though willing it to reach the other side of the sea.

□Even if you say that. In my case, I have a strong position as the victim of Hauria, but in your case, recently it came from yourself right? Not long ago you was still okay if it was just a little scuffle. Or else, was the case this time that difficult?□

□Uguu. Stabbing me right where it hurt..... That's, it wasn't really that bad yeah but.....when I entered battle, unconsciously..... Maybe this is because before I asked you to open the gate and I spent a while with Hauria. Somehow, it feels like the more time I spend with them the more easily I "become" that.....□

□Becoming Lord Abyssgate, huh.□

□Don't say that nameeee!□

gon- Kousuke's face pressed down on the table once more along with that painful sounding sound.

——Endo Kousuke

The one with the scout role at the former hero party, at the legendary decisive battle which was carved at the history of the other world Tortus, he was the strongest assassin that boasted peerless performance against the apostles of god.Though such thing couldn't be imagined at all from the figure writhing in shame while groaning with his face pressed on a café's table.

The reason for such him who casually had a status of strongest to be turning into a hopeless person like this at a café in the middle of day, was needless to say because of the battle last night. Yes, that thing which was manifested at the battle, that chuuni conduct which was just too painful to look and listen to.

Just why he was performing that kind of chuuni in full drive even understanding that later on he would receive mental damage like this where it felt like he wanted to bash his head at the corner of a block of tofu and die? There were unavoidable reasons there.

One of the reasons was this.

=====

Endo Kousuke 17 Years Old Male Level:92

Vocation: Assassin

Physical Strength: 800

Stamina: 940

Endurance: 450

Agility: 1700

Magic Power: 560

Magic Resistance: 560

Skill: Assassination Technique [+Dagger Art]
[+Concealment] [+Tracking] [+Throwing Art] [+Hidden
Weapon Art] [+Transmission Wave] [+Escape Art] [+Abyss
Lord] - Presence Manipulation [+Presence Isolation]
[+Phantom Step] [+Dream Illusion III] [+Clarity Phantom]
[+Minimum Mind] - Shadow Dance [+Water Dance] [+Leave
Dance] - Gravity Magic - Language Comprehension

=====
=====
=====

As for the detail of those skills, [+Dagger Art] until [+Hidden
Weapon Art] had the meaning exactly as the name implied,
[+Transmission Wave] was an ability to strain one's ear to
pick the vibration in the air or in the wall to listen at the
conversation from some place in a distance, [+Escape Art]
was a skill that gave aptitude correction to magic if it was
used for escape.

[+Phantom Step] was a skill that left behind presence with
afterimage piled up on oneself to blur one's own figure,
[+Dream Illusion III] was a skill that produce illusion clone of
oneself with the limit of three illusion, and then [+Clarity
Phantom] was a skill that gave substance to the clone.
[+Minimum Mind] was an invisibility assistance skill, when
the user was being invisible, this skill would make the user's
breathing, heartbeat, presence, and so on, and even the
fluctuation of the mind to be in a flat state.

“Shadow Dance” was a skill to run on the wall that Kousuke often used. It couldn’t let him stand still on wall, but as long as he had momentum he could continue to run of wall. Its derivation [+Water Dance] was the water version, [+Leaf Dance] was a skill that let him to use things like leaf dancing in the air as instant footstep for jumping.

Now then, have you all noticed? Nonchalantly there was a skill of a different disposition that could be seen just from its name mixing in among all those skills. Probably, that skill was exactly the one that awakened at that legendary decisive battle as the end derivation of assassination skill, the cause that made Kousuke’s shame went into Mach speed.

——Abyss Lord (Abyssgate Lord)

The explanation from the status plate was like this.

Effect: In the middle of bloody battle, Abyssgate Lord arrived from dark bottom that is even darker than darkness. Now, o veil of darkness, o the dead of darkness, offer thy strength to the abyss! That is, the infinite power at dream.....

The moment Kousuke saw this explanation, needless to say he threw his status plate on the ground with all his strength. It was also needless to say that he also grinded the plate with his foot while he was at it.

First the effect explanation was something cryptic that didn’t become explanation, in the first place a nickname (?) that was given to him by chance at a battlefield becoming skill name just like that was also cryptic. Or rather the explanation text was just too painful. He didn’t want to believe that this was really the final secret skill of his vocation.

However, just because of that didn't mean that he could neglect a power that he finally obtained without knowing its effect, and above all, there was a reason why Kousuke had to know it no matter what, and so he ascertained the effect while his SAN (TN: sanity) value was being shaved off grindingly. And the result that he understood, it appeared that this skill had the effect of a gradual Limit Break. It didn't raise his strength explosively like Limit Break, but a skill that strengthened all his specs little by little while that skill was in activation.

Furthermore, different from Limit Break, this skill didn't have the side effect of strong lethargy after use. It could really be said as an extraordinary ability.

Although, if it was asked whether it really had no demerit at all.....the world wasn't that sweet.

The demerit of [+Abyss Lord]. That was.....

While it was activated, the user's speech and conduct would be forcefully made to be a flawless chuuni(Abyssgate Lord)!

Furthermore what was troubling, the activation of the skill was basically possible to be done by the user's discretionary, but there was time when this skill activated before one knew it even when the user had no intention of activating it. Perhaps the cause of that was merely because of Kousuke's inexperience in handling this skill, or possibly there was other factor.....

Just like Kousuke said himself, it seemed that the ratio of the forced activation was increasing in proportion with the time he spent with the members of Hauria clan, so most likely the cause was due to the latter.....perhaps.

□I had recommended this to you before but, skill sealing artifact. Do you really not need it?□

□Uu. Tha, that's.....I want it, but□

Hearing Hajime's words, Kousuke's expression turned bitter while his speech sounded hesitant.

Previously, when Hajime saw Kousuke who because of his speech and conduct that was too much looked like he was really going to sink into abyss, he said□I cannot watch this anymore.....□and offered to Kousuke that he would manufacture a skill sealing artifact for him. Just seeing him made even Hajime felt like his chest was struck with pile bunker.

Kousuke's eyes turned bright right after he heard that offer, but his expression immediately changed as though he had recalled something, and then he refused the offer with an expression that was oozing out bitterness. The reason of that was,

□.....Rana, she will be dejected then.□

□Really someone like you is.....□

That.

Rana——Rapid Shadow, Rana in ferna Hauria (Real name: Rana, just Rana. This is important so I'll say it for the third time, it's just Rana).

At the legendary decisive battle, Kousuke used his ability—including his skill and also his nonexistent presence that he had by nature—with all his power, and with all his seriousness to stay invisible, yet regardless of that this rabbit ear lady of Hauria clan found him normally.

She was the woman who stole Kousuke's heart. And then, she was also the perpetrator who brought forth Abyssgate Lord to this world.

Above all else, Kousuke feared that if he sealed Abyssgate Lord, then she would fall out of love with him.

□Well, you went through many hardships to go out with her. No, that's already crossed over the level of hardship. I think that you are the most amazing guy among our classmates you know, in various meanings. Or rather, I can even say that I'm holding respect for you.□

□I, is that so? It's not really something that much.....□

□Don't be ridiculous. Just what is this guy who conquered □Raisen Great Labyrinth□ by himself only for the sake of getting recognized by the woman he fell in love with is saying huh.□

□A, hahaha.....yeah. I thought I was going to die that time. No, if I didn't use Abyssgate Lord state 24 hours that time, enduring that black history that made me dying in shame, I'd die normally there.□

Yes, just as shown by that skill which was casually written on the status plate, actually Kousuke had conquered □Raisen Great Labyrinth□. Furthermore he did it alone. At the battle against occult group Hydra, he was standing normally on ceiling wasn't because of his skill to wall run or because of Hajime's artifact, but by using his own gravity magic.

Even though the master of □Raisen Great Labyrinth□, Miledy Raisen was already gone, even though there was nothing but the half-automatic type interceptor golem that she left behind, but the labyrinth's trap and the situation where magic was unusable there were still going strong. Also, even

though the golem was half-automatic type, they only lost the tactical capability like when Miledy controlled them, but their battle ability didn't decline even for a bit.

And Kousuke conquered such labyrinth by himself in a week and he returned alive. Because he was always in a state of Abyssgate Lord, his physical ability and will power, and then his chuuni speech and conduct, in various meanings they all broke the limit even more than Limit Break, and because he challenged his limit like that, his body and his heart, especially his heart! were all tattered, but even so he returned alive with all his limbs intact. It was only natural that Hajime and others were shocked by that.

□Really, you did well to survive. That was a savage condition that made even princess Kaguya look cute. You, just how much you loved that woman huh?□

□That's, so much that I'd challenge even Nagumo?□

□That's so huh.....□

Yes, Kousuke was challenging the great labyrinth with even more preparedness for death than at the decisive battle when it was already completely the epilogue scene if it was a story where the final battle had ended, that was because the lovely rabbit ear onee-san Ranainfe.....Rana gave a condition to Kousuke.

Since that day of the decisive battle, during the one month before they returned to earth, Kousuke was making his approach to Rana with great vigor.

However, Ranai.....Rana was a Hauria clan, and all members of Hauria clan worshipped Hajime without a single exception. It was to the degree that if Hajime wished it, then any female of Hauria would instantly offer their body to him.

Of course, Hajime had the strongest hitting type bug character Shia Hauria who was the same Hauria clan like them, so there was no hero among them who would proactively try from themselves to obtain Hajime's affection. But, even so they made their "Boss" Hajime, the "demon king-sama that slaughter even god" as their standard for men so.....to speak the unvarnished truth, their ideal was absurdly high.

And so, naturally, Kousuke's approach also didn't sway Rana.

□Fuh, I am a shadow that is serving "that person". A shadow doesn't need love.....□

Like that,

□You too have strange taste aren't you. Know that you won't get away with just scold if you touch me, for you to pursue a dangerous woman like me.....□

Or like that,

□Stop it already. A resolve to continue to walk together with me, in the bottom of darkness that is even deeper than abyss, there is none of that inside you am I right?□

Or like that, those sentences were told to Kousuke with fearless, or possibly bewitching smile on her face.

No matter how many times he confessed, Kousuke was shot down with speech that was undeniably excessive. Such Kousuke was seen by Hajime with a gaze as though he was witnessing a hero, while Shia was staring with intensely reproachful eyes (at Rana).

Even so Kousuke didn't get discouraged, he kept approaching her repeatedly, seeing that as expected even

Rana seemed to be moved just a little by his persistence, that in the end it became like this.

□.....Uu, do, do you want me that much? Not that, cough-. If you wish for this cursed body to that degree..... But, I belong to boss.....not that, cough-. It's unfortunate, however my body already belong to "that person". That's why, okay? Give up.....not that, cough-. Shadow live in shadow, and light in light, that is the law. Bu, but, well, if you conquer a great labyrinth or something like boss.....or maybe, if you can make even a scratch on boss.....it's not like I won't think about it, maybe? Not that-, cough-. Fuh, if you still wish for this body even then, then try to challenge the king of abyss and splendidly exert yourself and win.□

The beautiful rabbit ear onee-san said such thing while fidgeting and looking restless. It went without saying that seeing that caused the inside of Kousuke's chest to contain explosive heat that was equivalent with the eruption of □Guryuen Grand Volcano□before.

Yes, the condition that Rana gave him was to conquer a great labyrinth as well as landing an attack at the demon king Hajime.....

Just as Hajime said, it was a savage condition that might made even princess Kaguya to go□Wai-, you-□.

However, Kousuke who was blazing with the pathos of feverish love that could burn him to ash didn't even listen to the voices of the surrounding that tried to stop him, his figure vanished while no one noticed, he picked□Raisen Great Labyrinth□because it had the highest possibility for him to conquer and also because the age of god magic that he could obtain from there suited him the most, and then he jumped right into it.

After that, a week later. As expected Nagayama Juugo and Nomura Kentarou were anxious because Kousuke didn't go back. They discussed it with Hajime and others, the person concerned Rana was also acting 'perhaps I have said a little bit too much.....' with her gaze swimming around, so Shia who was already familiar with conquering that dungeon was about to go out for searching (by no means that they finally noticed that Kousuke wasn't there only after a week passed), it was at that time,

Kousuke returned.

He was tattered all over, but he properly obtained age of god magic—the gravity magic. And then, while making the surrounding dumbfounded with his incomprehensible behavior of obtaining new power after the final battle for some reason, Kousuke made a declaration. He pointed his finger with a snap, and then boldly, with a fearless smile on his face,

□Demon king Nagumo Hajime-. Fight me!□

He said.

Naturally, Juugo yelled□Kousukeee, come back to your sanityyy! Stop doing something like suicideee!□, Kentarou begged□Shirasaki-san-, Ayakoo, anyone is fine! Quickly a recovery magic-. I beg you treat his head carefully!□, Aiko-sensei clung at Hajime while pleading□Hajime-kun, don't be hasty-. Endo-kun is, that, he is just a little tired! His head is-□, and then Kouki, Ryutaro, and Suzu stood in the way between Endo and Hajime, they were trying to buy time for Kousuke to escape while getting drenched in cold sweat with the preparedness of death.

All those caused Hajime to say□You guys, just what do you think I am.....□with his cheeks cramping, but he was

reaping what he sow, so no one consoled him.

In that place that was filled with chaos, Kousuke completely ignored his friends who were stopping him, his gaze turned toward Rana and then he proclaimed with a loud voice, willing it to reach into her heart.

□Rana-san-. I love you! The condition that you gave me—if you can put even a wound at boss, then it's not like I won't think about it, those words, I believe in them! In front of Rana-san's eyes, I'll put a wound at Nagumo, clearly and distinctly-!!!□

Hearing that proclamation, the classmates who didn't know that Rana's condition was just her hiding her embarrassment finally guessed the reason of Kousuke conquering a great labyrinth and his war declaration to Hajime which could only be thought as suicide wish, and they thought.

—So it's Hauria again-!!!!

Everyone simultaneously directed criticizing gaze of□What the hell you have said to him!□to Rana. Rana who received those gazes were drenched in cold sweat while her gaze was swimming around as expected. Her cheeks reddened a bit from Kousuke's declaration while the Hauria females at the surrounding were giving her broad grin and teasing.

Now then, Hajime who received the challenge because of all those felt somewhat of a sympathy at the scenario of a boy challenging a powerful enemy for the sake of the woman he loved and he accepted that challenge.

Of course, he had no plan to get done in that easily. Even he had women that he loved, doing something like an unsightly fight in front of those women, was something that wouldn't do no matter what kind of circumstances it was, and above

all, Kousuke himself would ask to be excused from “being gifted a mercy win”.

And so, Hajime and Kousuke carried out a duel, and the result was——

The fact that currently Rana was accepting Kousuke’s feeling was the clearest proof there was. The strongest assassin character, + full power Abyssgate Lord state, the combination of those weren’t just for show.

It was a grand battle in various meanings but.....that would be told in another chance.

Kousuke who accomplished the great feat of conquering □Raisen Great Labyrinth□solo, as well as dealing a blow at the godslaying demon king, he splendidly shot down Rana’s heart with that challenge that put his life at stake.

But, naturally, although Rana had entrusted her to Kousuke, the fact that Rana was a Hauria didn’t change, the time that he spent together with her, and also the time when he was welcomed by Kam and others as family, all of those times were basically spent as chuni. Naturally, because of that his Abyssgate Lord time was also increasing.....

□Nagumoo, perhaps, I cannot go back anymore..... Perhaps, I should just go until the very end just like this instead.□

□You are really driven to the wall huuh. But, even if you stop being Abys——chuuni, I don’t think that girl Rana will fall out of love from you though? The fact is that you broke through that girl’s savage condition right from the front. That is something that nobody else will be able to do. No matter even if you are chuuni or not, but there is no way she will abandon you who have gone that far for her sake after this late.□

□Perhaps, that's so. But try to think from the opposite. From here on too I'll spend time together with Hauria clan as relative. If I act normally among them by myself.....won't the away game feeling get bad like that? See, it will be like a guy that cannot read the mood who will make a realistic retort like□This kind of thing is impossible in real world□ when you are playing fantasy game.□

□Wha, what a difficult guy..... Well, that's an example that is easy to understand though. Indeed, doing that will dampen the mood.□

□Right? This guy, he can't read the mood huh, or what a boring guy, or he is not fun huh.....if Rana think of me like that, I don't have the confidence that I can keep living even then.□

□Don't assert so surely like that geez. Rather, you cannot be helped anymore, in the end Endo, you have already found the answer inside yourself right? That's why, I too just tried to casually put it aside.....□

□Listen to me here! I too know that I'm just complaining! But I want someone to listen to me still! Recently when I talked this to Juugo or Kentarou, both of them would just act 'saying this again huh~' and won't listen to me at all! You are my kindred-spirit that know the same pain aren't you!?!□

□Aa, got it, got it. That's why don't scream like that to the phone.□

In the end, it seemed that Kousuke had the resolve to shoulder by himself (?) his shame or his mental damage, the point was that he just wanted Hajime to listen to him grumbling. Because Hajime understood that, that at first he tried to put it aside, but it seemed that Kousuke wanted him to keep him company in him letting out his stress.

Hajime who was faithfully keeping company with such Kousuke was also completely different from the time when he was at Tortus, perhaps it should be said that he had mellowed. Though perhaps there was also the feeling of sympathy in him as a comrade who knew the same pain of heart just like Kousuke said.

After that, for a while Kousuke spoke his grumbling at length, between times he also asked for love consultation (?) like a way to progress his relationship with Rana, before finally Kousuke's mind was recovered, it was at that time that Hajime finally spoke the main topic of why he called—the detailed story of the occult group Hydra.

□So? I don't think that you will make any miss but, was the treatment to those guys went well?□

□Yeah, no problem with that. Hydra has become a charity group inside those guys. I think they will direct the funds of their society to unfortunate children from here on. I don't do anything to the bunches that weren't at that place though.□

□I don't mind that. After all they are a big organization. It seems that they have members everywhere, I'll deal with those. Well, perhaps I'll ask you to do something like this again if you happen to be nearby the target location while you are in your private business like this time.□

□No, I wasn't really close with this place. I was at North America you know? You, aren't your sense of distance getting weird because you can use gate?□

Kousuke glared with reproachful eyes while understanding that Hajime couldn't see him. Which wasn't surprising. In the first place Kousuke left Japan wasn't to purposefully respond to Hajime's request. If that was the case then no matter how extremely busy Hajime was, it would be faster if

he opened a gate and directly marched into the enemy base.

This time Hajime requested Kousuke to deal with antagonistic organization was because the timing was just right when Kousuke was overseas in a private business using his winter vacation. And then, the private business of Kousuke was to boldly observe battlefield medical treatment in practice. Therefore, the destination of Kousuke was a country with inadequate medical system, there he learned directly in the spot, and by the time he thought 'well, perhaps I should go back soon?', an imperial command came down from the demon king-sama to him.

By the way, for the moment Kousuke was a student preparing for examinations to enter the medical university he wished for, but perhaps it was a present for doing his best at another world, his skill "Language Comprehension" also could be used for all languages on earth, he was already like a native speaker right from the start at the foreign language subject, the other students preparing for examination were in the state of teary eyes in that subject, so Kousuke had relatively more leeway there.

Also, Kousuke wanted to enter medical university not because he wanted doctor license or that he wanted to become an elite doctor, but only because he wanted knowledge and technique that could be put to use at Tortus someday, so there was no need for him to enter into a university with that high of a standard, like that sometimes he was going around like this relaxing while also observing real practice of medical treatment.

The base of occult group Hydra that was Allgrey residence was located at Britain, so thinking with common sense, it couldn't be said that it was a place that was close with the

place that Kousuke visited this time. It wasn't like Kousuke had a gate so he normally made use of commercial airplane (he had quite a lot of request fee transferred to his account from Hajime though) to travel until here which made it even farther.

□I told you before that if it's you I'll at least make a degraded crystal key for you didn't I?□

□.....I'll refrain from that. Nagumo's artifact is too convenient. If I grow to rely it like it's only natural, then it feels like I'll think of normal life as inconvenient, that's scary. If I'm traveling then I'll limit myself to my own feet and public transportation.□

□You, even though you have thin shadow but something you say something with depth huh.□

□You don't need to add about the thin shadow-. Just the request fee you transferred is enough. About this much is just right for a timid person like me.□

Kousuke could feel Hajime smiling wryly at the other side of the phone from his words. Kousuke who didn't receive really high assessment from the surrounding because of the thinness of his shadow fundamentally had low self-esteem. Even though he always produced an outrageous result "when he noticed", he wasn't evaluated by other, that was why it didn't become an awareness of him that what he had done was amazing.

□Well, anyway, you saved me the trouble there. I planned to crush them sooner or later, but recently I'm seriously busy. If those guys start to move all out it will be really troublesome, but now their heads are crushed before that happen, so I guess they won't move for a while. Now I can devote myself to what I want to do with this spare time.□

□That's great. If I remember right, you are doing various things like making it easier to open the gate to Tortus right? If that works then I'll be able to meet with Rana more casually.□

Leaving aside Kousuke's low self-esteem, their talk came to a finish after Hajime heard about what he wanted to ask. Kousuke earnestly reminded Hajime that he would cooperate with this kind of odd jobs, so he should hurry with establishing a way to make it easier to come and go to Tortus, after that he was about to hang up the phone.

□Then, later. Nagu——□

It was at that time.

Suddenly, *gyagyagyagya-!!* such sound of something slipping fiercely resounded.

□Wha, what is!?!□

□Oi, Endo, what——□

The shocked Endo turned his gaze toward the street where the sound of slipping and scream of people were reverberating from, right after that a thunderous sound that drowned the words of Hajime came, a car was drifting through the street corner rushing out toward here.

The thunderous roar was the sound of that car running wild coming into contact with the car parked on the street. The parked car that was hit had its mirror blown away and its tail lamp popping off. However, while it clearly caused such incident, the car that made its entrance with a drift didn't show any sign of stopping at all, far from that it accelerated further.

Toward the café where Kousuke was.

□Wha-, wa——!?!□

The couple, businessman, and then the beautiful waitress who were also at the terrace screamed while tumbling over trying to escape inside the café. The next moment, the black car that looked tough pulled its emergency brake just before it charged into the terrace and its rear part mowed the terrace heartily.

Wreckage of terrace danced midair, and then tableware and cooking.....

□Uoh. That's a waste!□

Kousuke was evading the wreckages of the terrace before jumping to the air and with *hyupapapa-* caught the sandwich that he still hadn't touched! In his hand was a plate that he secured unnoticed while the sandwich was put on it before it was blown away still beautifully untouched due to Kousuke's exquisite skill. While he was at it, he had put away his smartphone into his pocket unnoticed and in exchange used his hand to use the glass that he had secured to skillfully secure the blown away beverage to a certain degree.

And then, he caught midair the last piece of sandwich with his mouth and lightly landed on top of the café's signboard that was placed on the walkway.

□Mugumuguh, puhah. Good grief, a car suddenly came charging, just what in the world——□

Kousuke swallowed the sandwich that he caught in his mouth and he spoke his complain with his two hands

holding plate and glass, there his gaze suddenly met someone.

The black car that was temporarily stopping after crashing into the terrace. From the window of that car's passenger seat, there was a blond haired girl with his mouth opened wide looking as though 'I had seen something unbelievable!', her gaze staring fixedly at Kyouzuke.

Beside the girl who had pretty blonde hair that was tied into side tail and almond-shaped eyes with unyielding spirit that reminded one of cat, there was also a beauty with crisp appearance and very short hair style who was the perpetrator of this reckless driving. That very short hair lady was also staring fixedly at Kousuke.

□A, aa~, he, hello? Are you two, injured?□

Kousuke was making a bit awkward expression from the stares of the two that was too straightforward while he tried to say such thing for the moment. Perhaps reacting to that, the cat eye side-tail girl was opening her mouth to say something but,

□Eh, wai-, again!?!□

A fierce slipping sound that suddenly could be heard made Kousuke's cheeks convulsed and he turned his gaze there. Ahead of his gaze, there were the scene of similar black cars, two, three of them drifting while rushing out from the street corner.

The woman with very short hair also seemed to notice that, she recovered her time that stopped from witnessing Kousuke's absurd movement. She immediately moved the steering wheel, stepped on the accelerator and rapidly took

off right away. The cat eye side-tail girl passionately kissed
□Mugyuu-!□the side glass due to the centrifugal force.

The black car boarded by two females seemed to, no, they were really running away from the black cars that came from behind, their car was driving dangerously once more while vanishing at the other side of the road. After that, the three black cars passed through in pursuit.

It was a scene that happened out of nowhere. In a hair's breadth, the couple and businessman that had escaped from the terrace into the café fearfully peaked outside, while Kousuke was drinking up his beverage with *zugo——* sound.

□Oo~i, Endo. What happened?□

Actually the call was still connected all this time, the voice of Hajime resounded from the smartphone.

Kousuke jumped down from the signboard and gently put down the glass that he had just drained on that signboard. His gaze was moving to the other side of the road where the cars were disappearing while he took out his smartphone, and then he responded to Hajime seriously.

□Nagumo, as expected, foreign country is scaryyy.□

□.....You, what are you saying?□

Hajime's retort drifted lightly into the blowing wind and vanished completely.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Now then, about the custom (?) heroine attribute,

Blonde side-tail + Lab coat girl + unyielding cat-eyes + ○○
+ ○○

Something will surely be entered into those ○○. Please use your imagination if you like.

By the way, the model for her is Akita Neru. Tda-style is goddess. (TN: Tda-style is character model that is used at Miku Miku Dance, Vocaloid)

The next update is planned at 6 P.M Saturday too.

Wai-, It's Misunderstanding! Misunderstanding I Told You-

Inside the room that was merely old rather than retro, was illuminated by orange light of fluorescent lamp. The wall was wooden and looked thin, only the synthetic leather sofa with fading coloration and the bed looked excessively big, but the sheets and curtain with the same color gave worn out impression vaguely.

□As expected from a cheap hotel. It really gives the atmosphere like hotel in movie where fugitive will take refuge in.□

The floor was creaking. Kousuke who threw his body on the bed was smiling wryly while speaking to himself a sentence that sounded like a flag. The spring of the ancient bed was making creaking sounds as though to protest to the one treating it roughly.

Because Kousuke had a need to stay for one night due to his plane's schedule, he rented a hotel room like this. And why was he intentionally choosing this kind of dilapidated hotel when he had just received a considerable amount of request fee from Hajime that someone with social status of a student

wouldn't be able to normally obtain? That was merely because of Kousuke's poor person's mentality.

Even if he stayed in a high class hotel without any particular necessity just because he had much money, Kousuke would definitely be unable to calm down coupled with the gaudiness of the room. Staying in a capsule hotel.....isn't it strangely calming? Those were the words that Kousuke once said to his parents when they were going in a family trip.

The parents of Kousuke at that time was as expected a little bit solemn at their son's sense that was somewhat too small as a person, at the very least he should be demanding for business hotel or pension.

□But well, I at least splurged a little and rented the upper floor. This is nice scenery.□

The reason Kousuke picked this hotel was because this hotel had fifteen floors relatively to its oldness. The higher the floor, the more expensive the cost for just a smidgen, but after thoroughly worrying, Kousuke finally decided□A, around floor ten, this is a rare chance so it should be fine.....□so that he could enjoy the scenery. If his classmates or his family knew that, surely they would be looking at him with a lukewarm gaze.

When he opened the worn-out curtain, there the lighting of the city was like stars that were spread on the ground, they were sparkling with glitters. It was quite a night scenery that he could be satisfied with, just like what he expected and hoped for.

□.....Next time let's look at this with Rana for sure, yup.□

Kousuke spoke to himself once more. Inside his mind, the imagination of him doing romantic this and that with his

older rabbit ear lover were rushing about.If Juugo and Kentarou were at his side, they would surely give a retort that before things like night scenery and so on, he should at least raise the hotel's grade a little bit higher.

He was enjoying the night scenery for a while having a wild delusion inside his brain about rendezvousing with Rana, during that time he took out his smartphone and smiled cheerfully while looking at his photo with Rana that they took the last time the gate was opened to Tortus, he repeated those kind of things for several hours.

Kousuke headed toward the bathroom, thinking that he should take a shower soon and retire to bed.

The bathroom also had antique structure, There was a shower nozzle that could be directly taken on the wall and several handles below it. For the time being he would first ascertain the knack of the old shower, when he rotated the handle which played *kiko-kiko* sound, water gushed out rapidly. While saying "Naïve-, you think I'll get my head drenched just like the cliché huh!" by himself futilely, he adjusted the handle *kiko-kiko* so that the warmth would be the optimum temperature.

He ascertained the warmth with his hand while whispering 'This temperature is enough I guess', it was at that time——

Noisy hustle and bustle and fierce shaking came from upper floor. The troubling thing was that dust fluttered down in sprinkles from the ceiling.

"Kehoh. What's this, don't make a racket in this kind of worn-out hotel you there.The ceiling won't be thin like the wall right?"

He had finished confirming the thinness of the wall. He wanted to believe that this building wouldn't go as far as having even its ceiling selling a fight right from the front toward the law regarding construction standard. Kousuke's expression was turning slightly anxious while he was looking up at the ceiling that was energetically spraying down dust.

There was no way, that the people at upper floor was intensely making love, where the excessive intensity would cause the ceiling to come off and fell down, where Kousuke would face the couple——ain't no way such thing would..... while Kousuke was having wild delusion that would make him red faced if his acquaintance asked him about it, for some reason a bad premonition was welling up inside his chest, then he shook his head like dog in order to shake off the dust raining down on his head.

Instantly, *pan-pan-pan* bursting sound that he was familiar with struck Kousuke's eardrum.

□E, ee? Wai-, just now was that gunshot? Isn't that too intense for love making!?!□

Kousuke looked up at the ceiling again from being startled. Even during that time the gunshot continued to sound without pause. No matter how he thought about it, the guest at the upper floor was doing a fierce gunfight with someone else. Moreover, *papapapapa* from how even consecutive bursting sound like that could be heard, one of the sides, or possibly both sides were even coming there equipped with machine gun type.

□I, I just witnessed a car chase at the afternoon you know? Just how dangerous foreign country can be huh. Or else, is it Japan that is too peaceful!?!□

Thinking that it would be unbearable if bullets pierced the ceiling and rained down at him, Kousuke made his body smaller while exiting the bathroom. And then, just to be sure he should look at the situation of his own room's floor whether it was safe or not, so he quietly opened the room toward the corridor. His face peeked out a bit and he ran his gaze to the left and right of the corridor, but for now it seemed there was no one at the corridor.

Kousuke went "Who can stay longer than this in a hotel that have guys having gunfight like that!", he was raising a weird flag while deciding to start to run away.

But, before he could do that, from the direction of the window there was a flash that was too intense bursting out. It appeared that the guest upstairs was even using flashbang. Right after that,

"Doctor Grant-, hold on! We are jumping!"

"We, we'll really do it!? Ya, wait, wait I told youuuuuuu~::~"

Just when he heard such loud voice and scream coming from the window, right after that, *pan-pan-pan* the window of Kousuke's room had several holes opened on it and it cracked in spider web shape, right at the next instant, *gashaaan-* the window glass was blown away inside along with that pulverization sound.

—Along with a woman in black suits, and a blonde haired side tail girl that was being held by that woman.

"Are you injured, Doctor Grant?"

"Uu, I'm fine here Vanessa. But, my life span is shrinking."

The tall woman wearing black suits—an agent of state security bureau Vanessa Paradis helped the blonde haired side tail girl wearing lab coat—Emily Grant to stand up.

Emily was making a pale face while shaking her head around, Vanessa was giving that a glance while quickly replacing the magazine of the automatic gun she was holding with her gaze moving at the entrance.

□Let's hurry Doctor Grant. We will be surrounded soon.□

□Yes, I understand. Even so, I'm glad that *there is no one* in the room below.□

□Yes. Thinking of their method, they will be willing to involve even civilian after all.....□

Both of them was jumping down with comparatively reckless method of using bed sheet as extempore rope to leap down from upper floor to lower floor, but they stroke down their chest in relieved sigh that *there was no one* in that lower floor room.

Whether it was with the car chase at the afternoon and also the attack before that, the pursuer of Emily and Vanessa was gradually growing to not choose their method. If there was civilian not at a public place but in a inconspicuous place like this room of a dilapidated hotel, those guys would undoubtedly remove that person without any second thought.

(.....No, well, this happen every time, so it's not like I'm bothered. But I entered your field of vision right in front of you here, and it's not like I'm putting on invisibility or anything you know?)

The sudden situation caused a certain someone with thin shadow somewhere who stiffened while half opening the door's room to slip out grumble while his cheeks were convulsing. And then, he thought that instead it was better like this that he wasn't noticed by this two females who were intensely smelling of troublesome thing, perhaps he ought to plan to flee right away without delay.

However, Kousuke's luggage——although there was nothing really valuable in it, but he couldn't leave behind his passport and wallet that were in there.

Besides,

(.....These two, aren't they the two at the car chase this afternoon?)

Yes, Kousuke remembered. These two were the females who witnessed his beautiful midair sandwich catch and ginger ale catch, and then they exposed silliness of getting dazed with mouth wide open regardless that they were in the middle of a car chase.

They gave intense smell of troublesome thing, one of them was obviously not a person with a respectable position, while the other one, even though she was around the same age with Kousuke yet she was wearing a worn-out lab coat. But even so, for some reason Kousuke was paying attention to these two who were in a desperate situation.

That was perhaps because he had seen the figure of these two feeling relieved that no unrelated person was getting dragged into their situation even while they were confronting an outrageous situation like gunfight in an intense action movie.

(But, I won't be moved. Even though this is a coincident that looks like there is even some kind of compelling force working in it, but a coincidence is a coincidence. These two look like they are good people, and they are beauty, they are beauty! But me who am a riajuu and have Rana as lover won't be swayed! I will also have summer cram school short course the day after tomorrow. And so, I'm going home!)

Kousuke proclaimed such thing inside his heart while using stealthy footsteps, stealthy footsteps, sloo~wly and quii~etly he returned inside the room. It wasn't like he had a callous sense of value who would cast away everything unrelated to him like Hajime when he was at Tortus.

However, Kousuke who was at earth was a man of valor at supernatural level who could annihilate the main base of a secret society that possessed history of several hundred years by his lonesome. Someone who possessed such power could do almost anything. And then, in this world, everywhere there were troubled people asking for help, and someone like Kousuke who was traveling around here and there would witness that to a "frequent" degree whether he wanted it or not.

If he moved just because of his emotion to all of those with only the reason of "because they are in trouble", then there wouldn't be an end to it. Something like pursuing his own dream would become secondary or tertiary.

And above all, Kousuke also wasn't someone like Hajime who possessed strength to a degree that was almost almighty. In addition, he didn't happen to have a sense of value of relying upon others just for his own objective that would let him say "Something that can make me almighty" and request artifact to Hajime.

There were several times until now where he had bad aftertaste from turning a blind eye or feeling ashamed due to his action, but, even so, what was the thing that ought to be prioritized, and where he should draw the line.....the importance of those had been carved into his heart by his days at the other world, the way of the demon king that guided them, and the time that he spent with Rana and family of Hauria.

Like that, Kousuke decided to not get involved with Emily and Vanessa. Right at that time the two females were being on guard while moving toward the entrance—in other words, toward Kousuke's direction, the two sides passed each other, and it was at that time, a situation arose as though to ridicule that decision of Kousuke.

□VANESSAAAAA-!!!□

□-!□

An angry voice was thrown toward Vanessa. The origin of that voice was the window with nice ventilation that Vanessa and Emily had just jumped through. Seeing at that direction, there was a man who was wrapping his hand with bed sheet as rope replacement similarly like Vanessa, using centrifugal force to leap into the room.

Vanessa reflexively aimed her gun to shot the man. But, the gun muzzle of the handgun that the man's other hand was holding was aimed not at herself but toward Emily, seeing that Vanessa immediately jumped and pushed Emily down.

The man grinned widely at that reaction of Vanessa, in the end he didn't pull the trigger and like that he rushed into the room agilely, with a forward roll he killed his momentum while his gun was thrust out with a flowing motion right toward Vanessa who had just lifted her face.

□.....Tsk. So you are faster even in this situation. As always, it's *only* your technique that is first class.□

The man dropped his gaze toward his own chest along with a click of his tongue. There he found Vanessa's gun silently propped.

□That word "only" is saying too much, Kimberly. I'm also planning to have the sincerity to not betray my comrade unlike you.□

□Hah. That is not called "sincerity". That's called "naivety". Just like how you covered that missy just now even while you understood that I wouldn't shot.□

The man called Kimberly lambasted like that at Vanessa with a tone that sounded as though spit would spittle out. Brown short hair and toned body that was obvious even behind the suits he wore. Eyes that looked like bird of prey and lips with their corner raised cynically. Seeing objectively, he had a well-ordered feature of wild type that could even pass off as actor.

Judging from their way of speaking, it was obvious that Vanessa and Kimberly knew each other, no, that they were coworker. At the same time, Kimberly who seemed to be the pursuer of Emily and Vanessa could also be seen to have a turbulent background of having betrayed Vanessa.

(Waiiit! What the hell keep happening one after another here! Is this a movie-, am I in the middle of action movie that excited the whole America huh-! Are you two aiming for this scene where you point gun at each other while cracking jokes huh! Aren't you two cool huh!)

Vanessa and Kimberly both slowly stood up while aiming their gun at each other. Right around the middle of them

was a man with thin shadow who were furiously making retort even though he didn't say it out loud. He should be inside their field of vision normally but.....

□Give up already Vanessa. Hand over the doctor. You too, come with me. You can get lot of money that will still have change left even if you used them for playing your whole life you know? That's far better than eating lead bullet in this kind of place right?□

□Did you kill everyone in the team for that kind of reason? Just because of money? There is no way I'll be swayed by that kind of vulgar reason. I'll accomplish my duty. I won't let you lay your hand on the doctor.□

Kimberly clicked his tongue once again in irritation. Behind Vanessa, Emily whose face was stiffened in nervousness was directing her gaze at Vanessa with face that looked like wanting to cry.

□Uhah, this woman is so cool..... If this is a movie filming then you must be the protagonist for sure, yep.□

Someone somewhere spontaneously let out his impression.

Kimberly glanced at Emily while continuing his words with mocking tone.

□Duty is it. Hah, do you seriously think that something like that is still valid?□

□.....What do you mean?□

□Who knows? Just what does that mean I wonder? Won't you get it if you return to the headquarter?□

□Don't tell me.....□

Vanessa whose expression was scarce in variation even through all these chain of events opened her eyes slightly wider at this point. The words of Kimberly gave light to the possibility that perhaps they were already falling into a hopeless and isolated situation. Even though it was already hopeless to break through the current situation, to lose even her backing would be the same as being placed in a check for real.

Were Kimberly's words the truth? Who was her ally and who was her enemy? Who could she believe?

In contrast with Vanessa's scarce expression, inside she was wracking her brain. It was at that time sounds of footsteps running from corridor reverberated like time limit ticking down. While Kimberly was obstructing them here, the other pursuers were using the stair to come here.

□tsu□

□This is the end Vanessa. I understand you know? Normally, you wouldn't follow along with this kind of pointless task and would try to suppress me swiftly. You didn't do that because you are injured somewhere aren't you? My surprise attack at the research lab—seems like you didn't manage to deal with that completely huh. Your driving at the afternoon too, you were continuously making mistakes that is unlike you.□

Kimberly quickly ran his gaze all over Vanessa's body, then he said□Is it your side?□while laughing. Vanessa didn't show any reaction, but in exchange Emily's sorrowful expression completely exposed the truth in Kimberly's words.

□Aa, then that accident at the afternoon, so that wasn't simply because she is unskillful in driving huh.□

Inside that strained situation, a certain someone with thin shadow who was sneakily and quietly collecting his luggage was whispering such thing with small voice. As expected, surely someone would noti.....

□Even so you aren't pulling the trigger, is that because you don't think that you will for sure even against the wounded me?□

□.....I wish you'd say that I'm careful instead. There is no need for me to intentionally brave more danger even though it will be checkmate already soon.□

□No, that attitude of yours isn't what is called "careful", but "cowardice".□

Perhaps that was her payback for before. Kimberly who ate a splendid word counter narrowed his eyes looking daunted.

□That's really an excellent payback. You're doing great, do it more! Get humiliated, you handsome!□Such small voice that cheered Vanessa and cursed Kimberly resounded, but the voice was normally passing into right ear and came out from the left ear unnoticed.

Right after that, six armed men rushed into the room with noisy footsteps. Vanessa frowned and Emily turned pale while huddling close to Vanessa, Kimberly's expression became completely filled with joy, and the young man with thin shadow had shouldered his baggage unnoticed while looking back from nearby the door with an awkward expression.

□Now then, this is the end of the road of your meaningless escape drama. Sorry, but I won't ask you already whether you will join me or not. I'll kill you here and take away the missy. You had spat at your last chance just now. You stupid woman.□

□Vanessaa!□

□tsu, Doctor-□

When Kimberly signaled with his eyes, a man with solid built wearing leather jacket caught Emily's arm and tore her away from Vanessa. Vanessa gritted her teeth and then she took a deep breath as though resolving herself before,

□Doctor Grant, my apologize. It seems that I cannot protect you until the end. But, that doesn't mean I have run out card. Please don't give up.□

Saying that, she smiled faintly while taking off her gaze completely from Kimberly, she defenselessly turned around toward Emily. She casually slid out something from her pocket while——

□Do you think, how many times I have teamed up with you?□

□tsk, guh□

Instantly a gunshot echoed, at the same time Kimberly's kick stabbed onto Vanessa's flank. The gunshot came from Vanessa. She pretended to avert her attention toward Emily while firing at Kimberly, then she tried to use her last flashbang.

But, Kimberly appeared to have predicted that, he brushed off Vanessa's gun with his gun that he pointed at her and simultaneously he launched a fierce kick at her flank.

Vanessa fell on her knee due to the intense pain and red stain seeped out on her flank. At her side *clonk* a small flashbang with its pin still attached rolled. Vanessa was drenched in sweat, even so she tried to aim her gun muzzle

toward Kimberly but her arm was kicked once again and her arm let go of the gun.

And then, Kimberly's gun muzzle pushed grindingly at Vanessa's forehead, as though to show that it was checkmate for sure this time.

□I got no carelessness and opening. That's my respect to you.□

□.....□

Kimberly looked down at Vanessa with a gaze that contained no more emotion. Emily was being pinioned from behind while desperately raising her voice to stop him, but Kimberly didn't even spare a glance at her. His unwavering gaze that informed the checkmate glared at Vanessa's long slit eyes that reflected no despair which also glared back at him.

Like that, in a moment Kimberly narrowed his eyes in displeasure and his finger on the trigger tightened. There was no more margin between on and off of the trigger. With a click, the internal mechanism's operating sound rang.

□Stooop! Vanessa! Run away-!□

Emily's scream reverberated. 'No matter what happened', the woman who had said that to her and protected her just as those words meant, was going to have her head blown up in front of her eyes. Even though she had already had a lot of her important people died, yet fate was still going to expose another tragedy in front of her eyes again. Emily's heart creaked.

□See ya, Vanessa.□

□Fall to hell, ugly man.□

A betrayer, and a knight of a girl, they exchanged the last words.

Someone, anyone is fine. Anyone is fine so. She is expressionless, blunt, but this really good natured and sincere woman, please save her. Just like how this person saved me, please save her!

Emily screamed. She wished for salvation. That her wish would reach a miracle, that surely should exist somewhere in this world.

□Someone-, save————!!□

□Aaa, geez-. Come one, don't say something like that!□

Instantly, a single gunshot echoed. It was small embodiment of death that scattered human's life easily, however, the room wasn't dyed red.

Sprinkle of woodchips fell from the ceiling.

□He?□

□Ha?□

□Wha, what is.....□

Vanessa leaked out a stupid voice that was unlike the clever beauty that she was, Kimberly raised an astonished voice that was unable to understand the situation, while Emily unconsciously slipped out a question. The man who was restraining Emily, and the other men too, they were dumbfounded still, with their eyes turned into dot at the strangeness that suddenly happened inside this room.

□Haah, I did it. But, a man, or rather a human that doesn't react in this situation, they are just no good huh.□

□tsu, yo, you-. Just where in the world, did you come from——□

Kimberly stepped back. But he couldn't step back further than that. The reason was, because while everyone in that room was focusing their attention, he——Kousuke who suddenly appeared and grasped his arm that was holding the gun and moved it to aim at the ceiling.

Just where in the world did you come from, those words that expressed the agitation of Kimberly caused Kousuke to smile wryly.

□From where you ask? This place is my room. I am here right from the start. Can you spare me from using other person's room for a Hollywood scene as you please?□

□Chih, so you hid somewhere-□

Kimberly tried to shake off Kousuke's hand, but even though he had the appearance like a Japanese boy who wasn't even a young man yet, the trained arm of Kimberly felt like it was being constricted tightly by a vise that he couldn't move even for a bit.

The other men who returned to their senses with 'hah' aimed their gun at Kousuke in panic, but at that time Kousuke smoothly moved behind Kimberly and turned him into a shield. With that the men hesitated to pull their trigger.

Using that opening, Kousuke twisted Kimberly's wrist and restrained his hand to the back. Kimberly grimaced from the pain at his wrist while raising his voice to ask the identity of this intruder.

□You-, who are you! Your movement just now.....you aren't a civilian huh!?!□

□No no, I am a normal student that you can found anywhere——□

Kousuke took Kimberly hostage for the time being while his gaze urged Vanessa to take Emily and escape quickly.

However, the Vanessa in question, right after she received Kousuke's gaze, her expressionless face crumbled for some reason to be replaced with relieve. And then, she cut off Kousuke's words and said something like this.

□Fuh. So it seems you made it in time aren't you, Mr. K.□

Her way of speaking was as though she knew from the start that support would arrive. Now that she mentioned it, just now she said something like she still hadn't run out of card yet, however, there was no way she was referring to Kousuke. Kousuke being her was a coincidence, there should be no way for her to recognize Kousuke's existence, in various meanings.

For some reason there was this unpleasant coincidence where she called him with just his initial even though it was the correct one.....

□Eh? No no, you are absolutely mistaking——□

□What-!? Mr. K, you said!? You are that person!?!□

Kousuke's words were cut off once more, by Kimberly who was shocked and got taken aback for some reason.

□Wait a second! You guys are absolutely misunderstanding here! Indeed, my initial is K but——□

“Just as I thought, you are really Mr. K!? It’s no wonder that I got taken by surprise..... This way of killing your presence, I have never seen something like this before. Shit-, Vanessa. I detected you making contact somewhere while you were fleeing this afternoon but, who’d ever think that you are bringing in a support like this man-”

Unstoppable misunderstanding. Kousuke’s words was easily treated like passing wind similar with how thin his presence was. Inside his heart he went “Or rather, just who is this Mr. K!?”, screaming at the situation that was showing him with this unexpected development.

“The freelance hit man that won’t show his figure no matter what..... He will accept a hit for anyone depending on the reward. Honestly, I hesitated until the end whether to request assistance or not from someone that has been blacklisted by the security bureau. But, to protect Doctor Grant, this is unavoidable.Although, I never thought that Mr. K is a Japanese and he is someone this young, it shocked me.”

Kousuke thought. Thank you for the explanation, like that.

It appeared this Mr. K was a hit man that was put in the blacklist of government.

For Vanessa who wouldn’t desert Emily no matter what, this was a really difficult situation that she would even rely on this option although it pained her. Most likely she was thinking that this person who would kill anyone depending on the reward, someone who absolutely wouldn’t betray his client, and would accomplish the request without fail, would be someone that was relatively easier to request from compared to other characters that were put in the blacklist.

□Oi, notice already the inconsistency inside your own words. You said that this Mr. K won't show his figure, but here he is showing himself normally see. A Japanese this young, this kind of Japanese youngster, I don't know from which organization he came from but there is no way he is a hit man that is put inside black——□

□I, I remember! He, at the café that Vanessa crashed into this afternoon, he is the person who caught sandwiches and drink from midair!□

□From the afternoon, you say? Shit, so even the escaping route was predicted and you were observing us! We were planning to pursue, but actually we are the one that is being pursued here huh.□

The misunderstanding was accelerating. Emily-chan, what an exquisite interruption in unbelievable timing. Kimberly gritted his teeth and Kousuke's cheeks were grandly convulsing.

□Excuse me, I beg you please listen to my sto——□

□Kimberly. I requested Mr. K to murder the attackers who come in the middle of Doctor Grant's protection. You understand what is the meaning of that aren't you? Although he is a young hit man that rose to prominence in this two, three years, it's already proven that his skill is the real deal. In front of this cruel and heartless person, I cannot recommend you to do anything rash.□

Kousuke, was a cruel and heartless young hit man.....
Something shiny was starting to gather faintly at the corner of Kousuke's eyes. The hand that was restraining Kimberly was shaking as though expressing the inside of his heart.

Seeing that, the armed men went “Kuh, this is bad. That guy, he is desperately holding back his urge to kill” etc., they were making expression that shuddered with fear and whispered to each other. Kimberly too, the shaking that he felt was starting to make him flustered while saying “Kuh, what a crazy guy—”.

“Vanessa. Just what is different between you and me? You are insane, using this kind of fiend for the sake of your objective. In the end, you are going to do anything if it’s for your objective aren’t you?”

“Wai-, calling me fiend is rud——”

“Indeed, perhaps that is so. But, I plan to at least discern the line that shouldn’t be crossed. If, he is really a fiend in the true meaning, and he directed that killing intent to Doctor Grant or people who are not related at all, at that time I’ll stake my life to stop him.”

“Listen here, can you stop so naturally calling me fiend, fiend like——”

“Don’t lump Vanessa together with someone like you! Someone like you after all is just a wretched petty scoundrel whose eyes are blinded by money! That devilish homicide, -san over there is still better than you!”

“Oy you, I’m going to cry here. Do you think that if you add “-san” it’s okay to call other people devilish homici——”

“Hmph, those are words of a kid who doesn’t know the value of money. But, do you forget? The one who create that devil medicine is no other than you missy. If you are talking about fiend, then it’s you yourself who——”

Beautifully ignoring a certain someone somewhere. Kimberly's words became an unseen blade that hurt Emily. Emily's expression distorted in pain and guilt and her hand unconsciously gripped on her chest.....but, at that time, suddenly Kimberly's words stopped and in exchange a scream of "Ouchh—" was raised.

Finally everyone noticed with that scream, the figure of Kousuke behind Kimberly with his eyes getting teary, while his hand was carrying a glittery object that he was holding before anyone noticed.

"I don't know the circumstances of you all? I am an outsider? That's why, I was thinking to let these two escape without harming both sides with my all, yet? For some reason I am got normally leave behind? No, it's not like I'm bothered though. I am used to it. I am not bothered at all. I'm totally fine. But, because I think that communication is important, I say that ignoring someone is no good, yep."

"Mr, Mr. K?"

"tsu, calm down Mr. K. We doesn't mean to make light of——"

Somehow feeling the atmosphere that seemed to be dangerous, Vanessa spoke with halted words while Kimberly was spinning his words with cold sweat trickling from his body. The gaze of these two was looking at the same direction with Emily and the armed me, all their attentions were poured at the thing that was being carried by Kousuke while he was trembling all over as though to display the emotion inside his heart.

Amidst the running nervousness, the lips of Kousuke who finally obtained everyone's attention burst out in a smile

looking just a smidgen happy. Seeing that, Kimberly and others showed a faint relieved express——

□And so, eat this-! The insane lethal weapon that produced fire ash——Ashtray Assault!□

□What do you mean ‘and so’, wai-, wait a——goheeh!?!□

The sparkling object——the excessively heavy glass ashtray that for some reason was put inside the room even though this was a worn out hotel, it was swung down by Kousuke whose expression was still smiling broadly toward Kimberly’s head.

gochin- Such painful sound echoed, at the same time stars floated in front of Kimberly’s eyes. Like that Kimberly powerlessly slumped down hard to the floor powerlessly. Seeing how the white of his eyes were fully exposed, it seemed that everyone’s beloved lethal weapon of Tuesday had properly accomplished its role. (TN: The Tuesday is some kind of word play I think. Tuesday in Japan is written with the kanji of fire, maybe that’s why it was related with ashtray here.)

The gazes of the armed men were lured toward Kimberly, right after that, they re-aimed their gun nuzzle with the intention of turning the intruder who had lost his shield into swiss cheese for sure this time.

But, a small object lightly danced at the height of their gaze.

□You two-, we are running away now!□

The moment Kousuke yelled that, the object midair exploded with a flash. Intense flash that burned the retina trampled the inside of the room. Yes, that was the brightness of flash hand grenade. That thing which Kousuke

nonchalantly picked up was tossed at the same time when he gave a blow to Kimberly.

The armed men screamed "Not again-" while covering their eyes, during that time *goin-* a painful sounding sound and "buberah" a short scream became audible once more. Kousuke's Tuesday lethal weapon sent the men who were nearby Emily flying.

"Mr. K! Take Doctor Grant-"

"Yes yes, I know. Also, don't call me Mr. K."

"Fuwah, wh, who!? Mr. K!?"

"....."

While light was trampling the room's inside, it seemed Emily was flinching from having her eyesight stolen because her eyes got done in by the flashbang that was thrown without any advance arrangement at this second time, so she made her body as small as possible by squatting with both her hands holding her head. Somehow it was a defensive posture that made anyone looking at her felt a charisma without reason.

Kousuke cursed while carrying her on his shoulder. The truth was he yelled at them with a plan of having the two protect their eyes from the flash just like they had done the first time, using that opening he would quickly mask their whereabouts, but it seemed that his plan couldn't proceed that well.

Vanessa also had her eyesight robbed, but it appeared that she had memorized the position of all the people inside the room and their distances from her accurately using the measurement of the number of her steps, that she was able

to quickly move even while having her eyesight crushed, it was just as to be expected from her.

The armed men, even while being unable to see they immediately aimed their gun toward the direction of the voice, but there would be no meaning if they didn't capture Emily alive. Therefore they could only move about in confusion without pulling their trigger. Seeing how they were unable to immediately chase these two to this room from upper floor like Kimberly, and how their eyesight was easily crushed for the second time like this, it appeared that they weren't at the level where they could introduce themselves as agent.

□To outside. There is a car at the street one block from here.□

□Roger. Or rather, you can run really well huh. Aren't you still unable to see?□

□E, excuse me, M, Mr. K-. Can you, stop your shoulder-, from bumping my stomaaach!? M, mhy schomach is-, heguh□

□I can see a little, and I have grasped the approximate number of step. Please guide me in the case I make a mistake.□

□Got it.□

□Tha, that, that's why-, my schomach is-, heguu. Before, I missed, going to toileet-. I'm in a bad situation hereee□

It seemed that Emily's stomach was in a pinch, but in the case they encountered enemy, Vanessa who wasn't carrying gun couldn't really be counted as battle strength nor did Kousuke wanted to, so there was a need for him to keep one of his hands empty. And so, he couldn't carry Emily on his

back when she could slip off anytime or carrying her in his arms which would make both his hands full.

That was why, even though Emily who were attacked just on the verge of her going to toilet now had her bladder screaming, there was no way he could listen to her request. In no way at all that because his words were ignored or Emily brought up the subject of him at the café this afternoon with miraculous timing that he was doing this for a meager revenge. If he said it was not then it was not.

□Muh, just as I thought there are some more. Eat this-, sure kill, Tuesday's unpredictable attaaack!□

While Emily-chan was in the middle of a desperate battle which concerned the protection of her dignity, Kousuke threw the lethal weapon of Tuesday toward the armed man that appeared from the door that connected to the stair. The Tues—ashtray that soared while displaying splendid rotation like a boomerang splendidly made a clean hit at the nose of the man who had just peeked out his face.

docha- The ashtray fell beside the man who was collapsing in a heat with blood spurting out grandly from his nose. The ashtray was already dyed red from absorbing the blood of several people. It was worrying whether that would cause it to become like a cursed katana or rather a cursed ashtray.

Vanessa casually stepped on the crotch of the collapsed man and approached the stair. For an instant Kousuke thought of giving a warning toward the woman whose eyesight was declining, but Vanessa was descending down the stair with lightness that made him doubted whether she was really being unable to see.

□M, Mr. K? I vaguely gussed it. I'm begging you here please let me do——□

□I'm not Mr. K.□

□Do, don't! The stair is no good I told youuu! I beg
younyaaAAAAAAAAAA-□

Kousuke ran down the stairs by skipping steps. That movement was truly nimble, chasing Vanessa from behind gallantly as though he was performing dance steps. It must be remembered that he was rushing like this only to match Vanessa's pace, he had no ulterior motive, not in the least.

Even though hearing Emily-chan's sorrowful voice like
□Stooooop-~□, or□Fo, forgive me alreadyyyy~□, or□My
schomach, stop tapping thereeee~□, or□It's comiiiiing, it's
coming alreadyyyyyy-□, or□Mr. Kee, I'll kill you after thiiiiis□,
or□Ah, that's a lie, I'm not seriouuuuss! I'm sorryyyyyy-□caused
his heart to flutter for a bit, but he had no ulterior motive at
all and that was that!

□Doctor Grant, please lower your voice a little. Perhaps there
is still enemy around.□

□Tha, that's what you are saying, in this kind of situation!?!□

□It's okay. The situation is like this so.....there is nothing to
be ashamed of at all.□

□Right now, I understand! I have, no ally at all
hereeee~~~□

Emily-chan's sorrowful voice knew no end. This was concerning the dignity of a girl. Although right now was an emergency situation, but in a sense this was a critical moment for the inexperienced Emily.

As expected, even for Kousuke it would be unbearable if Emily really did that while she was still on his shoulder, so

he was thinking of changing the posture into carrying her under his arm soon. Kousuke was very much a normal person. Although Emily was a beautiful girl, he didn't happen to have a fetish of feeling happy if she was *peep*-ing on him at all.

However, regardless of Kousuke having ulterior motive or not, that decision of his seemed to be just a bit late.

□Hm? Wait a second lab coat miss? Can you release me? I'll carry you under my arm now okay.□

□I, impossible.....if I move.....it will come out.□

□Wait wait wait, there is no shaking anymore right? I'm properly descending the stair softly here.□

□Impossible.....I, I'm sorry, father, mother.....Emily is.....a bad daughter.□

Emily was clinging on Kousuke tiiiiightly while staying unmoving without even a twitch. Seeing from Kousuke's view point, her eyes were empty, while her lips were making a dry smile.

Emily who was suddenly whispering repentance to her parents caused Kousuke to make a flustered expression that said□Shit, I overdid it!?□. He had even used his skill so that no vibration was transmitted to Emily in the middle, but it seemed that Emily had been comparatively in her limit from the beginning.

□Do, do your best lab coat miss! Don't give up-, if you give up, that will be the end of your dignity!□

□.....(shiver shiver)□

□You cannot even speak anymore!? Wait the person in suits over there! This child is seriously at her limit here! Stop for a bit! Let's stop at the corner over——□

□There is no time for that. Mr. K. If you are a man, then please shut up and accept it like one.□

□You, what are you saying!? Eei, lab coat miss! I'll put you down right now so——□

□——a□

□Wai——□

Escape drama that happened late at night in a worn-out hotel.

Kousuke and others who splendidly escaped was pursued by Kimberly and others who regained their consciousness.

.....while following the water trail that stood out with its pungent smell.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Now then, this is quiz about heroine attribute from previously, you already understood the correct answer right?

The correct answer is,

Blonde side-tail + Lab coat girl + unyielding cat eyes + peeing + charisma guard (however defense power is zero)
(TN: Search □□□□□□ at google to look at the image. The

term came from a fighting game of Touhou where the guard pose of Remilia is called as charisma guard.)

Like that. How was it? Was it just as you imagined?

I'll be happy if you readers have fun.

Now then, a bit of report, the third volume was released.

This too is thanks to the people who kindly picked up the book (probably it's especially with the power of the reader from Narou-san).

'The extra story is terrible (lol)', that is something that I and others are recognizing, but if you readers can have fun with it then it will make me happy.

Please take care of me from here on too.

The next update is planned at 6 P.M Saturday too.

You, Well Then Ota—

Part 1

□I'll kill you, Mr. K, kill. What virtuoso hit man. Don't make light of researcher. I'll absolutely, kill you dead.□

With only the occasional lamp in the street and the light of the car coming from opposite lane as the source of light, from the back seat of the quiet car interior, words that sounded like curse were spun in whispers.

Vanessa who was driving was sending her glances at the back mirror repeatedly, looking alternately at the figure of Emily who made herself tiny at the back seat by holding her knees together, her eyes looking like dead fish with her mouth continuously spouting out resentment and bitterness, and the figure of Kousuke beside Emily, drenched in cold sweat while taking as much distance as possible from her.

Seeing at Kousuke's coat that was being placed at his feet, and the window that was opened regardless of the cold air flowing into the car, as though to disperse some smell from inside the car, it could be understood that the reason of this situation should be rather left unsaid.

The gaze of Kousuke and Vanessa met through the back mirror. Kousuke was shaking his head while trembling with teary eyes, his gaze was directed toward Vanessa as though seeking help.

Vanessa quietly averted her gaze. *gon-* From behind there was a sound echoing that sounded like head knocked into the glass window.

(.....Nevertheless, Mr. K. He is, really.....a mysterious person isn't he.)

While feeling the gaze from the back seat that was sending SOS signal stabbing on her cheek, Vanessa talked to herself like that inside her heart.

——Mr. K

He was a hit man with unknown history and appearance that appeared since around two years ago, assassinating big shots with strict security one after another. It seemed that he wasn't attached to any organization, if someone made a request to him using the specified method, then he would carried out any kind of murder no matter how difficult it was depending on the amount of the reward.

Even the security bureau that Vanessa belonged to put him in a blacklist as a dangerous person since around one year ago. His skill in killing was without question, but in addition even when intelligence agency of state investigated him the information grasped was always dummy information, full-scale investigation had been started since half a year ago and it was still continuing until now, but his true identity still hadn't come to light. It was enough to comprehend how dangerous this person was just from that fact.

However, while Mr. K was in possession of that much skill, even when his description was analyzed and compared to all the people registered in the existing blacklist, but there was not even a single person who could be thought of as him there, the intelligence department was now putting their attention to Mr. K, considering him to be a wholly big rookie.

By the way, the national security bureau possessed the right to investigate and the right to arrest in wide area regarding serious crime that concerned with the state's security,

furthermore the national intelligence department which was an agency that carried out things like the protection of important person was literally a secret service. Each department was further divided into subdivision, but let's omit it for now.

For a time, Vanessa entered an investigation team that investigated a assassination case that was caused by this Mr. K. The modus operandi of the murder was exceedingly simple and trace of him playing around in his work was nonexistent, two bullets to vitals, killing the target with accurate shot. He left no message that seemed like a killer who take delight in murder or made any declaration of his crime. And then, after he accepted a request and agreed to it, no matter how difficult it was, or even when the contract detail was mistaken and the difficulty level jumped up, he would never stop until he succeeded, his professional policy could be seen from there.

Mr. K was undoubtedly an atrocious killer. However, no matter how much of a coldhearted and inhuman person he was, he was a professional who would comply only to his contract no matter what happened.

She was betrayed by Kimberly, her comrades were annihilated, before she was able to link up with the reinforcement from headquarter, the continuous attacks without pause from enemy found her and she was forced to flee, unable to break out from the isolated and helpless situation. In order to protect Emily in such situation, there was a need to spent trump card even just by one more.

Permitting murder in the process of guarding—it was a choice that Vanessa made with bitterness. When this case was over, a disciplinary measure would surely wait for her.

In the first place she didn't understand whether her request would reach Mr. K, or even if it reached him would he accept it and was he within the range where he would be able to link up with them immediately, and would he who was hiding his true identity respond to the contract, by that point of time this choice of hers was already a gambling.

After all, the content of her request was a guard mission. Naturally in such mission the protector had to be nearby the protection target, and that mean that Mr. K would inevitably need to expose his true identity. Mr. K was also analyzed to be an expert in disguise, but it was still a risk nevertheless for him to expose himself in the open.

To say nothing of how if Mr. K investigated for a little, then for him who was strong in information war he would surely notice that the client was a person related with government right away.

Therefore, Vanessa made contact under the faint hope of luring Mr. K somehow with reward amount, but unexpectedly the reply from Mr. K was "I accept". Vanessa was suspicious, but Mr. K demanded large amount of money and explained that his protection would be done fundamentally while hiding, so Vanessa accepted it for the time being and tied a contract with him.

(Yet despite so, he exposed his figure in that place. I never even imagined that he is Japanese in the age that can still be called as teenager though..... Is he in disguise? Still, I cannot spot any disguise even from this range, that face only look like natural face..... If that is his natural face, then, just what in the world is he thinking about?)

It was difficult to guard someone indoor from distance. There was no way someone could protect someone indoor from

outdoor using sniping method and the like. Mr. K should have understood that from the start. That was why, Vanessa thought that maybe she was just deceived by Mr. K and made the preparation and advance arrangement with Emily about using flashbang and jumped to the room downstairs.

Inside her heart she was thinking that her profiling of Mr. K was mistaken, it was possible that he was a devilish homicide who was just greedy for money. Vanessa didn't discard the possibility that Mr. K might bare his fang to them.

(Even now, looking from his personality there is the possibility that he is in disguise.....)

When Vanessa glanced once more at the back mirror, Kousuke's expression was visibly getting brighter in a flash, as though it was saying "Finally you look here!". And then, he was sending eye contact at Vanessa while sending brief glances at Emily.

.....A virtuoso hit man who was greatly perplexed against a single girl and looking for help desperately.

(I don't understand.....)

From the back seat a small voice of "Oy you, just now, your eyes met me right? Why are you averting your eyes!" was calling at her. The Mr. K that she had imagined before, and the figure of teenager Japanese who was whispering "Heey, wait-. Don't ignore me.Don't tell me, even though we are riding the same car but I'm already out of your awareness.....?" with teary eyes, those two images couldn't be connected inside Vanessa no matter who she pondered about it.

"Excuse me, Mr. K."

□! I'm not Mr. K but, what?□

Seeing Kousuke who leaned his body forward looking a bit happy when he was addressed, Vanessa once again made the request that she had already made and rejected just now.

□My apologize but, can I ask you to replace me driving the car? As expected, it has become a bit hard for me.□

□Eh? No, I told you already just now, but I cannot drive, I have never even drive until now. I haven't taken my driving license yet. Or rather, even if I have taken license at Japan, is it okay for me to drive car at foreign country?□

□.....You really, have never drive a car before?□

□Never. I have never even drive a scooter. That's why it's impossible. Sorry to make you drive while injured but.....□

□No, it's not like there is any problem with my consciousness, and I also able to stop the bleeding.□

After they escaped from the worn-out hotel, Vanessa and others arrived until their car. At that time, Vanessa was injured, although it wasn't a big problem but in preparation of pursuer she asked Kousuke to drive, but at that time he refused with the same reason like now.

At first Vanessa thought that he was joking or he was keeping himself free in case of battle, but when she saw Kousuke who was frowning even now looking apologetic, she came to think that it was the truth that he really couldn't drive.

Mr. K who carried out assassination of important people not just at Britain, but at all over the world, there was no way he

was unable to drive car but.....

(Or rather, why is he still obstinately denying that he is Mr. K even in this situation..... By some chance, is he thinking that he can hide his true identity like that? No no, no way that's true.....)

Inside Vanessa, Mr. K was increasingly turning into a stupid person.

For just a little, a thinking that said "Perhaps, he is really not Mr. K?" just like Kousuke told her floated inside her mind, but that terrific concealment to the degree that no one noticed him, his experienced aura that didn't flinch even when gun was pointed at him, and then his skill that enable them to escape without firing a single shot but instead using only the hotel's ashtray.....no matter how she looked, it was unthinkable that this person could possibly be "ordinary person".

Therefore, inside Vanessa, her impressions of Kousuke couldn't mesh at all into a complete picture and her evaluation of him was going toward the direction of "mysterious" or "bizarre".

There was no way for Vanessa to think even in her wildest imagination that the concealment ability was his sorrowful ability that he possessed from birth or that there was person close to him that fired railgun so he was used to gun. Also, it wasn't that Kousuke didn't fire gun, but her simply didn't have gun and he couldn't fire gun or anything, as expected Vanessa wouldn't even think of such possibility.....

Mr. K was a hit man. Kousuke was certainly a virtuoso hit man, but he wasn't Mr. K. He was unable to do feat that could be done ordinarily by *earth's* hit man. But, he had plenty of experience if it was killing and carnage.

Like this, Vanessa's impression toward Kousuke's character spurred her confusion.

□He, hey, this topic has been left alone until now but, this girl, what to do with her? It looks like, her grudge to me has already reached a level that can only be considered as curse here. Even though her eyes are dead, it looks like she is starting to make a faint smile here. Ah, just now, she is chuckling□kekeke□you hear that!? That is absolutely a bad news somehow!□

Kousuke glanced at Emily with convulsing expression and shivering body. Vanessa looked at the figure of Emily who even now looked like she could fall into the dark side anytime, so she put aside her discomfort that she felt toward Kousuke for the time being and she finally talked to Emily.

□Doctor Grant. Please cheer up. I told you already at that time, the situation was as it was. It's not something to be ashamed for.□

□.....Vanessa.□

Inside Emily's empty eyes, a smidgen of light was lit and she lifted her face. Vanessa whose gaze met Emily through the back mirror, her expressionless face crumbled a little and her eyes loosened up, she then further formed words of consolation to her.

□Besides, didn't you also pee when you met me? At this late hour——□

□Uwaaaaaaaan-, I'm just a peeing girl after allllllllll□

Correction, she formed words of finishing blow. Kousuke put a retort□What are you doing adding blow like that!?□. Emily buried her face into her knees once more and this time she

was holding her head with both her hands while turning even smaller than before.

The chaos at the back seat was making Vanessa's expression to become somewhat flustered and she did her best to recover the situation somehow.

□It, it's fine you know, Doctor Grant. If I and Mr. K stay silent, then nobody will know. Something not known is the same like it doesn't exist.□

It was a really forceful line of argument. It gently reached Emily's stormy heart like a refreshing breeze. Although, maybe that reasoning would work if it was just Vanessa, but as expected, if it was known by someone of different gender, and in addition it was a different gender whose age was close with her, the damage to her mind was just that great. She couldn't be convinced that simply.

□Bu, but.....□

Emily's gaze glanced repeatedly at Kousuke. But, as though to say that she had already calculated that factor too, this Vanessa spoke comforting words to Emily with an expression that could be seen as self-satisfied look this time.

□Doctor Grant. Please rest assured. Mr. K is Japanese.□

□A, and?□

□At Japan, there is this kind of phrase. ——"Rather that is a reward".□

□Wha. what is the meaning of that?□

Kousuke's pleading words of□I told you already, I'm not Mr. K. I'm Kousuke□were beautifully ignored like a passing air,

Emily was tilting her head at Vanessa's continuing words. And then, Kousuke who guessed the meaning of Vanessa's words tried to held her back with "Wait a secooooond!" but.....

"It means, if it is done by beautiful girl, then whatever it is will bring joy, a side benefit. Yes, if the other party is a beautiful girl, then even if they get their crotch stepped on, even if they get punched in the face, even if they are abused with harsh words, and then, even if they are peed on! Rather that will mean as reward for them!"

"Wha wha wha wha wha, what did you saaaaay!?"

The world that was unknown from the genius girl Emily Grant. Just how deep the karma of Japanese. Shudder ran through Emily's expression. Kousuke yelled "Stooooop! Don't lump together all Japanese into one category!", but such thing was beautifully ignored and Vanessa's words continued.

"Doctor Grant. You are a beautiful girl. And then, Mr. K is Japanese. In other words, Mr. K who was peed on by Doctor Grant is dancing madly with joy inside his heart!"

Truly, a perfect logic. There was no chink on it! Vanessa unusually snorted *mofufun-* proudly and concluded her consolation words.

"Therefore, Doctor Grant. Even though you had grandly peed while being carried by Mr. K, even though because of that he became completely drenched, for him that was an unanticipated reward. He owe you one. If you use that as pretext and tell him to keep his silence, he will surely agree to it happily. No, rather he will even be happy with that comma——"

□You shut up alreadyyy! Or rather, why do you know about that kind of subculture——□

□Thi thi thi thi this, pervert-. How can you be happy having m, my, pe, pee——something like that getting on you! Just what kind of nerve you have there!□

Kousuke cut off Vanessa's words, but immediately after, Emily whose face was bright red grasped Kousuke's collar and she began shook him back and forth, causing Kousuke to groan□gueh□and his words got caught up in his throat. Emily was yelling□Forget it! Forgeeet it! Just forget it alreadyyy!!□while rocking Kousuke desperately.

It seemed that after catching a glimpse of the abnormal world, Emily's mental state that was already at the limit finally entered half-deranged state. The back of Kousuke's head was banged *gon-gon-* on the door, but Emily didn't show any sign of noticing that.

Furthermore,

□.....Doctor Grant.□

□What!□

□It's not like I don't understand of your attempt to send Mr. K's memory flying but.....□

□That's why what!□

□No, if you take mounting position like htat.....Doctor Grant, you haven't even taken off your stocking right now, so Mr. K's clothes, it's now soaked even further by Doctor Grant's "that", I think.□

□!?!□

□Mr. K, won't he become even happier?□

□You, it seems you want to frame me as pervert to the end huh-. Bring it on then, if you are picking a fight then I'll take you on! Come outside! I'll beat you up black and blue!□

Emily who jumped in panic got the back of her head hitting the door due to her overenthusiasm, she was holding her head while writhing. By doing that her skirt got flipped up, the black stocking enveloping her slender legs was exposed, its color was strangely changed, but it was fortunate that Kousuke's mind was now like a warrior who just had met his bitter enemy and was directed to Vanessa so he didn't notice.

Although, just as Vanessa warned, "that" was firmly soaked into Kousuke's trousers.....

The groaning voice of Emily who felt pain at the back of her head and her shame entering mach speed due to her that soaking other once more, and the angry yell of Kousuke toward Vanessa, those caused Vanessa to tilt her head wondering□Just what in the world is he getting angry about?□.....

Inside the fleeing car deep at night, it was the continuation of the time at the worn-out hotel—a chaos.

Part 2

It was a motel along the highway, with dazzling billboard lighted by showy and stale neon. Inside one of the room there, there were the figures of Vanessa whose upper body was only in underwear, and Kousuke right beside her with his face strangely blushing.

□Nn-□

□Oops, sorry. Does it hurt?□

□No, there is no problem. Rather than that.....you are skilled.□

□Well, it's just this much. I have a lot of chance to practice.□

□Indeed, your movement seem experienced.□

It wasn't like the two of them were doing anything indecent. After they entered the motel and calmed down for the moment, Kousuke treated Vanessa's flank with the emergency kit that Kousuke happened to have.

In the first place, he was taught first-aid treatment to a certain degree at Tortus (they were taught that in the case that they ran out of magic power and couldn't use healing magic), and after returning to earth he also learned by self-education and going around the medical treatment spot in battlefield, so Kousuke's first-aid skill was high. His return from his personal trip of going around battlefield's medical treatment spot was also bearing fruit.

He spread haemostatic agent, pressed a clean gauze and wrapped bandage around. During that time he also stimulated her healing just a little with a method that didn't exist in this world

□Yosh, something like this I guess. It missed your vitals, and the important vein is also uninjured. The bullet, you treated that yourself huh. I guess you will be fine because your first aid in the beginning was done properly. But, there is the risk of infection, and it's not a light wound by any mean. You need to receive medical treatment soon.□

□I understand. However, right now is not the time to say that. Although you have come for us, it can be said that we are still in an isolated and helpless situation.....at the very least until the reinforcement can take over the protection of Doctor Grant, there is no way I can rest.□

□That's, well, perhaps that's so.□

Vanessa wore her shirt while showing a grave expression, however, next she showed a wry smile while turning her gaze to Kousuke.

□Having said that, I don't think that I can even operate at my original 50%, so from here on, it seems that Mr. K, you will be considerably burdened.□

□.....No, look here, I've said this many times but, I'm not Mr. K. I'm Kousuke. I'm a student at Japan. In this kind of situation, isn't it better to contact that real Mr. K one more time——□

Kousuke who didn't admit that he was Mr. K no matter what caused Vanessa to think of speaking the doubt that she was harboring. Her penetrating gaze was attempting to grope around for Mr. K's true intention.

But, before she could start, the *shaaaaa* water sound that Kousuke tried to ignore to the best of his ability stopped at the same time with the *kyu-kyu-* sound of handle turned. Kousuke twitched in reaction and he suddenly became quiet. For some reason his expression was turning strangely nervous but.....that couldn't be helped. Because, he was a boy.

Like that, a vivid rustling sound from the other side of the thin glass door slightly leaked out and became audible.....

□.....What's the matter you two, staying silent like that?□

From the door that was only half-opened, only half of Emily's face peeked out dubiously. Her eyes were containing a clear wariness. Especially toward Kousuke.

Kousuke settled the figure of Emily who had just finished taking a shower only for a moment in his eyesight, then he quickly averted his face to the side. The sight was relatively brutal for him.

Emily was undoubtedly a beautiful girl. Such girl was showing an appearance that was only wearing blouse and short skirt with her damp hair let down. Two buttons around her chest were unbuttoned and her beautiful nape was exposed. Her black stocking was dirty so naturally she didn't wear it. In other words, the bare slender and supple legs of Emily were being exposed with nothing to spare.

□Doctor Grant, it's nothing. Right now I have just received treatment.□

□I see. Vanessa, are you okay? You were shot you know? Are you really okay?□

□Yes, perhaps it should be called a small mercy. I'm still not feeling at my limit currently. It's not a wound that can threaten my life.□

Emily rushed at Vanessa still barefooted, she climbed on the bed while looking worriedly at Vanessa's wound.

At that time, Kousuke's gaze that was similarly returning to Vanessa sharply noticed. The skirt of Emily who was on all fours peering at Vanessa's flank. The light bulb of the room had warm color type so the room was dim, "that part" became dark and couldn't be seen but.....

(Oy wait, the dirty stocking was thrown away but, then, the dirty underwear.....what happened to it?)

Electricity ran through Kousuke's muscle. No way, no way.....

□You are.....not wearing it?□

□!?□

Emily pressed down on her skirt with a force that seemed like it could make *hyuba-* sound while taking a girl sitting posture. Her face was dyed bright red, her almond-shaped eyes glared up with shame and rage.

□Ah, no, just now.....□

□I can't help it! It's still not dry right now!□

□Ah, yes.□

□Mr. K, as expected, just now is too lacking in delicacy.□

□Yes, I'm ashamed.□

The person who she had just grandly peed on now pointed out her no-panty state, however, for the moment it was someone who had saved them so she also couldn't frankly throw her anger at him, the peeing no-panty Emily-chan crawled into the bed and turned small while holding her head.

As expected, Kousuke was also aware that he had made a verbal slip, so he apologized at Emily who was trembling *purupuru* beneath the blanket while leaking out his impression "This girl, he is a girl that often turn small huh". Of course that one was said inside his heart.

"I want to talk about what we will do from now on, is it fine?"

Seeing Emily who heard Kousuke's apology and peeked out her face from inside the blanket like a cat with its wariness in full alert, Vanessa opened her mouth with serious expression.

In contrast with the nodding Emily, Kousuke lifted up his hand to hold them for a bit.

"Before that, can you teach me something first? Can't you contact people who can help you two right away? Since we arrived here I saw no sign of Vanessa-san contacting anyone.....I guessed it somehow but, Vanessa-san, you are a member of state organization right? Why don't you report and request reinforcement from your organization?"

That was the major premise needed to let their talk progress. Kousuke saved the two of them was because Vanessa was almost killed and also because Emily seek help. As expected, Kousuke couldn't draw a line from other people to the degree that he could pretend not to see someone else getting killed in front of his eyes.

But, at the same time he also couldn't continue helping Emily and Vanessa and judged Kimberly and his group as evil without grasping the situation. He chose to flee with these two at that scene, but if Vanessa contacted her comrade and arranged a force that could oppose Kimberly and others, Kousuke planned to vanish right away then.

For that reason, before he heard about the detail of the circumstance, he asked Vanessa to quickly contact her comrade but.....

□Doctor Grant, I will talk about that matter——about □Berserk□. Is it fine?□

□.....Yes. In any case, we have passed the stage where it can be hidden. I don't mind.□

□Oi you. What are you doing ignoring me so naturally like that. Just quickly contact your comrade already.□

Vanessa asked Emily(ignored Kousuke) with a serious air, Emily looked down while agreeing(ignoring Kousuke) with a voice that was vanishing down. Her expression was shaded with dark shadow that was darker than the shadow created by the room's coarse light bulb. Kousuke's shadow was getting thinner.

Kousuke who until now only saw the figure of Emily flustered, or shaking all over, or snapping in anger was feeling concerned that such girl was covered with this much deep shadow, even so he demanded explanation to Vanessa □Heey, why aren't you contacting your comrade? Heey, come on tell mee-□.

□The start of this matter, is the medicine that is the byproduct created from the course of Doctor Grant's research——□Berserk□getting out to the outside.□

□I cannot hear-. I cannot hear anything! Something like that medicine with naming that sound chuuni, I don't know any——□

□□Berserk□——it is the word root of berserker, the powerful warrior of god that rampaged in the battlefield without differentiating enemy or ally. It's unknown who named it with that word, but it's a naming that really to the point. After all, □Berserk□is the worst medicine with the effect of “Berserkerification” just like the meaning of that name, where the victim cannot return into normal human for the second time.□

□.....□

Beside Emily who was holding her knees with dark expression, Kousuke was also sitting down with the same posture while blocking her ears and shaking his head in refusal. The sound of the talking Vanessa was piercing into the ears of such Kousuke, as though the sounds was forcefully being screwed in,

□Doctor Grant is being targeted by the people who is pursuing that knowledge. This is a serious incident that concerned with the country's safety, so, for her protection, we, the national security bureau moved but.....Kimberly's betrayal annihilated the whole team except me.□

Perhaps thinking of her comrade, Vanessa slightly narrowed her eyes while adding more words.

□At first, I thought that it was only Kimberly's betrayal but.....thinking back now, I couldn't link up with the reinforcement so unnaturally. That is also the reason that I contracted you in the preparation of the worst case..... anyway, this situation is enough to make me think of “possibility” toward the headquarter. Until I can be clear

about this matter, I cannot make contact with headquarter that easily.□

□Aa, yes. You more or less answer my question. But, there were a lot of unnecessary things included there.....□

Kousuke who was turning over the content of what he head inside his head while hanging his head down crestfallenly, and then he slowly looked up to the ceiling.

Ahead of his gaze was the ceiling that was blotted with stain at various spots, and the electric light bulb that was earnestly driving off the night's darkness. The deep black stains that represented ill will, and the night's darkness that was trying to swallow the light of hope.....it was as though those things were representing the current situation of Emily and Vanessa.

He accidentally came to this country due to demon king-sama's instruction to him, he accidentally encountered these two at the café that he stopped by at, he accidentally needed to wait for airplane schedule, and he accidentally entered the hotel where these two were at.

What a prank of fate.

Even though he was burdened with the unpleasant title of man with world's thinnest shadow, the world discovered him only at this kind of time.

Even so,

□It's already too late by the point of time I got summoned to another world huh.□

Yes, for the demon king party who survived that rigorous world, getting involved with this kind of case was certainly,

something too late.

□? Mr. K?□

□What's the matter?□

Vanessa and Emily tilted their head, unable to understand the meaning of Kousuke's whisper.

Shaking his head saying□It's nothing□while smiling wryly to those two, thinking that it was hard for his conscience to just run away from this matter without hearing their story, for the time being Kousuke decided to lend his ear to these two's explanation.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Above a bookshelves fully loaded with light novel (area fill type), coffee splashed.....

The light novels dyed black. Hakumei's heart is also dyed black.

The world, is always filled with things that shouldn't be like so.....

The march of self-destruction, will also be at 6 z Saturday too. Perhaps, surely, if I revived.

Emily Grant's Recollection

AN: This is exposition chapter that reminisce of what happened before the prologue's scene.

Part 1

□Why.....why is that.....how.....□

While whispering under her breath, Emily Grant was walking on the path that was leading to the research building of the university with fast steps that raised loud clapping sound. Her blue eyes were swimming around without composure due to her mind that was thinking in hectic pace, as though to display the impatience and irritation inside her heart, her mouth was busily biting on the nail of her thumb repeatedly.

——Emily Grant

A girl with blonde hair tied into a side tail and almond shaped eyes like a cat, and then white lab coat as her trademark. A genius that in her eleven years of age managed to enroll into Percival University which have prominent research facility of medicine even in this Britain, she was a first class researcher that had already published several thesis which were highly evaluated.

When she enrolled at first, because of her age and her examination result that was standing out, she received a lot of attention, not a little jealousy, and treated like a tumor. Therefore, the girl who was still young laid out defensive wall using bluff and stubbornness and composed expression, making a habit of not letting what inside her heart came out onto her expression.

Because she was a girl like that, that her current situation where she had no leeway to hide the agitation and

impatience inside her heart was something unusual, it caused several students that could be seen scattered inside the campus to blink in surprise.

The surrounding students sent Emily puzzled or curious gaze, however Emily didn't notice at all seeing how immersed she was inside her mind. But her who was like that suddenly returned to her senses due to the melody that abruptly echoed from her small feminine pouch.

Emily who stopped still without even getting bothered to her shaking side tail searched for her pouch a little flustered and took out the smartphone that was her aim.

□Ye, yes, this is Emily. Is this, teacher?□

□Aa, it's me Emily. Where are you now? Are you still in your place? Have you seen the news this morning?□

Teacher——Professor Reginald Down who was normally giving off atmosphere of a good natured old man in contrast with his age that was at his fifty, was now asking question rapidly with voice that was a mix of impatience and bewilderment that was similar with Emily until just now.

Professor Down was a professor in this Percival University, and the person in charge of the laboratory Emily belonged to. He had a habitual “professor” appearance with short black hair that had white hair mixed among it, a body that was slightly widening to the side, thick glasses, and tobacco pipe. In fact, if someone merely spoke “professor” in this Percival University, most students would be reminded of Professor Down.

His appearance that was “really” like professor was also the cause, but more than that it was because he was someone that was very excellent as an educator. It wasn't like

Professor Down himself had great achievement, but many of his pupils were first class researcher who made great contribution to society, and everyone of them spoke unanimously. That “Professor Reginald Down is exactly their teacher they were indebted with”.

Even though he didn’t leave behind particular result in scientific society, seeing from his professor status, the fact that he was given a laboratory, how all other professors would take off their hat to him at the university’s faculty meeting, it was clear just how high his ability as an educator.

□No, I will arrive soon at the lab. What about teacher?□

□I too will be at the lab soon. From your voice, it seems you have seen the news then.□

□Yes, I saw it together with Hendricks-senpai and Lizzie-senpai. Both of them are contacting all the other senpai. I left the home ahead of them.□

□I see..... Then, everyone will come to the lab won’t they?□

□Yes, after meeting Rod-senpai and others, Hendricks-senpai and the rest will also head toward the lab right away.□

□Got it. Then, let’s talk in detail at the lab.Emily, sorry. Surely you are really anxious right now. Although I had conference, but I’m sorry that I didn’t return home yesterday.□

Professor Down’s caring words that seemed like it came right from his heart almost caused Emily’s gaze to burst into tear for a moment.

Emily's home was really far from this university. In order to make her dream come true, she departed away from her parents, alone in the age of eleven years old, and then she entered dormitory at the same time with her enrollment to the university.

At first, Emily who received inquisitive gaze, thoughtless whisper, jealousy, and treated like a tumor, she put up bluff and obstinacy "I came here to study! I'm-, totally fine-", but such bluff of a little girl who felt loneliness from being distanced from family, and her heart exhausted from solitude every day of just coming and going between university and dormitory, it couldn't be sustained for long.

Because she had intellect that towered above the rest, to a certain degree she was used to excessive expectation and special treatment from the surrounding. So that her heart wouldn't be warped due to such environment, both her parents education policy that endeavored so Emily could live a life that wasn't any different from normal children, and then their deep love raised Emily to have the same sensitivity with normal girl.

Because of that, Emily's heart that was only being supported by the letter from her parents that would surely reach her once a week with not only writing, but also with pocket money.....was close to the limit.

Such scream of a young heart, suddenly stopped in a certain day.

—If you like, how about doing homestay in my house?

The one who called at her with that offer was Professor Down. As someone who had the reputation as Percival University's greatest educator, he had a relatively large residence located in a quiet residential area as his house.

Professor Down whose wife died early due to sickness with no child of his own often explained with a wry smile that it was lonely to live in a spacious house with himself alone, so he offered homestay to students with circumstances and really had no financial surplus.

It just happened that there was a vacant room, and at the time a young researcher in the making who attended his lecture looked like she was going to be crushed anytime, Professor Down who couldn't bear to see that spoke such offer and held out his hand toward Emily.

There were a lot of elder brother and sisters at the house. Rather than calling it a homestay, they were mostly like a family. They ate meal together, they studied together, and they made memory as university student together.

Those words of Professor Down was an irreplaceable treasure for Emily.

□Emily? What's the matter? Are you okay?□

□.....I'm fine teacher. Thanks you very much.□

Four years since her homestay began. As always, even now in this situation he racked his brain for her sake as though she was his own daughter. For Emily, he was like one more father. To the degree that her real father Carl Grant was plainly feeling vexed□My father role is stolen-□.

She felt her heart that was disarrayed by the shocking news that she saw this morning with Hendricks and Lizzie, was slowly calming down.

Emily said that she was okay one more time to Professor Down who was worried for her and cut the phone, then she

started walking toward the laboratory, this time with a firm steps.

Part 2

A large facility located inside Percival University—Research facility building C. Inside one of the room there, an oppressive atmosphere was hanging in the air.

The people here, was the person in charge of this laboratory, Professor Down and Emily, and then the students of Professor Down who like Emily were having homestay at Professor Down's house—Hendricks Wesk and Lizzie Ashton. In addition, there were Rod Hurst and Dennis Litton who were also Professor Down's students.

□Tha, that's just coincidence right? Right? Isn't that so?□

Rod who was handsome but had frivolous air was speaking wishful thinking with unusually stiff expression.

He who was a self-styled feminist had a personality just how his appearance suggested, someone who couldn't help to call out if he saw girl, but at the same time he was also the mood-maker of the class, in a serious mood like this he would be the first one who cracked jokes to melt the atmosphere.

But, even someone like him, when he saw the PC monitor displaying the news of this morning that was picked from internet, as expected even his usual talkativeness was lacking in luster.

□The “cause” that caused this phenomenon, do you think there are that many of them? Furthermore in this kind of timing?□

Dennis tilted up his glasses with his middle finger while rebutting without even hiding his bitter expression. His hair was cut short, his shirt was buttoned properly until his neck, and then his glasses. He who was the most serious in Down’s classroom just like his appearance often quarreled tit for tat with Rod, but his rebuttal this times was obviously different with his usual war opening signal.

Because Rod understood it, he too closed his mouth with the same expression like Dennis.

□Rapid muscle swelling, abnormal recovery power, behavior without reasoning in it.....I don’t know any sickness or medicine that give those kind of symptoms. Except “that”.....□

Hendricks stiff words caused Emily at the side to twitch and tremble. Hendricks was a senior who had homestay at Down house since before Emily came, an existence that was already like real big brother for Emily who supported her both at home and also at university.

Hendricks himself also didn’t understand at first how to approach a young genius girl and only looked at her from afar, but with the homestay as the impetus, he knew that other than her intellect Emily was a girl with really normal emotion, and since then he took care of her like she was his real little sister.

It was a common knowledge between the members of Down classroom and close friends that when Emily simply spoke “senpai” then she was referring to Hendricks.

The words that came from the senior that Emily trusted and loved dearly from her heart caused Emily, the creator of “that” to shake like a kitten. Hendricks immediately noticed that patted Emily’s head with gentle motion while saying “Sorry Emily. I didn’t mean to blame you.”

“Hendricks. Pay attention to what you say. After all my little sister is delicate.”

“No, Lizzie. It’s not like she is your little si——”

“Shut up! Or rather, you patted her too much already! Come on, Emily, come to big sis here?”

Emily who was obediently receiving the pat of Hendricks was stolen in a flash by Lizzie who hugged her into her breast. She then said “It will be okay you know~, big sis is with you after all~” while consoling her like a little child with ‘good girl, good girl’.

As expected, that treatment was embarrassing for a girl who had turned sixteen, that Emily forgot the serious atmosphere and ran away from Lizzie’s breast saying “Wait, Lizzie-nee! I told you to stop treating me like a child! It’s embarrassing!”.

Lizzie who had long red hair that was tied with scrunchie, dangled from her shoulder to the front loosely, although her attitude was strict, but actually she was an extremely helpful woman with deep emotion. She was in the same year with Hendricks and homestay at Down house from the same period, the truth was she had feeling of love toward Hendricks.

At first with how Hendricks was taking care of Emily, Lizzie’s relationship with Emily was strained, but Emily’s figure that

was chasing her dream with her all gradually moved Lizzie and now she was completely Emily's big sis.

Emily too, she knew about Lizzie's love, so sometimes she teasingly said "You should just marry him already" and so on, but each time Emily teased like that, Lizzie's face would blush bright red and she would be fidgeting, that appearance was that of a lovely woman that even Emily who was the same gender would feel something.

Currently the scrunchie that had also become Emily's trademark just like her lab coat, although she had never said it to anyone but it was something that she imitated from her prayer of wanting to become a kind and lovely woman just like Lizzie. However, it was somewhat embarrassing to imitate exactly the same appearance so Emily didn't dangle her hair to the front from her shoulder but making it into side tail instead.

Inside the room the mood softened slightly from the dialogue of the two sisters. Professor Down who smiled slightly to that made a small cough. Just with that Emily and others immediately focused their attention to him. Even though they had harmonious relationship, but they wouldn't make light of the words of Professor Down that they respected. His cough was the signal for them to switch their relaxing mind.

"Just as Hendricks said, there is only one phenomenon that can turn a human into this. I won't say that there is nothing else that can do this, but even so, this kind of radical transformation—is impossible. In all probability, this is H₃-α₄."

Professor Down declared that while his gaze turn at the monitor once more. There, the figure of a man with big build

covered in armor of muscle was projected, the man was rampaging like a beast without reasoning.

That man didn't even show any reaction at the voice of the police telling him to stop, far from that he slammed his body toward the nearby street lamp and unbelievably broke it, then he swung around the broken street lamp with one hand and turned the two police cars surrounding him into scrap.

That violence made the polices started shooting all at once, but the man roared, and without even paying attention at the bullets gouging his body, he charge toward the police with unbelievable speed and routed them. The struck police was thrown to the air like a joke with parabolic trajectory. That sight was just like a scene in B-movie.

The person who filmed the video was a passerby who was at that place by chance, the video seemed to be taken using smartphone, because the person ran away as fast as his legs could carry him after the police was sent flying, the video was greatly blurry. Before long, the video taker who had taken enough distance was frequently saying "Oh my god-" while directing his smartphone's camera toward the scene once more.

Scream and angry roar were raised from everywhere, the polices were desperately fighting back which was proven by the resounding sound of gunshots, and amidst all that, that time came before long.

Suddenly the rampaging man stood still, right after that it fell on his knees as though it was a machine that had ran out of electricity. And then, at that place which was in uproar, a faint sound of anguish could be hear coming from the large man, it was a sound as though his neck was being strangled.

Right after that, a transformation appeared in the large man. His muscle that could be mistaken as armor was visibly starting to shrink. No, perhaps it would be more appropriate to express the phenomenon as “withering” instead. In the middle of being observed by the dumbfounded people at the surrounding, the large man covered his face with both his hands and moaned in anguish, his body withered until the size of a normal adult male, and then his hands parted from his face while his body was convulsing in small shivers.

The face of the man that became visible from there was completely different from the brutal face without reasoning that he showed until now, it was the face of a young man that looked ordinary which could be found anywhere, no, rather kindness could even be seen from that face. That young man made an expression that almost burst into tear for a moment—at the next moment, he raised an anguished voice once more while he collapsed down with both his hands covering his face.

The body of the collapsed young man withered in the blink of eye, it lost moisture, deep wrinkles were carved onto his skin, skin and bone that lost the flesh were starting to stand out, like that, the young man didn’t move anymore.

The polices looked and nodded at each other, and then they carefully approached the young man. And then, when they didn’t receive any response even when they called to him, to make sure a police used his foot to move the hand of the young man who was still stiffened, and then the polices screamed and backed away.

That couldn’t be helped. The face of the young man that they caught a glimpse of just now, it was completely desiccated like a mummy, reduced into a tragic state.

The news announcer was speaking about this abnormal incident with a grave expression, speculating whether the cause was a new virus, or else a drug.

□But, but teacher. How can that went outside..... In the first place the only one who know about that's existence are only us.....even though the data and the deposited part are scattered and managed strictly yet□

Emily's doubt came out with a voice that sounded strangled. Hearing that, the truth that the members of the laboratory tried to not think about reared its head.

——□H3-α4□

That was the name of the byproduct medicine that was created by accident from Emily's research.

Emily's research was to create a specific medicine for Alzheimer's disease. That disease was the cause that was changing Emily's kind and gentle, beloved grandmother little by little, she was the reason that Emily was determined to enroll into a university in the age of eleven years old, it was a problem in the territory that a lot of researchers hadn't reached yet, and it was also the life work of Emily.

That research which obtained the cooperation of Professor Down and Hendricks and co who were research student was something that put its linchpin on the point that was the regeneration of destroyed neuron. It was also a path that a lot of researchers in the past had tried their hand on it.

What was born from that research process was□H3-α4□. If it was used, muscle would break down and regenerate repeatedly and swelled up in the blink of eye, every kind of external injury would instantly recover due to the cells' super activity.

Of course it had demerit. As the compensation for the drastic muscle strengthening, the user would lose their reasoning and life. If someone was injected with small dose, then they might hold out for around a week until ten days, but in the case someone was injected until it was just barely the limit before the cells were self-destructing from being unable to endure too drastic stimulation, they would die in less than an hour in exchange of obtaining regeneration power that couldn't be compared to the former case.

At first Emily and co thought that they might be able to possibly cut open a path of creating a wonder drug after witnessing the dramatic result of this $H3-\alpha4$, but after seeing the lab rats transforming brutally without being able to stop the too drastic stimulation and the breaking down of the reasoning, they thoroughly hid this drug as something that was too dangerous.

They dispersed the data, disguised even the chemicals used, deposited each data at different places, and put them under strict control.

Therefore, it should be impossible for the medicine to be stolen. Because In the first place the people who knew about the existence of $H3-\alpha4$ were only the members of Down laboratory. They were all in this place right now, except several people who couldn't assemble here because they couldn't immediately come.

.....Hey, what about Jessica, Sam, and Milo? Even those guys should know about the news right? Why aren't they coming? By any chance, those guys——

Stop that Rod. We cannot doubt our friend in this kind of time.

Rod was about to say “that possibility” that everyone was intentionally avoiding, but Professor Down stopped him. Everyone was looking at Professor Down with anxious expression.

“There is many other possibilities. We are “Down Laboratory” aren’t we? Emily’s genius is resounding not just in this university but even throughout the scientific society, it is a well-known fact that all of my prided students are really excellent. It’s possible that perhaps someone who came here to steal something else accidentally realized the existence of $H3-\alpha4$ and stole it. A researcher cannot ignore any possibility no matter what situation they are in.”

The words of Professor Down caused Rod to scratch his face awkwardly. When Dennis spoke sarcastically to Rod, he lashed back saying “What did you say”. However their exchange was done with their usual atmosphere without any sign of paranoia against each other.

“Then.....teacher. We, what should do from here on..... As expected, is it better if we go to police?”

Hendricks asked for advice from Professor Down to go back to the topic. Professor Down crossed his arms and groaned “Hmm” while pondering for a while, then before long he suddenly lifted up his face.

“This is my suggestion but, for the time being, I think we should keep this matter a secret.”

“We aren’t going to talk to police?”

“Yes. No, sooner or later we will have to talk no matter what. However, I believe that right now what we should prioritize is to make the antidote for $H3-\alpha4$ even for a second faster. Surely it would take much time if there is investigation

about that kind of uncommon drug. It would be a waste of time.

“Bu, but, teacher. $H3-\alpha4$ is.....”

“I guess. Indeed, we haven’t finds the way to stop the stimulation..... However, there are still several approaches that we haven’t tested yet. We have talked about destroying the research data and also the materials, but it won’t be too late to do that even after we tested those approaches. This research has leaked outside already, there is no guarantee that the second or third victim won’t appear. At that time, the scope of the damage will change depending on whether there is antidote or not.”

Hearing Professor Down’s suggestion made Emily to desperately restrain her impulse that wished to destroy the research data and product as fast as possible. Hendricks and others were also nodding “Certainly even if we do that after trying out those approaches.....”

“Emily. I understand really well your feeling that want to make it gone from this world quickly. I also feel the same. But, the responsibility of creating that lie in us. Then, before we succumb to our terror and erase everything, we should do what we can. Am I wrong?”

“.....Teacher. Yes, no, you aren’t wrong. I think that the possibility is almost none.....but, if we are just trying it.....”

Seeing Emily’s pained expression, Professor Down’s expression also distorted slightly, then she caressed Emily’s head with his usual gentleness.

In the end, they decided that their policy from now on was to try the approaches for making antidote of the leaked out $H3-\alpha4$, keeping the whole matter secret from the outside,

and also forbidding the members of Down Laboratory that weren't here from speaking. With that decided, each members of Down laboratory began to move to do what they could.

Part 3

“And? I want to ask about the detailed story soon though. Can I ask you to talk?”

Two days later after they day where the members of Down laboratory decided to keep quiet about the drug and continued their research, currently there were two suited men in front of Emily and others. Both of them were police that came here to investigate about “Berserk case”—the case that was caused by the person who consumed “H3- α 4” was called like that by the news—that happened two days ago.

If it was asked how the police was able to arrive where Emily and others after only two days, then that must be because someone had squealed to the police. For Emily and others this was a sudden visit that was completely unexpected. Just what was the meaning of that decision that even made them felt guilty feeling if it turned out like this.....

Emily sent her gaze toward Professor Down looking for help. Professor Down was crossing his arms while making a complicated expression, but then,

“Well, we can also get a warrant and then search the place whether there is really such drug here or not you know? In case we find the drug, well, I think nine out of ten we'll find it though, but as it is perhaps the professor and others here will be arrested as mad scientist that dragged unrelated

people into their experiment for the sake of their own research.

“Give me a break! There is no way we will do something like that!”

Emily finally snapped hearing the words of the police officer and yelled. The eyes of the middle-aged police officer instantly shined fiercely.

“In other words, you are admitting that the drug itself exist?”

“-, tha, that’s.....”

Emily immediately turned flustered from that. Professor Down who was beside her shook his head seeing that, and feeling that it couldn’t be helped he told the police about the existence of $H_3-\alpha_4$. He also told about how it was stolen and that they didn’t contact the police because they were hurrying to make its antidote.

“.....Whether that story is the truth or not, well, how about we listen the detail at the police station to make the judgment?”

“We didn’t report this because we thought that it would be like that. Detective, I beg you even knowing that it’s unreasonable. Can you wait just a week more? At least until the approach we are trying out right now is showing preliminary result. It’s possible that perhaps we will be able to make antidote.”

“Please don’t say something so unreasonable professor. No matter how high your position or how prestigious of a teacher you are, you are still the most important witness of a case with a lot of casualties you know? As you can see we

are not even calling you a suspect here, we are even giving you an option whether you will come with us or not, I hope you can guess just how much consideration we have given you already.

That's.....

Professor Down's expression looked like he was chewing up a hundred bitter bugs all at once. Seeing Professor Down like that, for some reason the middle-aged police officer made a faint smile on his lips. And then, that gaze moved toward professor Down's side, at Emily who looked anxious with her gaze wandering around. And then he said it was fine if it was here, but he wanted to speak with just Emily alone.

When Professor Down suspiciously asked why, the middle aged police officer answered that he wanted to hear the story of the girl who was the linchpin of the drug development in a place without her guardian.

I.....what harm there will be even if she is with her guardian?

Let me ask you the opposite, what harm there will be even if professor is not with her?

After getting told that, the side of Professor Down who claimed that they only got the drug stolen from them couldn't even refuse. When Emily also bravely said "It's fine teacher", Professor Down could only acquiesce even if he was worried.

Emily and the two polices faced each other inside the room Professor Down had exited from.

Now then, I find it a little hard to believe but, is it true that you young lady is the developer of that monster

transforming drug?□

Right after the professor was gone, the attitude until now that more or less paid attention to decorum completely vanished, the middle-aged police officer suddenly took out a shabby cigarette while asking. His appearance of his swept back hair, loose necktie, and kinked suit really made other people feel unpleasant. The man that seemed to be his partner looking a bit younger sitting quietly at the side while taking memo was also sending an appraising gaze at Emily.

Emily was feeling somewhat scared at the two men who suddenly changed their atmosphere, even so she somehow feigned calmness using the bluff she had learned whether she wanted it or not when she first enrolled into the university.

□That's, right. I, developed it. Or rather, perhaps I should say, that it was by accident, that drug got created.□

□H~mm. How shocking. See here, isn't it completely like in movie? For a drug that can make human into that kind of monster to really exist, I have been a detective for a long time, but I've never heard of anything like that.□

□.....Just, what do you want to say?□

The middle-aged police officer that was making a broad grin for some reason was causing Emily's discomfort index to rapidly climb up. Perhaps it was because the police officer was having fun reading inside the heart of such Emily, that in the next moment he said something unbelievable.

□The data of that drug, how about you hand it over to us, all of it.□

□Ha?□

Emily's pupil turned into dot, wondering just what this person was saying. Seeing such Emily, the middle-aged police officer whispered□Even though you are called a genius or something but you are really slow huh□as though he found it troublesome while continuing on.

□Surely there will be a lot of people interested in that kind of abnormally lovely drug. It will be good money. That's why, I'm telling you to hand over all the data.□

□Wha-, what are you saying!? You, you are police right!? Do you know what you are saying!?!□

□What a noisy missy that can only go 'gyaa gyaa' huh. When you have become a police officer as long as me, you will meet a lot of delicious story by chance. Missy, do you know how much a policeman's salary is? It's laughable y'know? That's why I'll bet my life for something that will make that much money. You've got to treasure connection with money that you meet by chance. Just this much side benefit is forgivable isn't it?□

There was no way that was forgivable. She didn't know how much the salary of a policeman was, but even so there was no way they who were burdened with the mission to safeguard the people and apprehended the criminal would be all the same like the men before her eyes. These guys were the so called dirty cop or immoral cop! Like that, Emily realized their true nature from her knowledge of drama movie.

□There is no way that's forgivable. I, I'll tell, this matter to other police! I absolutely won't hand over the data! Just go away right now!□

Seeing Emily who stood up right away with the corner of her eyes raised like a threatening cat, the middle-aged police officer shrugged as though he was facing a child that couldn't be reasoned with.

□Then, the professor and the other research students, I wonder, perhaps all of them should take on the sin as killer.□

□Eh.....□

□I said it before right? I hope you can guess just how much consideration we have given you already, remember?□

□-, yo, you coward-□

Emily yelled angrily when she heard the middle-aged police officer implicitly threatening that if she didn't want Professor Down and Hendricks and the other to be arrested with a false charge then..... There was even an emotion of hatred welling up inside her toward the scoundrels who were putting on the skin of police officer taking hostage of her important people that were like family for her.

The middle-aged police officer shrugged without even caring of Emily's reaction and stood up with the talk ended.

□Decided it quickly okay? Will it be your important family, or else the drug, yeah?□

□.....□

Leaving behind Emily who couldn't say anything, the police officers exited the room. In exchange, Professor Down and Hendricks and others entered inside with worried expression.

Professor Down noticed Emily's unusual state and asked her if something happened. Like that, he showed a shocked expression at the answer that Emily gave him.

□What the hell, just what the hell with that! They are police aren't they! Why the hell they had to threaten us! I don't get it!□

□Calm down Rod.□

□You think I can calm down like this! Dennis-, aren't you irritated huh!?!□

□Obviously I am you idiot Rod. But, what are we going to do if we don't calm down. Even though our important little sister was threatened, but if we are all shaken up like that then that will be just what they want.□

□-, that's, you are, right, but.....□

Rod whose fist was shaking from frustration, and Dennis who was desperately suppressing the rage in his heart even while sighing.

The unbelievable situation with this threat from the police also visibly shaken up Hendricks and others. Amidst that situation, Professor Down who was wracking his brain with his eyes closed opened his mouth.

□There is also the option to report this to other police but.....right now we don't know how many comrade they have, so I cannot say that it's a good option. In the worst case, there is also the possibility that they will arrest just us and take Emily away. Right now, we cannot possibly leave Emily alone.□

□That's, right. But, then, what to do.....they will soon come back to hear our reply you know?□

Hendricks asked Professor down with tormented feeling. But perhaps it was as expected from an adult with wisdom of age, the professor seemed to have the answer.

□Let's contact the national security bureau. Now that the case this time has been exposed until this far, then it's not the level where we can keep hiding it or anything. Given how dangerous□H3-α4□is, there is high possibility we can make the security bureau move.□

□I see..... Their system is different with police. If we receive protection from security bureau, then police won't be able to meddle.□

Hendricks nodded in understanding. Lizzie and Dennis and others were also nodding to each other, thinking that there was no other way than that. However, only Emily was still looking down with a complicated expression.

□Emily, it's fine. No matter what happened, I, we will absolutely do something about it.□

□Lizzie-nee.....yes, thank you.□

Hearing the words of Lizzie who hugged her to give her assurance, Emily buried her face to Lizzie's chest while returning words of gratitude.

However, the anxiety whirling inside Emily's chest, rather than lessening from her trusted big sister's words, it seemed that it was getting thicker instead. She couldn't help but felt something, like a great bad premonition coiling around her heart, as though something fatal was approaching with loud footsteps.

Emily was staring at the back of Professor Down who was going to contact the security bureau without knowing yet that this creeping ominous feeling would become reality.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

About the drug's name, I wanted to check up a bit more and write it properly with a name that sounded likely, but.....

It was impossible. There ain't any time. Seriously. The update for next week is also in a dangerous state.

And so, well, this is spin-off, please pardon the flighty explanation.

PS

At Overlap-sama's homepage, the first part of the comic's first chapter was updated.

Really dangerous. Kaori and Shizuku are just too cute.

For those who hasn't seen it, please take a look without fail.

PS 2

Thank you very much for a lot of 'don't mind' comments.

Thanks to that, I was able to update somehow.

The mysterious sense of unity that the honored readers of Narou showed sometimes, Hakumai loves it.

The next update will be at 6 P.M Saturday if possible, desu.

Beginning of Tragedy 1

Part 1

That day, an investigator of security bureau's dangerous drug countermeasure section Vanessa Paradis was in bad mood. Usually she was someone with limited expression, but right now anyone who looked at her walking in the bureau corridor would immediately understand that her expression was sullen.

□You look really in a bad mood huh, Paradis.□

When Vanessa taken off her gaze toward the voice that suddenly addressed her, she saw a man with goatee around his early forty clad in sharp atmosphere there.

□Hughes-san. No, not really, I'm not in a bad mood.....□

□Don't lie. You carried secret investigation for half year, and just when it will be time soon, you got taken off the team. It can't be helped even if you get bad mood. If it's me then there is no doubt I'll be in bad mood.□

□That's.....it's□

Vanessa stuttered, feeling lost of what she should say and her gaze wandered.

Davy Hughes. He was a senior investigator in the same security bureau's dangerous drug countermeasure section with Vanessa, a veteran senior who would soon reach his twentieth year in this career. He was also an eccentric that was fixated with his current post to the degree that he

refused down the chair of section head regardless of his numerous achievements.

□Well, the one pulling you out was me though.□

□.....□

Hearing Hughes exposing his own deed without looking the slightest bit sorry caused Vanessa to be truly wordless this time. She was also staring fixedly at him on the same time.

Hughes made a wry smile at Vanessa who was at such state. He urged Vanessa to continue her walk toward the bureau chief office that was her destination before he started his explanation while walking at her side.

□Don't glare at me like that. My team is in need of you really much right now. I got squad leader Ahmed to reassign you to me while enduring storm of sarcasm from him just so you know.□

□.....If I remember correctly, Hughes-san became the leader of □Berserk Case□investigation team right? Not even two days should have passed since the team's formation.....but, is there some development already?□

□Yeah. The situation is confusing in various aspects. From the beginning this case is something unrealistic, so it also can be said that it cannot be helped. There was a report right from the origin cause themselves. It's likely that they will use the protection program but.....the protection target is a girl that is still 16 years old.□

□I see. So an agent of the same gender is necessary then.□

□Right. I'll let the chief tell you the detail. I'm also going there now. I'm sorry that I'm asking unreasonable things

from you, but there is no female agent stronger than Paradis for protection duty, I'm relying on you.□

□If Hughes-san is evaluating me that high, then I'll also won't throw tantrum. Please take care of me.□

Hughes chuckled from Vanessa's words while replying□Take care of me too□. Regardless of how veteran he was, but he wasn't putting on air against Vanessa who still hadn't graduated from newbie territory, perhaps this too was one of the reasons he was able to leave behind his numerous accomplishments. For a senior investigator leading a team, it was important how one treated their subordinate.

Vanessa's mood that was falling to the bottom took a sudden climb with *gyuin!* sound from hearing the words that were highly evaluating her said by a respected veteran investigator. Unexpectedly this Vanessa was easy to handle.

Although Vanessa's expression didn't change at all from receiving the sharp glint of the gaze of national security bureau chief, Sharon Magdanese, but inside her heart she was tasting a nervousness as though she was made to do a tightrope walking,

Chief Magdanese was a woman with age that looked like she was in her sixty, but she had been entrusted with the seat of national security bureau chief far before Vanessa even entered the bureau. Her pressure and dominating aura that pushed those who faced her into crucible of nervousness didn't seem to weaken throughout her age but even more polished instead.

“Agent Paradis, those are the current state of Berserk Case. You understand don’t you?”

“Yes.”

It wasn’t “Do you understand?” but it was as though she was saying “You understand don’t you? Don’t you? I won’t let you say you don’t”, Vanessa responded back “Yes” while thinking that if she gave any other reply than that then she might get fired.

Hearing her reply, Chief Magdanese nodded with a single word “Good” really naturally, then her gaze moved to Hughes.

“Senior Agent Hughes.”

“Ma’am.”

“I will recognize the application of the protection program for Emily Grant and her relatives, as well as the people connected with the development of H3-α4 headed by Professor Reginald Down. However, make Emily Grant as the prioritized protection target. You get it don’t you?”

“Roger. Are we going to head there right away? If possible, I want to have a briefing session beforehand with my team first.”

“.....I don’t mind. It will be conspicuous if several agents of security bureau visited while the sun is still high. Do it late at night. I’ll let you know later about the time. If Kimberly is among the current bodyguards then I don’t think there will be any problem, but just in case, place some of our men among the university’s security and janitor.”

“Understood.”

There was no worry of any complication with Hughes's responsive reply. While Vanessa was staying quiet, Chief Magdanese and Hughes did two, three more exchanges, and in the end Chief Magdanese asked "Is there any question?"

Vanessa who noticed that the gaze was directed to her gave a nod.

"Chief, in the case that we encountered someone that took that H3-α4 and become the alias "Berserk", what will be the method to deal with it and the order of priority?"

"Silence the target. I won't question the method."

It was an immediate answer. Vanessa who asked the question spontaneously lost for word. The chief telling her to silence the target without questioning her method meant that "it was okay to kill".

".....Is there any method to save the people that is affected by the drug——"

"Agent Paradis."

"-, Yes."

"According to Doctor Emily Grant, currently there is no medicine that can return people who turned Berserk back to normal. It's not like I don't understand your feeling that want to apprehend this drug's victim with the hope that someday a cure will be developed. However, that is the role of enforcement section, at the very least that's not your job. I won't let you say that you don't understand you know?"

"Of course, chief. My apologies."

Vanessa lightly lowered her head while feeling Hughes smiling wryly at her side before she asked one more question.

□Just now, there was the explanation that the culprit that leaked out the drug's data is unclear, but how much the progress of the analysis about that currently?□

□Let's see. Analyst Parker, explain.□

□Yes, chief.□

In respond to Vanessa's question, Chief Magdanese addressed the man standing by beside her who looked like was still in his twenty. The slender young man was wearing glass and looked timid, and for some reason his eyebrows were constantly forming figure '□' looking troubled, which further strengthened his timid impression.

Analyst Allen Parker who became the chief's direct subordinate after his excellence was highly evaluated around three years ago, operated the note PC on his hand while starting to explain.

□To inform you first, currently we still haven't obtain information to the degree that we can analyze. After all, it is only two day since the□Berserk Case□, and the notification from the university only came several hours ago so..... Currently rather than an analysis, please think of it as conjecture instead.□

Allen confirmed that Vanessa and Hughes had nodded and projected the content of the note PC he operated into a large display. There, the profiles of Emily, Professor Down, Hendricks and others that were obtained from who know where complete with their photo were projected.

From there, there was brief explanation of the background of Emily and others, and it was reported there that “H3-α4” —nicknamed “Berserk” (it was named so from the media’s naming of the previous incident as “Berserk Case”) was kept secret until the incident.

“Based on the present situation, it appeared that the highest possibility is that someone among Down laboratory leaked out the data. The motive is unknown. Grudge, craving for fame, destructive wish, stress venting, or possibly.....playfulness, perhaps?”

Allen said something like that while winking, perhaps with joking intention. Vanessa’s intensely chilly gaze pierced into him. From behind the tundra gaze of Chief Magdanese stabbed him. It was only Hughes who sent Allen a praising face that said “You, are you a hero” as though he had changed his evaluation to Allen.

“Hn, hn, cough-. E, ee, next possibility, is the case where outside people, or perhaps an organization was involved with this. Those with the high possibility to be able to know about the existence of “Berserk” even if just a fragment of it, we included them and the people related to them—for example, friend, family, the staff of the laboratory, the shop they went to, scientific society, part-time workplace, et cetera~——into the list. And then we eliminated the unlikely possibility by investigation, next we added various conditions, like who wouldn’t be able to bring out the data without anyone knowing and produced the rough list of the suspects like this.”

The data on the display was switched with roughly ten enterprises, people, organizations, and so on. Each suspect’s display was also accompanied with their respective possible motive and also the conjecture of the method of stealing.

Vanessa came to a comprehension. Certainly this person was in the level that was worthy to be working directly at the side of Chief Magdanese. The person himself said things like “It’s not in the level of analysis” or “There is too little time”, but the average analyst would surely be unable to form a logical conjecture to this degree.

“.....I see. Thank you very much for the easy to understand explanation, analyst Parker.”

“Ahaha. I said it before that this isn’t in the level of *analysis* or anything. Please don’t have something like strange preconception okay? But, if you are giving me thanks, then please, by any means don’t be so unfamiliar and call me “Allen”——”

“Hughes-san. Looking from this, even if the protection program is applied to them, there is no way we can let them stay together isn’t it?”

“.....Yeah, you’re right. There is enough possibility of an inside job, and it’s unthinkable that the culprit is sane seeing they released Berserk in the middle of city. At the very least Doctor Grant has to be placed separately from the other. But in that case, I’m worried that the girl’s mental state would be increasingly burdened. Paradis, I’m really relying on you here.”

“Please leave it to me.”

Analyst Allen’s face was twitching from being ignored as though nothing happened. Hughes made a sidelong glance at him with a thought “What a guy.....”, his gaze was as though he was looking at a hero as expected. Chief Magdanese was covering her eyes.

Chief Magdanese glared at Allen at the side, then she asked whether Hughes or Vanessa had other question, to which the two shook their head and she commanded them to leave. After lightly bowing their head, the two exited the office, Chief Magdanese saw them off before turning her gaze to Allen who was plainly feeling down.

□Allen.□

□Haa, just why I am having no luck with woman like this? Just what is not good from me? I think my face isn't that bad, and I'm always paying attention to being humorous and friendly, yet——chief, is it okay for me to focus myself in analyzing the method to be a bit popular among women?□

□.....It's fine. You don't even need to come anymore tomorrow.□

□Eh!? Why is the talk suddenly about firing me!?□

As I thought, perhaps I'm mistaken with the personnel selection——Chief Magdanese was recalling the thought that she had been thinking about all this time since three years ago while restraining her feeling that was wanting to fill Allen who was vehemently objecting□No way.....chief. If you take even my paying job from me, then how will I become popular!?□with lead bullet. She then gave her command.

□Stop joking around with that much. You get it don't you?□

□No, I'm not joking here.....no, nothing at all. I totally understood.□

When Allen was about to object, he was pierced by the serious eye glint of Chief Magdanese which made him to tensely salute in panic. Chief Magdanese sighed seeing Allen who was like that.

Part 2

A heavy atmosphere was hanging in the air inside a room of Percival University's research building. Emily was looking down with pale face while her eyes were shaking, Professor Down was holding the girl's hand tightly in kind consideration, at their opposite side was Lizzie who was patting Emily's head.

In this place right now, other than Hendricks, Dennis, and Rod, there were also the remaining members of Down Laboratory whose name were Hessica Cubit, Sam Redman, and Milo Yenny.

Jessica was a female student with relatively light attitude who recently poured her energy into fashion rather than research, but her normally light atmosphere now quietened down and her expression looked grim.

Even Sam who was often told "You are absolutely more suited to be a martial artist rather than researcher" by Dennis and Rod with his muscular body that was taller than 190 cm, and also Milo who was a black person and came from America as transfer student, normally they were youth with bright atmosphere, but now their expression was turning grave.

Inside that heavy air that was catching them into quagmire, a light voice that couldn't read the mood or perhaps it dared to ignore it entirely instead was resounding.

□Well, that's how it is. Missy, you just focus yourself in the research for the antidote *alone* without worrying about anything. You can look forward for a flawless facility and security there.□

The owner of the voice was an investigator of national security bureau's dangerous drugs countermeasure section——Kimberly Warren.

At the afternoon, he and Hughes came here after receiving the report from Professor Down and questioned everyone about the situation. After that Kimberly remained here in order to guard Emily and others while Hughes finished his report and preparation to lead a team back here.

And then, while Kimberly made arrangements with the dispatched undercover agents and waited for the decision of the concrete planning from here on, finally a communication came from Hughes just now.

According to the communication, the adoption of the protection program was recognized and the team would wait for late night before coming to pick them up. Regarding the protection program, in consideration of the possibility that there was someone among Down classroom aiming for Emily's research, Emily would be protected at another place that had an environment that could be used for research, where she would be asked to endeavor at researching the antidote there. The communication also mentioned that until the antidote was completed, don't mention the members of Down classroom, even her parents wouldn't be able to meet her.

□Agent Warren. Is it possible for even just one person, whether it's me or someone among the students to accompany Emily?□

Professor Down argued vehemently at Kimberly who looked like he wasn't mindful at all about Emily's state. However, Kimberly was making an expression as though he was facing an unreasonable kid while saying "Haa?" and curtly rejected the request.

"I'm troubled here if you are saying stupid question like that, professor. In this situation where the culprit is unclear, even all of you are included among the suspects, you should understand that right? There is no way the missy—the doctor can be left together with you."

"Then, at least, her parents can——"

"Please spare me from your begging. This is the decision from above, it's not something I can do anything about."

Kimberly scowled feeling that it was really troublesome and looked away while cutting off Professor Down's words.

"Why-. Emily's parents is not related with this! Then——"

"Teacher, it's okay. I'll be okay! I'll finish right away if it's just making something like the antidote!"

Emily stopped Professor Down who stood up with a menacing face looking as though he would grip Kimberly's collar. Emily puffed up her chest while chuckling "Fufufu" to show that she was okay just like she said, but looking from the viewpoint of Down classroom's members who had accompanied her like family until now, it was obvious that she was forcing herself.

The lonely time when Emily first enrolled into university became a little trauma for her. That little girl in an environment where not only she didn't have any

acquaintance, on the contrary everyone around her were all far older than her, caused her to be cornered.

That was why, if she was told that in this kind of urgent situation she would be separated not only from her father substitute and her older siblings substitute, but she would also be unable to contact her parents, then even if she understood that it was only for a limited time until she managed to make the antidote, she couldn't help but feel the great tightening in her heart.

□Well, no matter how much you protest here, the decision stands. Just resign yourself and make the antidote right away. You are genius right? Then you will be able to meet them again before long.□

□Someone like you is.....the person with you before, Hughes-san wasn't it? Don't you think you should learn a bit from your superior?□

Professor Down shook his head while sighing hearing the careless remark of Kimberly who irresponsibly made light of Emily's brave bluffing. Kimberly grinned broadly in amusement to that and only shrugged at the fierce glare of the professor.

However, as expected when he was glared not just by Professor Down but also by Hendricks and others, he seemed to feel uncomfortable and lifted both his hands as though he was surrendering before exiting the room right away.

□Perhaps the investigator's quality of the country's organization has been really falling these days.□

Professor Down whispered while sighing.

□But, teacher. Wasn't Hughes-san who came with that person looked like a sincere person? He said that he will also assign a female agent for me.□

□But still, Emily. Agent Warren said it right? It's "the decision from above". The one that decided so that Emily is alone is that agent Hughes. Or perhaps it's a person even more above you know?□

□That's.....□

The expression of Emily who bluffed by saying□It's okay!□ slightly clouded from anxiety as expected from the words of Professor Down.

Even Hendricks, Lizzie, and others were also making dark expression. Amidst them, Professor Down closed his eyes in worry before he moved his gaze to Emily with a determined expression.

□Emily. I have a really bad premonition. No matter how I think about it, it's strange that they are trying to separate you from even your parents. By any chance, perhaps the security bureau has some other objective, something more than merely protecting Emily to have you create the antidote.□

□Teacher..... But, we have already reported to them.....□

Finally Emily's bluffing expression fell off and she displayed a face where anxiety was mixed with bewilderment. Professor Down spoke more words to her.

□We can just deny that. Even so, if they still try to take away Emily alone even after that, then that will proof for sure that they have no good thinking in their mind.□

Professor Down then cut off his words, he crossed his arms and closed his eyes, after falling silent for while, he opened his mouth slowly.

□.....Emily, I have an acquaintance that have a research facility.□

□Research facility?□

□Yes. He also has a high social position, and he is reliable too. He should be able to give us shelter while lending us research facility until we finished making the antidote. What do you think? Though as expected, it's impossible for everyone to go, but if it's there then it's possible for me and your parents to come along. Besides, you will also be able to contact Hendricks and others. That's why, before we are separated from each other, before you are isolated alone, won't you evacuate there for the present?□

Emily stared without moving at Professor Down who made an unexpected proposal with a serious expression. Hendricks and others were also sending shocked gaze at Professor Down.

□I know it's strange coming from me who was the one that suggested to report to the security bureau. But it seems that the government cannot be trusted at all. There is no way I can entrust Emily who is already like my important daughter to that kind of place. To say nothing of how you will be alone there.....□

□Teacher.....□

Emily's gaze wandered around in hesitation. She could be together with everyone—that plan rang really nicely in her ears, it was a tempting proposal for her.....however, it was unthinkable for her that the security bureau would overlook

them in this abnormal situation where a drug could change human into a berserker and it was urgent for its antidote to be developed, furthermore it was themselves who reported about it.

Naturally, there was a possibility that she would cause much trouble for Professor Down who said he would shelter her, and also his acquaintance that would be the one actually sheltering her. Perhaps all of their social status and prestige could be destroyed because of that.

However, Professor Down who seemed to guess that thinking of Emily grasped the trembling hand of Emily tightly, and then he sent her a gentle gaze just like when he reached out to her the first time.

□Emily, you don't need to worry needlessly. You are a first class researcher, but at the same time you are also still a sixteen years old child. It's mistaken for a good child like you to shoulder everything in this kind of emergency. That's why, it's okay for you to depend on others. No, rather I beg you as someone that is like family to you. Please, I want you to depend on me.□

Emily looked down to hide her expression. It wasn't because she was hesitating, but because if she didn't look down then her welling up emotion would become flowing drops of tear.

□Emily, let's depend on teacher's kindness here. Even we are also unable to let Emily be alone in this current situation.□

□That's right..... If it's Emily, then surely you will be able to make the antidote right away. That's why, let's agree with teacher's proposal okay?□

Starting from Hendricks and Lizzie, the other members also raised voice of agreement with Professor Down's proposal.

Everyone of them was worried for Emily without exception, they were wracking their brains to look for the best possible future for Emily.

She was really blessed. Emily was thinking that from the bottom of her heart while taking a deep breath, then she nodded while firmly looking at Professor Down.

□Great, it's decided then. Everyone, please cooperate with me. Even if we talk to agent Warren about this, he would only stop us. Then, let's ask for his approval only after it's done. I and Emily will head to my acquaintance's place ahead, so can you all distract agent Warren's attention for us?□

□Got it. This is for Emily. We will do it somehow.□

After Hendricks nodded strongly, the other members also nodded with resolve in their face.

□Hahah, who'd ever thought that a time will come where we will think about outrageous thing like outwitting the security bureau agents in active duty like this. Isn't this like in a movie?□

□Rod. Don't get too optimistic. After all you are the one with the highest possibility of making mistake here.□

□What did you say-, Dennis! Ain't you the one who is always getting cold feet at critical time and caused blunder?□

□It's the cliché that normally the guy who is spouting big words is actually the one getting cold feet. Rod, that refers to you.□

□Okay, I rea~lly get it that you are picking fight with me. Let's get outside Dennis. I'll make that glasses get sticky all over with my finger's sweat.□

□Bring it on. I'll perfectly stitch your slovenly chest so that you won't be able to expose it for the second time.□

A small giggle echoed inside the room that had its atmosphere lightened up with Dennis and Rod's usual swearing. When Dennis and Rod turned their gaze there even while their hands were still grasping each other's collar, they found the figure of Emily who leaked out that chuckle from being unable to endure the scene.

Lured by that, Hendricks, Lizzie, Jessica, Sam, Milo, and the Professor Down began to laugh.

Emily made an amazing smile while tears were gathering on the corner of her eyes. With a really lovely smile that was like blooming flower she said.....

□Thank you, Dennis-*oniichan*, Rod-*onii-chan*.□

□□.....□□

Dennis and Rod who were given the greatest present with the designation that was seldom used for them, they silently tidied up their clothes and made a fake cough. And then they sat back quietly with their face dyed red until their ears.

□Now then, with the return of Dennis, Rod, and Emily's smiling face, let's focus on the detail of how we will outwit the security bureau.□

Professor Down's command, as usual it instantly made the students renewed their focus. For the sake of their cute little

sister's future, they talked their opinion to each other with an expression that was even more serious than usual when they were at research or lecture.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

The chapter is short, on top of that it doesn't progress, I'm sorry.

The writing time is, already.....

Forgive me for keeping all of you in suspense but, one thing, it will be a bit more time until that guy crawl from the abyss, so I'm wishing that if all of you reader can possibly wait for it.

The next update will be at 6 P.M Saturday too. There will be no stopping midway next time!

Beginning of Tragedy 2

□Good grief, it feels like I am an actor in a B-class movie here.□

While Emily and others were in the middle of discussion, Kimberly who was leaning on the wall at the corridor while staring at his smartphone was letting out a chuckle that he couldn't keep restraining inside himself. It seemed that what he was watching in the smartphone was something that really pleased him.

Kimberly moved his fingers quickly across the display several times. Then the display displayed Kimberly's bank account. When he saw the amount of money that was displayed there, he let out his chuckle once more. Seen from the side he really looked like a dangerous character. How his expression was dyed with greed that was unthinkable coming from an agent of the security bureau also encouraged such atmosphere.

□This much just from acting a little as agent. Really, this make me feels that risking my life fighting criminals is really stupid.□

Kimberly put back his smartphone inside his pocket while saying that to himself. At the same time, he recalled his schedule from here on inside his head. —Due to his *real* employer's request, it would be a schedule where he would

risk his life kidnapping Emily Grant and then bet his life to pull the carpet from under security bureau.

Kimberly was making show of standing guard outside the room where Emily and others were inside while actually he was confirming his betrayal toward his comrades and his criminal act. It was at that time, *kii* the door's room made a sound and opened.

Dennis and Rod came out from inside.

□Hm? What's the matter? It will still be a while until the pick-up time you know?□

□We are thinking to make the final check of the things we are going to bring.□

□Sheesh, you guys already made that check a lot wasn't it?□

□That's just our nature. This kind of confirmation won't be enough no matter how many times you do it.□

Dennis shrugged while pushing up his glasses sharply. Kimberly nodded□Is that so.....□to that before he turned his gaze to Rod at the side and asked□And you?□.

□It's this for me.□

□Smoking huh..... Well, fine. But, don't move away too far okay? After all you guys are also protection target here.□

□Yes sir—□

Rod jokingly returned a salute while lazily dangling the cigar he grasped in his fingertips. Like that, he and Dennis disappeared together further in the corridor while receiving Kimberly's gaze.

Of course, Dennis and Rod's words to Kimberly were lies. They were planning to raise commotion after this so that it would be easier for Emily and Professor Down to escape. The specific plan was to raise a commotion nearby the laboratory where "Berserk" was in safekeeping by taking other harmful chemicals before yelling "We made a mistake and it got scattered~".

Of course, what they would scatter was harmless chemical, but if they made commotion saying that 'It would affect life if you don't take medicine right away!', the agents of security bureau that couldn't confirm the authenticity should be panicked. The other would use that opening to try escaping from the research facility.

Surely the bodyguards from security bureau would never think that the people who requested protection by themselves would actually escape by their own decision. On top of that, this research building was already like the back garden for the researchers who often spent the majority of their day inside. There was a high possibility they would be able to escape.

And, at that time the door of the room opened once more. Who came out were Sam and Jessica. Jessica was leaning coquettishly on Sam's arm, generously pressing her voluptuous body that peeked out from her clothes that had intense exposure.

"So you guys too.....what's your business?"

Kimberly talked to them while still leaning on the wall.

"Ee~, you understand just by looking right~? We are going to where it will be just the two of us~. It seems like it will be difficult in various things after this~, so while we still can~"

□Ye, yeah, that's right. Si, sir, it's fine, just for a bit right?□

Jessica was leaning even more on Sam while her way of talking was stretching even longer. Sam's eyes were swimming around, but he somehow responded to Kimberly.

In reality, Jessica and Sam were just friend, they weren't lover or anything, they were just getting out of the room to be distraction like Dennis and Rod. They pretended to be lovers with the motive of trying to find an agent somewhere and trick him into something like a blackmail scene using beautiful girl.

However, for Sam it was unexpected how passionate (?) the acting of Jessica was. His unrest was fierce from her way of talking that was completely different from usual and the soft sensation that his arm was feeling.

□.....Yes, yes. Do whatever you like.□

□Ye~s, we will do whatever we li~ke. Rather, I'll be made to do whatever Sam li~ke□

□.....□

Jessica grinned widely while waving her hand at Kimberly who gave his permission with an exasperated expression. Sam was feeling a bit of terror from Jessica's acting while nodding wordlessly.

Like that, Jessica and Sam's figure vanished at the turn of the corridor.

Kimberly kept leaning on the wall with his arm crossed while waiting silently until the time came.

Some times after that, when Kimberly was starting to want for at least a glass of coffee, an abnormal event happened.

Bii—, bii—, bii—, bii—!!

A warning sound suddenly echoed. Kimberly made a faint smile and then he brought his mouth closer to the communication device attached on his sleeve.

□This is Warren. All members, situation report.□

Kimberly wasn't shaken. Everything was just as planned. He had already seen through the ulterior motive of the students exiting the room. Therefore, he expected for the report that reached him from each bodyguard to be□Nothing strange□or□The students are~□.

Yes, everything was just as planned——was how it should be.

□? Oi, Clayton, Muller. Respond. Oi, what's wrong?□

All bodyguards that reported to him said there was nothing strange. Kimberly thought that there would be reports coming from at least two place telling him that some kind of commotion happened, but he got doubtful when until the end all the reports that he got told him nothing strange happened.

Furthermore, there was no report at all coming from the last two people he called. There was no reaction no matter how much he called into their communication device.

□.....Oi oi. Don't tell me, they got caught off guard by mere students.□

Kimberly's cheeks convulsed from imagining the unimaginable development. But, the moment he noticed

that the place that the two bodyguards he lost contact with was where Berserk was deposited, his face complexion changed right away.

“-, Dickson! Russell! Come here right away! Take over me for guarding the missy!”

“Haa? Warren, what are you saying? Just now two of the kids came here. They are surprised by the alarm but——”

“Just leave that alone! A different lot might be coming! Berserk is stolen right now!”

“Wha-, wait a second! Something like that is not in the pla——”

“There ain’t any time for chatter! I’m going to take a look at the place of Clayton and Muller! Just in case of the worst case, you mustn’t let the missy got snatched away!”

Kimberly roared angrily. Right after that, the door of the room opened slightly and Professor Down’s face appeared from there.

“Did something happen? We——”

“There might be someone infiltrating. I’m putting two guards here, so don’t come out of the room.”

“No, but——”

Kimberly turned his back toward Professor Down who was going to object while saying this.

“Someone is aiming for Berserk!”

“!? Co, could it be, Dennis and others”

□No! Those guys are confirmed to be in another place! That's why I'm panicked here. Just listen, stay quietly inside the room!□

□Go, got it.□

Professor Down returned inside the room while feeling shaken. Right after that, two bodyguards dressed as garbage man came running.

Kimberly entrusted them to be the guard in that place before running through the corridor with fierce momentum.

□Dammit all. Please let it be just some kind of mistake. My livelihood depend in this plan here!□

Kimberly was cursing while rushing up the emergency stair. □Berserk□was four floor above——inside the chemicals vault that was strictly managed at the tenth floor, but if there was intruder, then there was high possibility they would use the emergency stair, and this stair was also simply the closest to Kimberly's position.

The vault at the tenth floor could only be opened using ID card, fingerprint confirmation, twelve digit password, and voice recognition, those four locks. In addition there was also security camera.

Therefore, it was unthinkable that the drug could be stolen in so short time but.....

Although *they weren't agent that received training*, but the men standing guard there were muscular and armed, yet they might be neutralized already without even given time for calling help.

If, this wasn't some kind of mistake, and there was really intruder, then that intruder must be a considerably skilled one.

Kimberly was feeling cold sweat while rushing through three floors in one go, and stepped on the stair landing between the ninth and tenth floor. It was at that moment,

□Oops□

□A? You.....□

Ahead of the gaze of the shaken Kimberly, was a man that was just going to go down the stair from tenth floor. It was a man without any peculiar trait. He looked like he was in his twenty or even at his forty. He looked flat, medium build body, and brown hair that wasn't long or short. His suits didn't look like high-class or a cheap one. And then, a doctor robe.

The man raised a really light voice when he saw Kimberly. If they met in a normal situation, then Kimberly would surely think that this man was a researcher here, he might even say□Excuse me□while passing through the man and like that he wouldn't even recall back about the man for the second time in the future.

But,

□You, what is inside that suitcase?□

The lack of any peculiarity, the handy suitcase, and then Kimberly's instinct as an agent, made him be conscious of the man.

□It's just a research document though? Rather, I should be the one asking who are you? I have never seen your face

here, and you also don't look like a researcher.....eh, don't tell me you are related with this alarm? Could it be, I'm in a pinch here?□

The man's face was convulsing while he took a step back on the stair without turning around. Looking from the man's speech and gesture, in a glance he looked like a simple researcher encountering someone suspicious.

□I am an agent from security bureau. There is a possibility that an important medicine is stolen. Sorry, but I'll confirm the content of that case.□

□No, no, it's impossible to let outside person to see research data I told you. How suspicious, are you really someone from security bureau?□

If Kimberly took a step, the man would also take a step back. Kimberly narrowed his eyes slightly at the man's attitude, then he said□I'll show you my badge then□while his hand moved to take out his proof of identification as security bureau agent from his breast pocket.....

In order to took out and fired a gun.

□Ah maan, this person is sharp. You are really a dangerous man, trying to shoot someone so suddenly like that.□

□.....You yourself, you bastard ain't normal. Who and where are you from?□

Kimberly's gun muzzle, was pointed at the temple of the man from *point-blank range*. At the same time, the neck of Kimberly who had the distance *closed* instantly got a knife pressed on there.

Yes, the man in doctor robe closed the distance faster than Kimberly could take out his gun and shoot on an unstable place like the stair. Furthermore, surprisingly that knife flew out from the man's sleeve, it was obviously a knife with launching mechanism.

Kimberly felt cold sweat drenching himself. He planned to be a wanted man in this case anyway, so he wouldn't shirk from cleaning up one or two researchers that might be unrelated rather than risking his important money tree got stolen. But, when the lid was opened, what he was confronting was actually someone far more skilled than him.

'This is bad, bad, bad' His instinct was ringing the alarm bell loudly like that.

In an instant,

□Warren!□

□Kimberly-□

Voices that called Kimberly's name and gunshots roared. Bodyguard agents had gathered below. The man said □Whoops□still with a light tone while instantly pulling his body back. The bullets hit the wall a slight distance away. The shooters didn't plan to hit right from the start, they fired only to separate the man away from Kimberly.

The man seemed to give up going down the stair, he tried to climb up the stair.

□I won't let you-!□

Kimberly pulled his gun trigger continuously. The fired bullets passed through beside the man who twisted his body right away and opened up holes on the wall.

□Are you sane!? You are firing at someone carrying a case filled with hazardous substance here!□

□That thing cannot infect through air! Even if anyone get hit with droplets, if it's just a little then it cannot cause secondary infection! It's better to destroy it rather than have it stolen!□

Indeed, □Berserk□wouldn't infect someone without injection or contact, regarding secondary infection from a person that had been□Berserkification□, *if the intake amount was only a little*, then even if other person came into contact with body fluids of the victim then they wouldn't get infected.

Even so, Kimberly who dared to brave the danger of scattering around the extremely dangerous chemicals caused the man's expression to cramp a bit while he finally took out a gun from his breast pocket and returned fire. While Kimberly leaped aside, two bodyguard agents that had climbed up the stair got their legs shot through and they crumbled down.

Kimberly cursed while aiming his gun muzzle at the man, but right after that, his eyes opened wide.

□Are you bastard ninja!?□

The man unexpectedly jumped off the stair, he then kicked on the handrail and leaped further and passed through above Kimberly's head. Furthermore, he then kicked on the wall to turn around and attacked Kimberly.

Kimberly changed the direction of his gun, but the man's flying kick hit Kimberly's chest faster. An impact that caused him to hallucinate his ribs breaking made the air in his lung to be forcefully ejected out. Kimberly groaned□Gahah□and got blown away.

In no time Kimberly was sent flying and he would be struck on the stair behind where he would be neutralized, that was how it appeared it would turn out.....but, Kimberly was a former military and an expert at military hand-to-hand fighting. He immediately discarded his gun and caught the kicking leg, dragging the opponent into the momentum that sent him flying.

□Guah□

□-kh!?!□

The man made Kimberly as his stepping stool and somehow evaded being struck on the stair, but his balance was broken and he fell.

Even so, Kimberly still got the bigger damage, and different from the man who immediately stood up, Kimberly became unable to move from the impact.

The man shrugged as though to say 'oh dear' before trying to leave that place.

It was at that time. An incident that could only be said as a devil's work happened in succession, which would lead to tragedy.

□Agent Warren!□

□This bastard! That's Emily's! Return it!□

Dennis and Rod appeared. They heard the alarm and saw the agents going off somewhere. They became worried that □Berserk□ would be stolen again and came here to look at the situation, using elevator they came to the tenth floor and there they listened at gunshots from the stair. And then, the two caught sight at the man's figure and guessed the

situation. When they saw Kimberly and other agents were defeated, their sense of justice came out. It came out fiercely.

The hot-blooded Rod leaped to the man, while Dennis threw the harmless but smelly chemical they had prepared.

Naturally, the man easily kicked away Rod, but the chemical vial accurately hit the ceiling and broke apart, throwing out its offensive smell. Naturally, the liquid fell like shower at the man below, Kimberly, and the agents.

The man immediately lifted his suitcase over his head to protect his body from the unknown chemical.

Instantly, along with a single gunshot, the suitcase was shot and sent flying from his hand. The one firing was one of the agent that was shot in the leg and fell. That agent was crawling slowly toward his gun that was sent flying, before his hand finally reached it and he aimed at the head of the man whose attention was taken by Rod and Dennis.

Therefore, it was a coincidence that it was the suitcase that was hit. Rather it was because the man was holding the suitcase with his hand lowered that the agent aimed at the man's head. But, the unexpected situation where a chemical was thrown at the ceiling caused the man to make an unforeseen move.

And then, there was one more devilish coincidence. The bullet hit the lock of the suitcase with pinpoint accuracy.

As the result, the suitcase that had its lock broken flew away from the man's hand, it crashed on the wall which caused the suitcase to be opened.

Yes, the vial of "Berserk" that was put inside the suitcase, was exposed to the open.

The people in that place sent their gaze pursuing the falling suitcase in slow motion. Obeying gravity, "Berserk" flew out from the suitcase that fell on the ground. There were two vials in the suitcase.

One vial flew out from the impact and broke at the center of the landing stair. The content scattered out.

"Don't get hit!"

"tsu"

Kimberly roared angrily. Ahead of his gaze was the figure of the other agent that was still lying on the floor.

The agent covered his face with his arms right away but..... he was too late.

"a, a? Gii! aAAAAA——!!"

The splash of "Berserk" flew into the agent's eye and mouth, a beat later, the agent screamed thunderously, *beki baki goki* his body began to transform along with raw sounds.

"Now that it's like this, he is beyond help, eh."

The man, with expression as though he was chewing something bitter aimed his gun muzzle at the head of the enlarging agent. And then, he fired without hesitation and blew away the head. If the person only came into contact with small amount of splash, then there would be no problem if he was killed before transforming.

The agent easily crumbled down.

Dennis and Rod were greatly shaken seeing a person died before their eyes, even so they felt relieve the same like Kimberly and the man that the Berserkification was stopped.

It was at that moment,

——aAAAAAAAAAH!!!!!!

The first cry of birth came from downstairs. The birth cry of Berserk.

□-, the other one!?□

□Not here.....shit-, it fell down! We got too distracted with this one!□

Yes, the other vial wasn't anywhere here.

The other vial had fell downstairs from the gap between the handrail's railing. And then, midway it crashed on the railing and its content was thrown out. If it was just that then there would be no problem. However, in a stroke of bad luck, no, perhaps in a sense it ought to be said as inevitability, downstairs there were a lot of people that stuck out their head from the handrail to look upstairs.

The alarm and the gunshots that came from upstairs. There was no way that those would go unnoticed by the students and professors who were staying behind in the research building, the security guards, and others.

That was why, the drug that gave birth to berserker raining down from upstairs showered them plenty. It wasn't in the level of splash anymore. It was the whole content of a bottle. Even though, it actually didn't even take a full injection at that time of□Berserk Case□.

□Aa, geez-. This is really an awful failure-. The luck of me today is undoubtedly the worst!□

The man cursed out like that while jumping down the stairs.

□Guh, fuck-. Stop damnit!□

Kimberly's face distorted due to the damage that was still remaining in his body while standing up somehow, he then chased after the man by rushing down the stair.

□Rod! We are going back!□

□Eh? A, Dennis? But, something like this.....□

□Get a hold of yourself! We have to let everyone know! Besides, that man might be going to where Emily is!□

□ts. Tha, that's right.□

Dennis scolded the greatly shaken Rod and made him stood up.

And then, they turned a pained expression at the agent's remain that got his head blown off, before they rushed out toward the room where Emily and others were waiting

While listening to the *countless* roars and continuous gunfire resounding downstairs.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Even though I planned to finish the reminiscence at two chapters.....

Seriously I got no time for writing. This time it stop at incomplete point too

It will be a bit harsh for the update for the next Saturday.

I'm Not Mr. K, But I'll Become Your Strength

AN: It's a little bit late.

Sorry.

Part 1

When Kimberly finally arrived at downstairs where screams and bellows and beastly roars were flying past each other, he witnessed the manifestation of picture of hell there.

Men and women were enlarged atrociously without distinction. The strengthened monsters were trampling down everything at the surrounding following their instinct.

At first there were only several people that got dashed over with "Berserk", but the body fluids that were scattered along with the roar, the biting act, the scattering blood due to the security guard's gunshot, all those were increasing the number of the infected like rats multiplying.

If it was only a bit of "Berserk", then surely there wouldn't be anyone at the surrounding that got infected just like when that young man rampaged in the middle of city a few days ago. However, this time the people that got infected the very first were absorbing a lot of the undiluted solution of "Berserk". The ability of "Berserk" should be lowering much if it was by indirect infection, so at this level there would be no worry of explosive contagion happening.

However, even so there was the need to be resigned of at least tertiary infection or quaternary infection. And above all else, the people who got hit at the beginning with the undiluted solution were even now scattered about somewhere and kept producing the secondary infection.

The hell was only starting just now.

□Fuck-. It's really a B-class movie like this.□

Kimberly was cursing while aiming his gun muzzle at a berserker that just now was snapping the waist of a small statured female student to *opposite direction*. He consecutively fired life-reaping bullets within an instant.

The former student that was Berserkified carelessly tossed away the female students who died in a way that was beyond imagination by getting snapped right into half, and then it covered its head using its arm that was like a log while rapidly rushing at Kimberly.

Kimberly's bullets that flew straight to the berserker's head were easily stopped by that muscle armor. Its flesh was gouged and blood was flying, but that was all. The wound was immediately starting to regenerate and its charging momentum didn't decline at all.

□Nine milli is just like peashooter huh-□

Kimberly immediately jumped forward into a head-sliding. Strong wind of death and madness passed through above his head. He evaded by slipping through between its legs.

Kimberly was sliding while instantly rolling face-up, and then he aimed at the back of the head of the berserker and pulled his trigger. Inside the corridor that had turned dim due to the broken lamps, muzzle flashes flickered along with consecutive gunshot sounds.

At the same time, skin and flesh and blood scattered from the berserker's back of the head. The berserker that got hit with fierce impact on the back of the head while in the middle of charging pitched forward and fell on the corridor with a slide.

□I heard that it doesn't have weak point other than the head but.....it's more troublesome than I thought.□

Kimberly stood up while smoothly replacing his gun's magazine. He whispered with an expression as though he was chewing something bitter.

Right after that,

□aAAAAAAAH□

□-!? Shit-, it's infected!?!□

Behind Kimberly, the female student who was snapped into two just now shrieked while standing up. When he looked there, the girl's face was really wet. Probably when she was caught she was also dashed with a lot of saliva that was scattered together with the berserker's roar.

Kimberly aimed his gun to deal the finishing blow before it could finish its transformation. But, before he could pull the trigger, presence of death blew from behind him.

□-!?!□

He obeyed his instinct's order and jumped to the side, an instant later, a war hammer was swung down. The fist attack was so fierce that he mistakenly thought that. Cracks in the shape of spider web was created on the floor by that fist.

□So I failed to finish it off-□

Yes, the attacker from behind was the berserker just now. Actually, the angle of Kimberly's bullets was too bad to pierce the skull, they could only slide on the skull's surface and shaved the skin.

And then, the worst thing was that the second berserker finished transforming in front of Kimberly who lost his chance.

□This is bad.....□

He muttered those words unconsciously. Cold sweat trickled down the temple of Kimberly. He was sandwiched between two berserkers behind and forward in a corridor that wasn't that wide. Kimberly's cheeks were twitching in this dangerous situation.

But, at that time, a severe earthquake suddenly came. The corridor wall slightly away from him was blown away along with intense thunderous roar, and from there a berserker came out. However, it appeared that the berserker wasn't intentionally smashing the wall. The berserker flew out with a somersault and its head struck uncouthly at the corridor's opposite side with a tumble.

It was as though its charging momentum was made use to send it flying and crashed onto the wall. That conjecture was proved to be correct by the man in white doctor robe that jumped out from the broken wall right after that.

□My stomach got cold inside here because I need to imitate a matador against berserker.□

The man made such frivolous talk while kicking the berserker's arm that was trying to stand up. When its balance's broke, the man drilled its head with point-blank range shooting and finished it off with certainty. The berserker fell down like a puppet with its string cut, and then it withered up while spewing white smoke. The man in white doctor robe attentively put in bullet toward the heart's location from the back.

□GAAAAAAAH!□

□Oops. Spare me from anymore chicken race okay.□

One of the berserkers aiming at Kimberly roared and charged toward the man in white doctor robe. Immediately following that, a black object lightly flew in air.

□Wai-, you stupid bastard-□

Kimberly got down in panic. The next moment, the dim corridor was overran with intense flash. The white robed man was using flashbang.

Kimberly was sweating coldly that he was crouching defenselessly right beside a berserker while desperately covering his eyes, then gunshots roared four times in the corridor that was filled with flash. At the same time, a heavy crashing sound resounded for the second time.

(He sniped in this kind of situation!?)

Kimberly shuddered in his heart while sweating coldly at the white robed man's skill, however, he still jumped out by relying the slight presence that he felt.

□Uwah, that's dangerous-□

□Chih, I missed-□

The flash was already settling down and the dim corridor came back into view. The two people crossed through each other among the falling bodies of berserkers and now they were opposite of each other. The white robed man that easily slaughtered three berserkers tried to cross in front of Kimberly to go ahead of the corridor, but then Kimberly assaulted him with the knife that he was secretly carrying.

Kimberly already perceived that it was impossible to catch this man for interrogation due to the difference in strength between the two of them, but rather than letting him escaped just like this he thought that he would instead kill the man and search for even a scrap of information about who this man was from his dead body.

However, the attack that was filled with that killing intent was easily dodged. Kimberly reflexively clicked his tongue.

Although, as expected, perhaps the man in white robe didn't expect Kimberly to attack using his instinct when his eyes were burned to some extent by the flashbang and he kept it closed, the man exposed a slightly pained expression.

“ts,you, that face”

“.....Geh, this is bad!? Aa, can you pretend not seeing anything?”

The white robed man still talked with light tone. The place on his face that was grazed by Kimberly's knife had something dangling down on there. However, it wasn't blood. There was unharmed skin that could be seen from under the peeled off skin.

It was obviously a disguise mask that was using advanced technology. It was something in the level that couldn't be prepared by low level organization.

(Wait, wait a second. He is using a disguise of this level just for sneaking into a university's research facility? He is extremely vigilance of having his face known? In addition he know about Berserk's existence and act in this timing, also an organization that has skilled member above my level?)

Kimberly stared fixedly at the white robed man who was holding his head in exaggeration while saying "Ooh my, goddd!" because of his failure of exposing the fact that he was in disguise. And then, with the information that he had as the premise, and the speech and conduct of the man that he felt déjà vu from.....

"You.....don't tell me....."

The eyes of Kimberly who guessed the true identity of the white robed man turned round. The man showed even more fluster at Kimberly's state that was like that. The man muttered in small voice "Even though I'm already at risk of getting fired from making this great failure, seriously spare me from more than this!" before turning on his heel.

"Wait-

"I'm not waiting! This is out of control already! I had taken care of all the first berserkers already, take care of the rest please! This is what you called collective responsibility!"

"Don't screw——"

Kimberly tried to chase after the man, but the white robed man vanished in the blink of eye deep at the corridor ahead. Furthermore, in a bad timing more berserkers showed its figure from the opposite side of the corridor that Kimberly was forced to stop running.

"This is really a shitty B-class. This one and that one are just doing whatever they pleased."

With a pained expression, Kimberly gave a sidelong glance at the berserkers charging at him while roaring. He then dashed up the stair to the floor above.

At the very least, he had to secure his money tree, the girl that was Berserk's creator.

Part 2

On the other side, when the berserkers were starting to scream for the first time, Emily and others were tormented by bewilderment and anxiety and fretfulness while hesitating of what to do, whether they should go out to look at the situation or not, or if this was the diversion caused by Rod and others and they should get out of the research building right away.

At the very least, this surely wasn't the diversion that they planned seeing from Kimberly's state before this and from how the two agents that came to be the guard replacing him suddenly dashed away in panic and abandoned their guard duty.

□.....Everyone, let's escape.□

Professor Down made his decision in the middle of the oppressive atmosphere. Hendricks was about to make objection reflexively, but Professor Down continued his words before Hendricks could form his words.

□This feels too strange to be something caused by Rod and others. Perhaps something else is happening right now. However, it's certain that the agents are directing their attention elsewhere. I think we shouldn't let go of this chance.□

Those words caused everyone to look at each other's face. And then, they nodded at Professor Down's suggestion even while feeling anxious.

They slowly and quietly opened the door, and after confirming that there was nothing strange going on outside, Emily and others came out. Violent sound of clatters and impacts resounded from the corridor. Emily's body spontaneously froze from that. Hendricks showed his usual kind smile at Emily who was showing small fear while her body stooped a little, their eyes met each other.

□It's fine Emily. We are with you. Surely everything will go smoothly.□

□Senpai.....□

Emily looked anxious, but she obediently nodded. Hendricks then tousled her head in encouragement.

□Wait Rick. Don't tousle Emily's hair like that. Good grief, you just don't understand how to treat a girl.□

□Oi oi, Lizzie. If Hendricks understand how woman's heart work, then you two will be already married from long time——□

□Stupid Milo-, close that mouth of yours!□

The cheerful overseas student Milo ate Lizzie's slap with 'hebuu' and his body half-rotated. But he kept rotating for a half more and returned to face the front and sent Lizzie a wide grin. A vein emerged on Lizzie's forehead.

Seeing the exchange between the seniors——no, her big brothers and big sisters who were always jovial, Emily's anxiety was also eliminated a bit. She said□Thank you□ inside her heart while returning back a powerful smile in place of words of gratitude.

Emily and others arrived in front of the stair.

□Then, Hendricks, Lizzie, Milo. We'll rely on you to recover the research data and the drugs. I and Emily will leave ahead from here. Let's meet again at the meeting place.□

□Yes teacher.□

Hendricks replied with determined expression at Professor Down's instruction. Lizzie and Milo also nodded.

Like that, Hendricks and other went upstairs while Emily and Professor Down went downstairs, it was just before they could do that, *zushin-, zushin-* a sound that was like something heavy hitting the floor resounded from downstairs.

□What?□

Hendricks and Milo looked at each other's face and they peeked downstairs hesitatingly. Even while they were doing that, the heavy sound was gradually getting louder while transmitting vibration regularly.

□He, hey, Hendricks. You see, I, feels like I have seen this kind of scene, in a movie before.....□

□He, hee? What, coincidence. I, I also recall something like that.□

The two were feeling cold sweats drenching their body while they couldn't take off their gaze from downstairs, however, they muttered in small volume simultaneously.

——Juras○c Park

They said.

□This ain't a joke. Why, the hell. Why, are those guys.....□

□Ha, haha. I wonder, if this is still better, than T-Rex.....□

Milo stepped back while shuddering in fear from that—the berserker that finally showed its appearance. Hendricks also stepped back while making a dry laugh.

Right after that, a scream that pierced the air was raised.

□ts, RUN-□

Hendricks's voice warned so loud it felt like her throat would tear. Milo came back to his senses as though he just got punched, while Emily and others who were similarly stiffened also turned on their heel and started running through the corridor.

□Go down from the other stair!□

□No, use the elevator! Get into that!□

Lizzie mentioned about the other stair at the end of the research building. But midway Hendricks saw the floor display of the elevator and wasted no time to tell the others about the change of plan.

Emily jumped forward and pushed the elevator button. The elevator was currently at a floor above them. The sound of the elevator operating sounded a beat later after the button was pushed. Emily and others would be able to ride the elevator in just a few more seconds. But, right now those seconds felt like eternity to them.

□Quick-, quick-!!□

Emily spoke impatiently while pushing the button repeatedly.

A roar reverberated. The berserker climbed the stair and arrived at the floor where Emily and others were at right now. The figure of Emily and others was reflected on its bloodshot eyes. And then, it screamed once more. However, this time the sound was accompanied by the shaking of the floor from its forward charge.

At the same time, the elevator door opened. They all rushed inside and pushed the button with all their might. Seeing the door slowly began to close was really frustrating. However, it closed just in time.

Just before the door closed, the wicked look of the berserker peeked in from between the door's gap and a fist approached, but the door closed completely. Thunderous sound and impact ran through the door. Milo and Hendricks fell on their butt seeing the door now became greatly dented.

Lizzie was covering her mouth with her hands, her expression showed how she couldn't believe what had happened. And then, Professor Down was dumbfounded while muttering "Impossible. This.....what happened.....".

While the floor display of the elevator was slowly heading to the lower floor, Emily let out her words using voice that was filled with uneasiness.

"We, we have to contact the police. After that the security bureau too. After that, after that, the research building need to be sealed.....but, the way to seal it is....."

Those voices caused Hendricks and others to quickly return to their senses. Their little sister was desperately thinking even while they were in stupor. That fact made them recovered some part of their composure.

“We don’t know what happened but, it’s unthinkable that Rod and others were the one scattering $H^3\text{-}\alpha$ —no, Berserk. Anyway, let’s get outside for the moment and then contact the police. If they don’t send armed men here.....”

“.....Yeah. We don’t know how much Berserk is scattered, but it will be a disaster if it gets outside.”

“Are Dennis and others safe..... As for the security bureau, surely agent Warren has contacted them though.”

Hendricks and others desperately calmed down themselves while talking to each other. Before long the elevator arrived at the first floor. The door opened and then they caught sight of armed men in janitor uniform a slight distance away. Those must be the bodyguard agents from security bureau.

With that conclusion, Milo felt a slight relieve, and then he rushed out of the elevator in order to seek help from them.

“You guys! Help us! Upstairs there is berse——”

Milo’s figure disappeared.

“Eh?”

It was unknown who whispered that. Hendricks came out of the elevator with shaky footsteps and turned his gaze to the right.

He already knew. Right after Milo got outside, something big nabbed Milo from the side. He knew—that this something was a berserker.

“A, a, aah”

Hendricks trembling voice echoed. His eyes opened widely and he sunk down on the floor as though strength left his waist. He didn't avert his gaze away. He couldn't.

He couldn't avert his gaze from the figure of his friend that got his head crushed. He couldn't avert his gaze, from the monster straddling his friend while madly punching with its fist that was like rock.

The roar of the berserker that easily snatched Milo's life reverberated. It sounded like the war cry of victory.

The agents fired. From the direction they fired at, further two, three more berserkers appeared.

□Senpai!□

□Rick-□

The agents fired blindly in panic. Several of the bullets hit nearby the elevator, even so Hendricks kept standing stock still without being able to avert his eyes from the tragic appearance of his friend. Emily and Lizzie jumped at Hendricks who was like that. And then, both of them dragged him back into the elevator.

□Milo is, Milo is-□

□Rick-, get a hold of yourself!□

Lizzie scolded Hendricks who was holding his head in panic. A painful slap flew onto Hendricks's cheek. Hendricks returned to his senses due to the pain running on his cheek and the expression of Lizzie before his eyes that looked like it would burst into tear anytime.

□Right now.....that's no good. You still, cannot break down yet. Live, search for help, after that.....protect our little sister! Think just those for now! You are a big brother right!□

□Lizzie.....yeah, you're right. Sorry.□

Hendricks stood up and turned his gaze at the little sister who was standing still at the elevator corner.

(She looks like a corpse. Shit-, it's just as Lizzie said. I've got to pull myself together-)

The look of Emily's expression that lost color was certainly like a corpse inside a coffin. Hendricks who treated her like family all this time understood really clearly that Emily now was getting crushed by guilt.

The drug that she created turned a lot of people into monster. And then, those monsters, finally killed a person that she loved like brother. That was really no different than Emily herself getting killed.....

Of course, from the point of view of Hendricks and others, that was nothing more than barking up the wrong tree. But, surely, even if they said□This isn't Emily's fault□, their words wouldn't reach the heart of Emily who was drowning in guilt.

That was why,

□Emily, I want you to lend us your strength.□

□Eh?□

Hendricks entreated to Emily.

□It's only Emily who can stop Berserk. There is no doubt that we will be unable to make the antidote. It's only you who

grasped the whole thing and possess the insight that we won't even be able to imagine, that can stop the monster that we created.

“Senpai.....”

“Please, Emily. Save us, save everyone. Lend us, your power.”

There was no time for them to stop still. There wasn't any time to drown in guilt. Exert Emily Grant's whole strength. Hendricks who pleaded like that made Emily to notice his true intention.

Emily's almond-shaped eyes sharpened even more fiercely. She wiped her eyes with the sleeve of her kinked lab coat and slapped her own cheeks so hard that it made sound. And then, she gave a sharp nod at Hendricks.

Hendricks looked fondly at Emily's gaze and he nodded back, and then he suggested that they took a look at their own laboratory. He was thinking of the possibility that perhaps Dennis and others or agent Warren returned there.

Of course, there was the possibility that the berserker before this was still there. Therefore, they had to stay on guard so they could evacuate back into elevator anytime.

However, when they peeked out of elevator, what entered their eyes was—a disastrous sight.

“Sa, m?”

“A, e, a.....this is, lies, right?”

There was the figure of Sam who had been reduced into a berserker, and then the figure of Jessica who was dangled in

midair with her neck broken. And then, there was the figure of Dennis soaked in sea of blood at the side, and the figure of Rod sitting down while leaning on the wall. —It was really, a nightmare.

Right after that, the elevator that had its button kept being pushed by Emily so they could escape anytime was suddenly assaulted by impact. *zuhin-* Something fell on the elevator from above. The elevator was making unpleasant sound while sinking below.

At the same time, a roar and an impact struck the elevator's ceiling. The elevator was dented with each roar. It was clear that a berserker was invading from above the ceiling.

□-, Emily! Teacher! Get out quickly!□

Hendricks and Lizzie stretched their hand to Emily and Professor Down in panic. The elevator entrance had turned narrow like a guillotine. Emily and Professor Down crawled out from there desperately.

The next moment, the elevator finally surpassed its endurance limit and fell below with a screech. The berserker that was on its ceiling reached out its hand and grasped the edge of the elevator entrance that was still opened.

Emily and others moved away from the entrance in panic, but there was no way that much commotion wouldn't attract the attention of the berserker that was Sam once.

Sam threw away Jessica like a doll and raised a groan. And then, a berserker crept up from the elevator.

In this hopelessly deathly situation, a gunshot suddenly rang.

□DAMN ITTTTTTTTTT-□

The one who yelled in frenzy like that while pulling trigger toward Sam——was Rod. He kept leaning on the wall while still sitting down, perhaps he had no strength to stand up anymore, yet he was still pulling the trigger of the gun that he likely borrowed from a dead agent.

It seemed that Sam whose attention was taken by Emily and others got taken unaware by this surprise attack. The moment he was about to turn toward Rod, one of the fired bullets pierced the side of his head and he fell down. His body was smoking white while rapidly withering.

Hendricks and others had no word toward the figure of their important companion that was so miserable it was painful to look at, and then, Rod who was the one that did that was crying while muttering□Damn it.....□one more time.

□Rod-oniichan!□

□-, Rod!□

Emily rushed ahead. She dashed toward Rod who was dropping the handgun powerlessly. Hendricks and others were also sprinting to Rod's side in panic.

Midway, Hendricks took a look at the condition of the fallen Dennis but.....there was a single shot in his temple. He had already expired. And then, looking at Dennis figure that was smoking even though it was only a little, Hendricks guessed how Dennis was already infected.

□.....Den, nis, he did it, by himself. He got splashed, by Sam's blood....., midway here, he picked.....the gun..... that was why, he said, he don't want to become monster..... and he□

The gasping Rod was sending his gaze at Dennis with hollow look. It seemed that it was Dennis who dealt with himself. Dennis and Rod always quarreled when they met each other, they weren't compatible with each other at all, but even so, they were "buddy". Surely the feeling inside Rod's chest was something that couldn't be expressed by words at all.

□You idiot Dennis.When I go to the other side.....I'll yell at.....you again.I'm going, to beat you.....up□

□Enough already-, don't talk, Rod!□

□Rod-oniichan! Don't, please don't! You must not die!□

□Stupid Rod! Get a hold of yourself!□

Emily and others clung on Rod. 'Gofuh' Rod vomited out blood while making a wry smile. Shadow of death was emerging on his face. Looking at his caved-in chest and his stomach that looked discolored, it was clear that his internal organs had received fatal damage.

No matter how they looked, Rod, was already beyond help.

Surely even Rod himself understood that. His gaze was calm in acceptance while his trembling hand patted Emily's head.

□.....Sorry, yeah, Emily.This is, our fault.....because, we did.....something, unnecessary.....but, we want to do something.....really, sorry□

□No-. This isn't Rod-oniichan's fault! I, I-□

Rod's hand fell down limply.

—Youu, live on

Those were Rod's last words.

Emily and others were dumbfounded. Their companions who were like family, who were laughing with each other only just now, were gone already. That fact, that reality, they couldn't accept it.

But, reality wouldn't give any consideration to their feeling.

The berserker that crawled up from the elevator showed up. Its bloodshot eye glint captured Emily and others as its prey without any room for hesitation.

Hendricks stood up. And then, he slowly pulled out the handgun that Dennis's hand was still holding and he ascertained its magazine. Hendricks sent only his words to Emily and others without looking back.

□I'll lure away that guy somehow. During that time, you guys escape.□

Emily and Lizzie reflexively were going to shout just what was he talking about, but Hendricks didn't allow any objection.

□Go-. I'll meet up with you guys again for sure!□

Saying that, Hendricks charged at the berserker alone. Emily yelled□Senpai-□and she was going to rush out, but Professor Down pinioned her from behind. Emily struggled, but when she was yelled□Don't waste Hendricks's feeling here!□, strength left her.

□.....We are going!□

□Wha-, Lizzie-nee!?□

At the corridor ahead, Hendricks was shooting while he passed through the berserker's side with a slide. And then

he fired again to attract the berserker's attention. The berserker turned on its heel and determined Hendricks as its target. During that time, with the monster between them, Hendricks and Lizzie's gaze crossed each other.

That was enough.

Lizzie grasped Emily's hand and she turned around. Emily made an expression of unable to believe the action of Lizzie who should be harboring feeling for Hendricks, but she shut up when she saw the blood flowing from Lizzie's lips and her bitten lips.

Emily and others ran off with the figure of Hendricks running to the other side of the corridor behind them.

□Let's use the emergency stair. The first floor is dangerous, so let's use the plumbing pipe from second floor to go down.□

Lizzie wordlessly nodded at Professor Down's words and she pulled Emily's hand.

They opened the door to emergency stair and ran down toward the second floor. But, right now the research building was a berserker nest. And then, their developed sense of hearing could sense the prey's existence even across wall.

□GAAAAAAAAAH!!□

□KYAAAH□

□UWAH□

The door of the emergency stair was blown away together with a roar. The steel door that was flown together with its clasp became a brutal weapon, and in a stroke of bad luck, it

separated them from each other. Professor Down fell on his butt on the stair that connected to upper floor, while Lizzie and Emily fell on the stair landing because they embraced each other.

The eye glint of the berserker caught Professor Down.

□Do, don't come-□

Professor Down stood up with a yell and escaped by climbing up the stairs. Lizzie and Emily also stood up desperately, but because the steel door stood in their way and they couldn't pass through, they had no other choice but ran down the stairs.

The berserker seemed to choose the group with more prey. He sent a crushing blow to the direction of Lizzie and Emily.

□Emily-. Don't stop no matter what!□

□Lizzie-nee-□

The two somehow escaped from the range the fist could reach and immediately stood up again even though they were entangled with each other due to the impact. However, the berserker immediately caught up to them. It really looked unlikely that they would be able to escape until second floor.

Lizzie instantly made an expression that was filled with resolve. Emily who noticed that was caught by bad premonition. Lizzie pulled at Emily's hand and wasted no time to open the door right below them and ran through it. The berserker destroyed the steel door again and entered the floor to chase after Emily and Lizzie.

Lizzie who was pulling Emily's hand continued to run without hesitation as though she had a destination in mind.

□Lizzie-nee!□

□It will be fine! I swear I'll protect you!□

Lizzie turned the corner several times to shake off the footsteps resounding behind them before she came to a stop in front of a certain door. And then, she desperately suppressed her fingers that were trembling from tension and fear while she entered the password into the electronic lock that was installed beside the door.

The door opened accompanied by small mechanical sound. Lizzie pushed in Emily inside. Emily who had no doubt that they would be hiding together inside turned pale seeing Lizzie didn't enter. She guessed what Lizzie's intention was.

Toward such Emily, Lizzie showed her a gentle smile even with a stiff face while opening her mouth in persuasion.

□Emily, hide here. You absolutely mustn't go out.□

□Wa, wait, Lizzie-nee-. We can——□

□The door here is sturdier than other room, that's why it won't be broken down that easily. The security bureau people should arrive soon, that's why do your best to endure until that time.□

□If that's the case then Lizzie-nee too, quickly get in!□

□I'm sorry, that guy has to be lured away. There is no more place to escape inside here, so in the worst case that guy noticed then that will be the end. That's why, okay?□

□Who cares about that! It doesn't matter, just come in quickly!□

Emily desperately pulled at Lizzie's hand, but Lizzie smiled sweetly and pushed her down on her butt.

□It's okay. I'll find that idiot Rick and teacher, and we will return here together. So believe in your big sis.□

□Lizzie-nee-□

Emily reached out her hand. But the steel door obstructed that. Emily's small fist desperately punched on the steel door, but of course it didn't even twitch. Yet even while losing composure, Emily recalled in a flash that the door could be opened from inside too and her hand reached out to the door button but,

□Emily-!□

□-□

Lizzie's angry voice resounded from behind her. Emily's body spontaneously stiffened. This time a gentle voice reached her.

□No matter what happen, never give up. If it's Emily, then it absolutely will be fine, I, we all believe that.□

□Lizzie-nee.....□

Those words of her big sister that came from across the steel door made Emily's hand that was reaching to the button to fall powerlessly. Hot tears were falling along her cheeks without end.

□I love you, Emily. Don't forget that. No matter what happened, you are the little sister, that we are proud of.□

□Lizzie-nee-□

A roar reverberated. Lizzie's presence was getting farther away. A beat later, heavy footsteps were passing through in front of the door.

Emily backed off unsteadily before she powerlessly sank down on the floor helplessly. And then, she hugged her knees and buried her face onto it, both her hands held her head and she turned small.

Emily waited, obeying the command of her beloved big sister.

However, what returned was only the completely transformed Hendricks.

Emily's important people, in the end, not a single person of them came back.

Part 3

(This is baadd..... Heavy. This is just awfully heavy. Honestly, that's too heavy that I want to run away right now.....)

After she finished talking of the long recollection, Emily hugged her knees once more, buried her face, and turned small. Kousuke was sighing inside his heart while looking at such Emily. Honestly speaking, he couldn't help but felt sympathy with Emily's circumstance. Emily had even forgotten that she wasn't wearing anything down there that it felt like her secret place down there could be visible with her current sitting position, but right now Kousuke was in the middle of much regret of hearing the story that he didn't even have the composure to be aware of such thing.

□When we arrived, there is almost no survivor anymore inside the research building. We met up with Kimberly who ran out of bullet and went into hiding, then after we shared information, we split up to search for Doctor Grant, I managed to secure her but.....□

□That handsome bastard betrayed you then.□

□Yes. It was when we met up with our comrades and gathered in the first floor to escape. We were surrounded by berserkers and put up a fight, and when we somehow managed to secure an escape route, we were gunned down by Kimberly and an armed group from somewhere that had replaced the bodyguard agents.□

Because of the attack of that time, the agents who came for the pick-up were annihilated. Vanessa was able to survive even while getting wounded on her side was because she was immediately covered by Hughes. But in exchange he was also lethally wounded, even so he fought hard in order to let Vanessa and Emily escaped.

As the result, due to Hughes's last stand, Vanessa and Emily managed to escape.

There, Kousuke spoke his doubt.

□Hm? After that, you didn't contact the security bureau right away?□

Kousuke witnessed the car chase at the afternoon. From the story that he heard, the incident occurred at midnight. That meant that Vanessa and Emily were fighting alone for more than half a day.

□My smartphone that can connect with the private line was broken when we were ambushed..... Doctor Grant's phone also seemed to break somewhere in the middle of our escape.□

□You can just use public phone right?□

□That's true. I also tried to do that. However, that.....it's embarrassing but, after I performed first aid on my wound, I fainted.□

It appeared that Vanessa ran out of strength because she even performed the bullet extraction inside the car. After that Emily nursed Vanessa for the whole night.

And then, the next morning, Vanessa who woke up from her fainting finally made contact with the headquarters, but

right after, perhaps they were detected or something, they were assaulted by Kimberly and his group then.

After that, they were chased around relentless without any time to meet up with the people from headquarters, also the meeting site that was decided beforehand was also known by Kimberly so it couldn't be used, and that was why they were doing nothing but running away.

□I see.Then, what are you going to do from here? The security bureau seems to be suspicious too right?□

□That's right. However, it's also the fact that we won't be able to do anything by ourselves. It's only in the movie when individual can oppose an organization as their opponent.We have to determine, the true intention of the chief.□

In this situation, even though the security bureau seemed suspicious, but it was unthinkable that the whole place was pitch black. If it was just as Kimberly insinuated, that the security bureau was pulling the string of the attack, then Chief Magdanese was exceedingly close with "black". In that case, then Vanessa would ask for help from bureau member listed up inside her head that seem to be trustable, and also from other places like intelligence department and so on.

But if it was the opposite, that Chief Magdanese was "white", they would be able to get rescue from the most direct place.

In any case, to investigate about the organization behind Kimberly and further to oppose them, Vanessa would need to obtain the power of organization too. Because of that, no matter what it was essential to clearly determine the position of Chief Magdanese, whether she was white or black.

□First, it's important to classify which is the enemy and which is ally. I plan to move with that direction, so during that time I want Mr. K to protect Doctor Grant.□

Kousuke scratched his cheek with a troubled look after listening to Vanessa's plan. And then, he was about to open his mouth to say something, however, his voice that was going to sing an objection was interrupted.

□I'm not looking for protection or anything.□

□Doctor Grant?□

Vanessa turned her gaze in surprise. There, Emily who turned small was slowly lifting up her face and looked back. The dark flame dwelling inside those eyes, which contradicted her frail atmosphere before this caused Vanessa to gulp unconsciously.

□That drug, □Berserk□, it's something that mustn't exist in this world. It has to be erased from this world, all of it without leaving anything behind. I who created it, have to erase it no matter what.□

□That's.....□

□I absolutely don't want to be just protected, only waiting for the situation to end without understanding anything. That's why, Vanessa. Please, bring me along. I want to ascertain with my own eyes, who was the one that spread around □Berserk□, and, what will happen from now on.□

□.....My apologies but, Doctor Grant. You are——□

□A burden? I don't think so. □Berserk□is a defective merchandise that was created by chance. Whether it's to improve it or making its antidote, those are out of the

question without me. In other words, I am the best shield you can ask.□

Vanessa was greatly troubled with Emily's point. Indeed, for the people who were seeking for Emily's knowledge and ability, Emily's life was something they had to absolutely protect. To put it another way, if she turned Emily into shield then they wouldn't be able to pull the trigger.

If Vanessa said that she would search information against an organization in this isolated situation, then indeed it could be said to be a useful card. However, even though she was fighting to protect Emily by nature, but if she made her into something like a shield than that would mean putting the cart before the horse.

Besides, there was nothing absolute in a battlefield, on top of that an "accident" could possibly happen. And even if those didn't happen, the enemy had no reason to not make the decision "it's fine if she is at least alive".

For Vanessa, taking around Emily together with her from here on was something that couldn't be permitted. However, even with all those reasons, she was unable to simply reject and left her was surely because of Emily's eyes. If she forced her to stay behind, then she would run off by herself. That risk was something possible with the current Emily.

How should she persuade her.....Vanessa was at a loss, but before Vanessa could say something, the one who spoke to Emily who said rash things, was Kousuke who was being reserved.

□Look here.....as I thought, something like this, I think it's better if we leave it to the pro you know? Emily is a researcher right? A researcher has their own battlefield that can only be fought by researcher isn't it? If Vanessa-san

found ally and they prepared a place for you to research
[Berserk], then Emily's battle would be from there on, isn't
that right?

For Kousuke, it would be the best for him if Vanessa could
quickly found ally organization that could give heavy
protection to Emily. Because at that point of time Kousuke
would become unnecessary and he could leave. Thinking so,
Kousuke tried to back up Vanessa, but

[No.]

His opinion was rejected with one word. Emily didn't even
meet his gaze.

[Saying no like that, are you a child throwing tantrum huh.
You understand right? You said you are going to become
shield or whatever, but you are virtually still a burden. There
is no way Vanessa-san will be able to use Emily as shield.
That's why, here you shou——]

[If I said no then no-!]

Hearing Kousuke's words, this time Emily's almond-shaped
eyes glared fiercely while saying a rejection that sounded
completely childish. As expected Kousuke was irritated
hearing Emily's words that weren't even an objection but
simply selfishness.

[Seriously, this isn't the time to throw tantrum. How about
you understand your own position a bit more? You are
genius right? Then at least understand that much.]

[.....]

Kousuke's obviously pathetic atmosphere until now faded,
and in place he replied with expression and tone that were

visibly irritated. Emily trembled in shock from that. However, the flame dwelling in her eyes didn't die down for even a bit. She couldn't say any rebuttal and tears were oozing out slightly from her eyes, but even so she still radiated rebellion to Kousuke.

Kousuke continued his words while holding down his irritated feeling at the unreasonable Emily.

□Look here.....if you keep being obstinate, and Vanessa-san get hurt again because of that——□

□What's wrong with being obstinate huh!□

Emily interrupted Kousuke's words and exploded.□OoU□
Kousuke raised a strange voice in shock. Emily approached Kousuke who was like that and gripped his collar.

□I know already! It's better for Vanessa-san to move by herself! That I won't be useful if I'm with her! I know that! But, I still cannot help it! Because, because-□

□Ca, calm do——□

Kousuke caught Emily's shoulders to try to calm her down, but right after that, he tasted an impact that shot through his heart from the words that Emily yelled next.

□Everyone, they died!□

□-□

Emily who was shedding tears with her emotion exploding kept yelling without noticing Kousuke's condition.

□Everyone, everyone died there! In order to let me get away! In order to let me stay alive! Everyone died! They

died there.....□

——I told you they died! Captain Meld and Alan-san and the others, all of them! All the knights that entered the labyrinth died! In order to let me get away! Because of my fault! They died! They all died there!

The wailing that he once raised was resurrected in his head.

□I was entrusted. Everyone, they entrusted me with their hope. I, I cannot stop. Or else, or else everyone.....□

He was entrusted. At that time, Kousuke was entrusted with his comrade's hope. The knights, they entrusted their hope to Kousuke. They kept him alive and let him escape, just him——

As the result, he could save his friends but, Emily.....

Kousuke stared at Emily. She was hanging her head down, clinging on Kousuke while sobbing. At the side, Vanessa's hand reached out to stop Emily, but she saw Kousuke's face and her breath got caught unconsciously. Vanessa didn't understand how to describe it, it was a mysteriously transparent expression.

Kousuke gently caressed Emily's head. And then, to the surprised Emily, he spoke with a voice that was calm, and yet it mysteriously penetrated until deep in her heart.

□I'll become your strength.□

□.....Eh?□

Emily slowly lifted up her disheveled face. Kousuke scooped the tear trickling on her cheek with his finger, and then he smiled with a troubled look.

□I'll become your strength. I'm not Mr. K though. But, surely, it will turn out well.□

□Mis, ter K——□

□It's Kousuke. Emily. I'm Kousuke.□

The tear on her cheek was gently wiped. It was like, the warmth of her brothers and sisters.

Emily was half in a daze while she repeated Kousuke's name □Kou, suke?□just like how she heard it.

Even Vanessa at the side was wide-eyed. Kousuke showed a grin that was full of confidence and declared.

□It will be okay, Emily. After all I'm——□

——The right-hand man of the demon king-sama yeah?

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

The next update is planned at 6 P.M Saturday too.

Just a Second-Hand Telling From a Friend

Part 1

The time was at morning where the sun still hadn't ascent to the peak. The cool and clear cold air felt pleasant on the skin, and the east sky that was starting to grow light was gently to eyes. The sound of human activity began to be audible from the townscape of old alley that was made from brickwork here and there.

Although, as expected there was almost nobody walking outside. The only living thing outside was only a doggy with its head plunging into a fastfood bag thrown nearby the garbage box that looked like old drum can.

That doggy suddenly lifted up its head with a snap. The paper bag attached on its snout looked like a mask that covered its head. The doggy hurriedly shook its head left and right to shake off the paper bag.

Right after that, the thing that made the doggy reacted—a single car stopped right beside the dog with intense breaking. It made *kikit-* sound from its break which caused the doggy to twitch and ran away in full speed.

□Doctor Grant, Mr. K. This way.□

The one who got down from the driving seat was Vanessa. Her movement had sharpness in it that was unthinkable coming from a person who had gunshot in her side even if it had been given first-aid already. Actually, a medicine from another world was smeared on her gauze which displayed quite the restorative strength.....but the person herself

didn't know that. She was only thinking that "Oh my, me. I am more sturdy than I thought.....", like so.

".....Heey, is that stubbornness or something? Or else is that harassment to me? How many times I need to tell you that I'm not Mr. K until you get it?"

Kousuke was piercing Vanessa with an extraordinarily reproachful gaze while getting down from the backseat. Mysteriously, no matter how much he appealed that 'I'm not that up-and-coming assassin-san you know!', Vanessa still addressed Kousuke as Mr. K.

In her own way, Vanessa also thought "By any chance, this is seriously the wrong person?" just a smidgen but.....last night, from Kousuke's behavior that said "I'll become your strength", she then changed her mind that 'just as I thought he is really Mr. K'. Surely he was simply hating that nickname Mr. K, but there was no doubt that he was a virtuoso hitman, she thought.

And so, she unconsciously called him Mr. K. But unexpectedly words that backed-up Kousuke against Vanessa who was like that were spoken out.

"That's right, Vanessa. After all Mr. K had finally taught us his name. Let's properly call him, Ko, Ko Ko, Kousuke okay."

Emily who was also at the back seat with Kousuke got down, but for some reason she looked shy. She advised Vanessa to call Kousuke with his name while stuttering. Emily also had the same thinking like Vanessa, that Kousuke wasn't an average civilian. She thought that Kousuke had taught them his name that was concealed by the initial. That was why, she thought they should call him with his name after he had finally told them.

Emily had strangely taken distance from Kousuke since last night. Kousuke himself was thinking□.....Now I've really done it. Just what is right-hand man of demon king. She must be creeped out. That was just nonsense there. The Lord inside me, it damned peeked out its face randomly like that.....□, he believed that Emily was surely thinking him creepy and put some distance between them, so he was a bit shocked with this cover fire of Emily and he smiled widely in joy.

Seeing that, Emily behaved in a strange way. Her gaze was intensely wandering to empty air. And then, perhaps something in her heart had reached its limit, her cheeks reddened and her almond-shaped eyes glared fiercely while she threatened□Don't look here!□. Her hairs stood on end *fusha—* as though she was the great haughty cat itself. Her trademark side ponytail turned unruly.

Kousuke felt down. On top of having a younger girl putting distance between their heart (Kousuke was thinking so), he was also told□Wait, can the chuuni bastard not look at me like that? It's seriously gross!□(That was how Kousuke heard it). The mini Kousuke inside his heart was already going 'orz'. (TN: orz = Watch the shape, it's like someone on all fours.)

□Excuse me, our situation is comparatively urgent here, so if you two can put off your youth's springtime for later.....□

□The, there is no youth's springtime here! What are you saying!□

Vanessa was sending a lukewarm gaze at Emily even while she scratched on her cheek looking troubled. The redness of Emily's face turned deeper. Her *fusha—* ratio also rose up. She might let fly her cat punch before long like this.

As though to say that she couldn't associate more than this with the other two, Emily flapped her white lab coat that she still didn't take off even now and entered the alley with loud and fast steps.

□Doctor Grant.□

□What now!□

□It's not that way, but the next alley.□

□.....□

Emily came to a stop still. And then she backed up without turning around before starting to walk with loud stomps to the left while she went red until her ears.

□Doctor Grant!□

□What now!□

□Not the left one, it's the right alley.□

□.....□

A high speed turn. Her lab coat stylishly flapped! However, the shame of the person was already at max.

Vanessa and Kousuke looked at each other's face and smiled wryly at each other before following behind Emily.

By the way, this was one of Vanessa's personal hideouts, so Emily wasn't familiar with the area. And so, Emily who was leading in the front set off into unknown place until three times after that.

In the end, when she finally noticed that she could just follow behind Vanessa, Emily had become a white ghost with

her lab coat covering her whole body from the head.It appeared that lab coat had this kind of use too.

Part 2

The wooden door opened slowly while making small sound *kii*. Vanessa's face peeked inside fully on guard from there. There was no sign of anyone inside the room.

Kousuke and Emily also entered into the room by Vanessa's urging. Inside the room, there were signs of someone living there quite much for a hideout. There was a table and a leather sofa that looked like they were often used, magazines were scattered randomly on the table.

□It seems my friend is away. Well, she is often going outside so perhaps this is natural.□

Vanessa who had just taken a quick look at the other rooms and bathroom returned to the living room while saying that. It appeared this hideout hadn't been discovered by the enemy.

□This is the room of Vanessa's friend? Isn't this a personal hideout that you created by tacit misunderstanding from security bureau?□

Emily tilted her head while recalling the explanation that she was give before this. Vanessa had lost her weapon. She was unarmed. After this she would need to do various things like contacting the headquarters and probed about the true intention of Chief Magdanese, but regardless of what she would do, first thing first she needed to procure weapon.

For that, they made their way to a hideout that Vanessa didn't report to even the bureau which she prepared based on the tacit understanding among the security bureau's staff.

□I am sharing this with my friend. She is a freelancer cameraman that is bustling about everywhere around the clock. We are sharing the duty for maintaining the room, so it works just right that both of us are similarly out often.□

□H~m□

While Emily nodded in understanding, Kousuke was taking a magazine on the table with his expression strangely convulsing.

□.....I see. So the source of the prejudiced knowledge of Vanessa-san about Japan, is that friend is it.□

The magazine in Kousuke's hand who was whispering something like that. If it was a magazine that young woman read, then normally it would be something like fashion magazine. However, this magazine had this name written along with a picture of a girl that had colorful hair.

——Anim○e (TN: Animage)

When his gaze dropped further, every single one of the scattered magazines were things that were fully loaded with information of Japanese anime and manga he was familiar with. Inside the room there were several large bookshelves that were decorated with pretty cloth cover, but Kousuke obeyed his hunch and checked one of them.

As he expected, the content was packed full with Japanese comic and light novel and anime DVD.

□What do you think, Mr. K. My friend's collection is quite something right? By the way, the three bookshelves over there are my collection.□

□What are you hiding in your hideout.....□

Emily passed with small run in front of the exasperated Kousuke and brushed open the cover of Vanessa's collection shelves. And then while saying□Hee, so this is Japan's subculture.....□, she took a Japanese manga into her hand with deep interest. It seemed this was her first time seeing something like that.

However, it was an excessively thin book.

□Hinyaah. What's this!?!□

Emily screamed, her face was bright red and she held away the book as far as possible from her face. The book's front cover, should it be said that it was immodest, or that it actually easily surpassed such expression, anyway the picture's skin exposure rate was too high, and on top of that there was the illustration of a girl making outrageous posture drawn on it.

□Aa, Doctor Grant. Please don't handle it so roughly like that. That's a treasure you know.□

□Wh, who cares about that-, pervert Vanessa!□

□Why do you even have doujin huh.....□

Emily swung around the thin book with her hand stretched out with all her might while moaning□Uu—□, doing her best so that it wouldn't enter her sight, but she didn't show any sign of letting it go. It was unclear whether she was simply handling it more or less carefully because it was Vanessa's

collection, or perhaps *there was some reason* that made it hard for her to let go of it.....

From how she was sending glances at the front cover, surely it was because of the latter. When she noticed Kousuke's awkward gaze, Emily made excuse "Tha, that's not it! I, I'm not someone like that!" while returning the book in panic to the bookshelves.

"Doctor Grant. If you have an interest to it, then after we take care of this case, I will lend it to you, so please be patient for now."

"I'm not impatient or anything! I'm not a pervert! It's true okay? Kousuke, I'm really, really not like that okay?"

"Aa, yep."

Kousuke who didn't know how to react when a younger girl was pleading to him "I'm not a pervert! Believe it!" could only nodded vaguely.

Vanessa sent a glance at Emily who was desperately making excuse for some reason before she suddenly approached one of the bookshelves. And then, she sent brief glances at Kousuke. She looked like a child that was going to show the toy she took pride in to her parents while saying "Look! Look!".

Kousuke tilted his head while turning his gaze at that direction. After confirming that, Vanessa pulled at one book inside the bookshelves, a book titled "Chupacabra Encyclopedia".

Right after that, the bookshelves was sliding. It made a half-rotation, showed its backside and returned to its original position.

□Se, secret bookshelves?□

Emily also turned her gaze at the bookshelves when she heard Kousuke's whisper. And then, her jaw fell down. There, many firearms were lined up orderly.

□Fufu, surprised aren't you? But, still not yet. It's still not over with just this.□

The very short haired beauty wearing black suits was making a triumphant look. While Emily and Kousuke felt complicated irritation to that face, Vanessa walked toward a bed that was inside a room and this time she twisted the lamp shade of the lamp beside it.

Right after that, the back of the bed sprang up and exposed the firearms stored behind it.

□What do you think? All these hidden armories were made DIY(Do-It-Yourselfer). I spent most of my holidays for this. I threw away all of the summer and winter bonus pay to prepare this prided arrangement of mine. Don't you two feel something seeing this?□

□Holy cow..... Vanessa-san, you, are really something.□

It was settled with this. Inside Vanessa-san's heart, there was a burning soul similar with Kousuke! The "Lord" inside Kousuke suddenly made a nihilistic smile. It came out a bit to the surface at Kousuke's act and speech, which Vanessa nodded at, her face looked like she understood what he felt for some reason. Emily was getting creeped out at the two of them!

Vanessa quickly chose her equipment and stuffed them into her holster and rucksack when she suddenly noticed something.

□.....Come to think of it Mr. K. Are you okay with your gun? Like your bullets or the spare gun.....□

That question came because thinking back really carefully, until now Kousuke didn't show any kind of firearm even once. Far from that, Vanessa who was able to decide whether someone was bringing weapon or not just from looking at the clothes' surface couldn't sense any presence of arms from Kousuke at all no matter how hard she observed. She thought that he was hiding his weapon really skillfully but.....

□? No, I don't bring anything like gun though.□

□.....Mr. K. Didn't you say that you will become Dr. Grant's strength? Its necessary for us to grasp each other's equipment. It's troubling that you are hiding your capability.□

□No, no, I'm not hiding anything. I'm really not carrying anything like a gun here. Or rather, I told you already that I'm a student in Japan. Please listen to what people said seriously. I'm not an assassin, that's why I don't bring any gun!□

Mr. K was an assassin that would corner all his targets into death with one shot to the head and one shot to the heart no matter who they were..... Vanessa was making a complicated expression, and not just her but Emily too.

Vanessa wordlessly approached Kousuke and began to pat all over his body. It seemed that she was performing a body check to confirm that he really wasn't carrying gun. Kousuke felt flurried inside his heart with the body touch that came from a pretty onee-san. For some reason Emily was hiding her eyes with both her hands saying□A, a, you even touch

that kind of place!? while in a cliched act she was peeking from her finger gaps.

.....You are really not bringing anything.

That's why, I told you that already.

Vanessa took a step back while looking somewhat astonished. She made a difficult expression for some reason then she shook her head.

I understand. You must have some kind of circumstance. I won't pursue it any deeper.

Oi, you. What are you doing convincing yourself like that as though assuming that I'm usually carrying it. I'm telling you that I'm never carrying something like that.

However, thinking of from here on, you also cannot be unarmed like that. I don't know what you are usually using, but please carry mine if you don't mind something like this.

.....Like that it suddenly appear, this unnaturally natural disregard like I'm not here. I, know it. That on earth there is also an evil god like Ehito, and I caught his eyes when I was born.

Kousuke made a dry smile at Vanessa who was giving him recommendation Would you like Glock? Or would you like Beretta? Or else, would you like Desert Eagle? while he averted his gaze.

No, I don't need gun. It's meaningless even if I carry one. Firing them, well, I got experience before, but I couldn't hit anything at all with it. It's also dangerous. Seriously, that guy, just what kind of skill he got.

It went without saying just who was “that guy” referred to. Kousuke recalled the time when he asked to be allowed to shoot a gun half playing around and he shook his head from the bad memory. After all at that time he got his face struck by the gun due to recoil, then the bullet that should be flying forward miraculously ricocheted and pierced his own buttock, the used cartridge that flew out in piping hot state entered into his clothes, and then when he tried to fire again and pulled the trigger, the trigger couldn’t be pulled, but the moment he released his shooting stance to look for the cause, the gun discharged accidentally and it almost blew away his son on his crotch.....

If there was a god of gun, then there was no doubt that he hated Kousuke as though Kousuke had killed his parents. Even that demon king warned him “You, don’t carry a gun anymore.You are going to die, by self-explosion” with an expression that was a mix of fear and pity.

The confusion of Emily and Vanessa who didn’t know about that circumstance was increasingly getting deeper. An assassin that wasn’t carrying gun and made disgusted expression from the bottom of his heart when he saw a gun..... The words of Kousuke “I’m not Mr. K” raised its head high inside the two. However, at the same time, his confidence words “I’ll become your strength” and his accomplishment of enabling them to escape before this forcefully pressed down that raising head with a single push.

Perhaps in subconscious level they were simply wasn’t thinking that Kousuke wasn’t Mr. K. If Kousuke wasn’t Mr. K, then that meant that at that time, there didn’t appear anyone that could save Vanessa and Emily who were surrounded by Kimberly’s group, and that meant they didn’t obtain the cooperation of the real Mr. K.

No matter how skilled Vanessa was, but she was someone who was still in the realm of newcomer, on top of that she lost all her reliable allies because of other ally betrayal. And in this situation where the organization she should rely itself was suspicious, she was also chased after by an organization of unknown scale. If in this kind of time what she thought as a trump card was actually just a throwaway card, then there was no way she would want to recognize that even though she understood that being optimistic was taboo in this line of work.

Kousuke put aside the bewilderment of Vanessa and Emily who were like that and spoke indifferently.

□Well, it will be fine. No matter what happen, I'll manage somehow. Rather than that, let's get going if you are finished with the preparation. Emily's house is really far from here right?□

Emily and Vanessa looked at each other's face after that urging from Kousuke to depart. Their bafflement still hadn't disappeared, but seeing Kousuke who declared that he had no problem being unarmed even though he understood that their opponent was an armed group, they decided to postpone their question for the moment. Or rather, it could also be said that they had no choice other than betting that Kousuke was the real Mr. K.

They had talked with each other last night, and they concluded that first they would head toward Emily's parents first. Securing and sheltering Emily's parents who were her weak point was an indispensable matter that had to be prioritized first.

However, Emily's home was a long way from their current position. It would take more than half a day using car. They

would have to evade places with high possibility of being monitored like highway and so on. In that case, they would reach the destination around evening if they took taking rest into consideration even if they were taking their meal inside car.

□.....You're right. My equipment is in order. Let's depart.□

□Okay.But, before that tell me. Vanessa, why are you bringing comic along?□

Vanessa excitedly finished her preparation, and then she returned the lovely secret bookshelves and secret bed back to normal. While she was at it, she nonchalantly pulled out several volumes of comic from the bookshelves. One she put into her suits' inside pocket, and the other were stored into the rucksack. Seeing that, Emily asked with her eyes twitching.

Vanessa's expression went puzzled as though to say□Eh? You don't get it?□. Both Kousuke and Emily got plainly irritated.

□Even if you asked me why..... After this, we will challenge an extremely difficult situation. So to speak, it's like a soldier heading to the front line.□

□Well, perhaps it's something like that.....□

□Isn't that right? Then, it's normal to bring along comic right?□

□Why does it become like that!? I don't understand your thought process!□

Emily made a splendid retort at that incomprehensible logic. Seeing Emily like that, Vanessa made an expression that

irritated Emily, as though she was a teacher facing a dim-witted student, and then she explained carefully and thoroughly.

□Listen, Doctor Grant. In movie or film, have you seen a scene when a soldier head to battlefield inside car or helicopter, they will take out bible and pray?□

□Ri, right. I've seen something like that before.Wait a second, in other words, those comics.....□

□Yes. They are my bible.□

□Apologize to god! Apologize to the believer of Christianity!□

Emily howled. Grant family was also a believer more or less. And so, she couldn't help to make retort when someone talked as though bible and comic had same status.

Vanessa snorted□Fuh□at that retort mixed with protest from Emily and ignored it.□Why did you snort just now!?□Emily's cat eyes glared fiercely once more while she raised her voice, but Vanessa who was in perfect form left the room without breaking her attitude that seemed to say□The doctor is also still young huh□.

□.....Shura no ○, Gra○ler Ba○, and then Na○to, to treat them as bible like that. In a sense, perhaps this is also Japan's karma.□(TN: Shura no Mon, Grappler Baki, Naruto)

Emily rushed after Vanessa with her side tail swinging wildly while saying□Hey wait-□. Kousuke was getting a bit of faraway look when he saw the title the comics that Vanessa brought before he followed behind them.

Part 3

The sun went down to the west. By the time the sky was starting to be colored vibrantly with orange, the car Vanessa was driving was running through a road that was extending straight forward as though the car was gliding.

Inside the car, Emily and Kousuke was satisfying their stomach with burger and fried potato they purchased from a certain famous restaurant that they visited midway.

□.....Emily, what's the matter?□

Kousuke suddenly asked. Emily was eating her fried potato bit by bit like a hamster while her gaze was directed outside the window. She then turned her gaze at Kousuke.

□What do you mean?□

□No, it looks like you are getting faraway look there. You are tired?□

□Aa~, no. I'm fine. It's just, I'm really familiar, with this area. Seeing this, it feels that I really have come home. But, even though I had a lot of story to share when I went home before, but this time.....something like that.□

It seemed that when she compared the current situation with the time when she went home previously, it caused a deep and heavy emotion to stir up her heart. Just like how the orange color of setting sun aroused loneliness in people without reason, it seemed that Emily's heart was also

aroused with indescribable feeling by the scenery of her home town and the orange color of the burning sky.

Kousuke who knew about the gruesome circumstances Emily went through in these few days, hesitated about what to say back. He thought that he should say something, but he could only let his gaze wandered unable to find any good words. In this time, he became envious of a certain agitator who could spun words smoothly.

Emily made a faint smile at Kousuke who was in such a state. She then gulped up the drink in her hand in one go before she said one more time "I'm fine".

Vanessa who was watching through the rearview mirror at the exchange between the two at the backseat, opened her mouth tactfully, as though to be the replacement of Kousuke.

"Excuse me, Doctor Grant....."

"Geez. Vanessa too, don't worry about me. I told you I'm fine."

"No, I really cannot believe that. Doctor Grant. What is called limit, is something that will come faster than what we thought."

Vanessa's unexpectedly serious expression could be seen through the rearview mirror. Emily's words unconsciously got caught in her throat. Kousuke was thinking "As expected from an agent of the security bureau. She also know various things about how to care to a person who is dragged into a case" while sending her admiring gaze——

"Is your urinary bladder, really okay?"

□What kind of thing you are worrying about there!?!□

Of course, it was a worry about the dignity of the peeing girl Emily-chan.

□At the restaurant just now, and also at the gasoline station before that, I noticed that Doctor Grant didn't go to toilet. And yet, you were drinking two large size coke and coffee. I'm extremely worried whether you will get more wound like this.□

□Tha, tha tha tha, that's-□

□However, I cannot believe that Doctor Grant who has already done a severe failure for twice already will be so easy-goingly take an optimistic action like this. Doctor Grant.....□

□Wha, whattt□

Emily was already turning small into half her original size while her wariness and shame were in full display. Vanessa's eyes shined glaringly through the rearview mirror at such Emily.

□By any chance, were you awakened?□

□Wha, what does that mean?□

The pure Emily-chan couldn't grasp the meaning of that question. Of course the young man beside her grasped the meaning. Vanessa asked with determination.

□To the pleasure of urination.□

□ARE YOU IDIOTTT———!! There is no way I'm awakened to something like that!! Do you want to make me into

pervert!?

World Unknown to Emily Part 2. There was no way anyone would feel good from wetting their pant in public! If there was anyone like that, then that person was a pervert without doubt!

Of course, there was no way Emily had awakened to overly special pleasure like that. And so, Emily turned at Kousuke with a fretful expression and pleaded "That's wrong! That's completely wrong! I'm not that kind of pervert! Believe me, Kousuke-".

"Ca, calm down. It, it's not like I'm thinking that you are a pervert or anything."

"Really? Really, really? Kousuke is——"

Emily was about to say something. However, carrying out a beautiful intercept at that timing was how Vanessa Paradis roll.

"So Doctor Grant isn't awakened to that.....it's unfortunate for Mr. K isn't it?"

"There ain't no way that's true! Don't make me into a pervert so naturally like that!"

"Ko, Ko Ko, Kousuke!? Yo, you are aiming for my "that"? You are happier if I'm a pervert!? That.....that's troubling for me!"

"There is no way that's true! Why are you feeling a bit troubled like that!? What do you mean troubling!? You need to deny strongly there at all cost!"

Chaos maker Vanessa. She displayed that ability of hers without sparing any effort, driving Kousuke and Emily into the crucible of bewilderment!

□Fumu. Great difficulty is waiting ahead for us. It's better to be energetic like this. Both of you are full with fighting spirit there.□

□You, just shut up already!!□

□You, shut up already!!□

The retort of Kousuke and Emily burst out in harmony. Vanessa made an expression that seemed to say □Incomprehensible□by herself.

Giving up on Vanessa who was scattering word bombs so naturally like that, Emily was making justification desperately at Kousuke, while Kousuke was desperately soothing down Emily. During that time the scenery of the surrounding was starting to change entirely.

They entered into the town. There was high construction, but most buildings were giving off retro atmosphere.

□Vanessa. Follow this path to go across the town center and head to the north. A river will come into view after some time. There is also a restaurant that makes delicious pie nearby there. You will understand right away because they have cute signboard.□

□Roger. This is the first time I come here but.....this is quite the beautiful townscape.□

There was chic building with brick color, and there was also glass building. But, those two types of building didn't mutually harm the scenery. It was as though the new thing

and the old thing accepted each other, giving anyone who watched a gentle impression.

In this downtown at the time where the sun was mostly sinking, the local people had calm expression. They were strolling with relaxed pace on the stone paving while holding bag that was stuffed with food. The sight had a comfortable impression where they could slowly feel the flow of time.

And that impression became even more striking when they left the town center and entered the suburb. There was more greenery, houses in the same color and same style lined up in order, forming similar shape of shadow. Somehow, it felt like even the light of sunset also became gentle.

Vanessa ran the car following Emily's direction. In contrast with Emily who was somewhat restless with this long time homecoming, Kousuke was tensing his body in moderation. Of course, he was considering the possibility of an ambush by other force waiting for them.

But, in contrast with his expectation, he couldn't find anything like black car or the like parking nearby. They could see children noisily playing with lot of energy, and the figures of fathers, mothers urging them to return home soon with wry smile. There wasn't any sign of conflict, the area really looked peaceful.

□Ah, over there. That house with white van parked! The light is on. It looks like father and others are home.□

Emily leaked out a relieved sigh. The white van was the car Emily's father, Carl owned. It was a car that was bought as replacement a few years ago so that the grandmother, Syla who was using wheelchair could also ride car. They still hadn't finished paying the loan for this car. There was also a

blue light motor vehicle parked beside it. That was the car of the mother Sophie.

Vanessa stopped the car in front of the house. Emily was going to rush out right away, but Vanessa halted her back. And then, Vanessa observed the surrounding's situation carefully from inside the car while sliding out her gun from her breast pocket.

□Let's be careful. I'll stress this to you Doctor Grant, please don't separate from me no matter what.□

□Ye, yes. I understand.□

Vanessa's hand reached the engine key and she glanced at Kousuke. Kousuke's usual light atmosphere disappeared and he looked around with serious gaze, but before long his expression turned perplexed.

□Mr. K. What's the matter? Do you see any sign of something wrong?□

□.....No, there is nothing wrong. There is none but..... that's exactly why it feels wrong.□

□? What do you mean by that?□

Kousuke didn't answer right away at Vanessa's question. He stared for a while at the direction of the house. Emily's expression was tinged with shadow of anxiety seeing Kousuke who didn't seem normal. Endo shook his head and then he spoke with reservation in consideration of Emily.

□.....Inside the house, there is no sign of people.□

□Eh?□

Emily tilted her head. Her parents' cars were parked, the lighting inside the house was also turned on. Those were the proof that the family was home. Despite so, there wasn't anyone inside. A bad premonition bloated up inside her heart.

On the other hand, Vanessa raised one of her eyebrows and her expression turned dubious. The "sign" that Vanessa mentioned before was something like any traces of fighting, or if there anyone peeking at them from the cover of building somewhere, or parking cars that looked out of place with this neighborhood, she meant about "human trace" that was visible to eye like that.

Just how did he know about inside the house that was out of sight.....

□Anyway, we cannot do anything from here. Let's try to enter. Perhaps they are only going outside a bit at the neighborhood.□

□Ri, right. Surely, it's like that.□

Kousuke noticed the anxious expression of Emily and so he urged them to quickly act. And then, he hurriedly got out of the car to move in the lead. Vanessa buried her doubt inside her chest from that action of Kousuke.

They crossed the lawn that was well maintained, went up the slope that was still looking like new from the renovation so that it could be passed through using wheelchair, and they arrived in front of the entrance.

Emily sounded the chime. And then she called□Father! Mother! Grandma! This is Emily! You there?□. However, as though to prove the correctness of Kousuke's words, there wasn't any reply coming from inside the house.

Emily took out a key of the house from her pouch, thinking that the door was surely locked if there wasn't anyone home. And then, she put in the key and was about to open the door.....

□E, eh?□

The door wasn't locked right from the start. Even though this was a quiet neighborhood, it was impossible for the whole family to be out leaving the home not locked. Emily's cheeks spasmed.

□Father! Mother! This is me! You aren't here!? Grandma! Where are you!?□

□Doctor Grant! Calm down!□

Emily opened the door loudly and stepped into the house without being unable to contain herself. Vanessa hurriedly stopped Emily who was like that.

However, Vanessa's warning didn't enter Emily's ears. Her heart that was thinking of her family was in disarray from the abnormal condition of the house. She desperately supported her heart that felt like it would be crushed under unease and terror while running around the house. She did that while calling at her family. She wanted to say her usual "I'm home". She wanted to hear "Welcome home".

However, whether it was in the bright living room, whether it was in the kitchen where her mother was usually standing wearing her apron, whether in the bathroom, or in the second floor's bedroom, or even in Emily's room, there wasn't anyone at all.

□It, it must be a mistake. Everyone, they must be going out for a bit right now. Tha, that's right. Surely, they are going to

Mr. McBurney's place, or at Aunt Hannah's place.

Emily.

Wait, okay. I'll call them back right away. And then, I'll properly introduce Vanessa and Kousuke to them——

Emily Grant!

-

Emily was about to go out of the house with a dry smile. But Kousuke called her name with a strong tone to stop her. Emily twitched and stood still before turning around with a stiff movement like a machine that hadn't been oiled.

Emily's eyes were catching sight of Kousuke taking up a table that was put on the living room's table. It was something that Emily overlooked before. But, that item was definitely not Grant family's property.

The reason was,

It's addressed, to me.....

Yes, the name of Vanessa Paradis was displayed on the screen of the tablet that was left in turned on state. There was no way Emily's family who didn't know about Vanessa's existence could prepare something like that.

In other words, this home was entered just a few hours ago, by someone other than Grant family members, someone who knew about Vanessa.....

Emily's face went white. Her body unconsciously staggered unsteadily. Kousuki swiftly supported her.

Urged by Kousuke's gaze, Vanessa touched the tablet.

Then, the table projected the image of a room somewhere. The room didn't look particularly desolate, it was a normal room. There was a sofa with cloth cover and a wooden table. There was no one there. It seemed that the tablet was just put in place to take video.

But, a beat later, the door at the corner of the camera opened. What entered from that door were a wheelchair, and an elderly woman sitting on it. And then, a man past forty that looked somewhat weak-willed was pushing on that wheelchair. A woman about the same age was holding on the hand of that man while looking around restlessly.

□-, grandma-, father-, mother-□

Emily's voice echoed like a shout.

The people in the video didn't look like they would be harmed. However, from their expression and gesture, it seemed that were taken away without really knowing anything. However, even so it still couldn't make Emily who was watching the video to have a peace of mind. Emily looked at her kidnapped family and powerlessly fell down.

And then, the video cut off and the display became pure black. And yet when they thought that was it, slowly an image of a clock that displayed the time of a few hours from now appeared, next, a map from aerial photograph was starting to get displayed. It was a show that was like the embodiment of the bad taste of the maker.

□That place.....looks like a warehouse district. They are screwing around.□

Vanessa spat out those words. Beside her, Emily was turning small by hugging her knees and head. She was getting

flashback of the chain of events that should be called as her trauma, where she lost her important people.

Perhaps, she would also lose her family.....that terror pushed aside the mission she was entrusted from her big brothers and sisters, and pushed her off into an abyss of terror and despair. She wanted to cry while begging, that she would listen to whatever they say, so please don't hurt my family.

A voice spoke to such Emily. That voice was soft yet harsh, warm yet sharp, that kind of voice.

□Emily, it will be fine. I don't know who did this, but there is no sign of struggle at your house, and there is no sign of violence on your family. Those guys want Emily's cooperation, so even though they can use your family to threaten you, they cannot hurt them that easily. That's because they understand, doing that will only push Emily past despair and into hostility.□

□Kousu, ke.□

Kousuke gently took the hand of Emily who was holding her head and softly pushed it down.

□Emily knows, the pain of being kept alive and let escape alone, and having something entrusted to you. If you stop here, then, surely the same thing will happen again.□

□No, I don't want that! Something like that, again-□

Emily raised her voice with her expression distorted in tears. Kousuke nodded□Right?□, then this time she pulled up her hand and made her stood.

□——“If there is a time where you must muster your all for once in your life, then now is exactly that time. Right now, in this time, blaze your soul”□

□Eh?□

□That’s a second-hand telling from a friend. But, in the past, when I was going through crushing defeat, I was able to stand up one more time from these words. I was able to risk my whole body and soul against bunches of monster as my opponent. Thanks to that, I can be here right now.□

□Kousuke.....□

Emily lost her words. That was just how “heavy” the words of Kousuke just now. They reverberated at the deepest depth of her weak heart profoundly.

Kousuke’s sharp eye glint that looked like a veteran warrior pierced straight through Emily.

□For Emily Grant, surely right now is exactly the time to blaze your soul. Brace your legs, grit your teeth, and then yell until your lung burst. “Who is going to do anything that you say! Don’t look down on me, you shitty bastard!” Like that.□

Those were passionate words like a boiling magma. Kousuke’s gleaming eyes were still piercing through Emily.

Therefore, there was only one reply Emily could make.

□Yeah. Yeah!□

Her soul that almost sunk into the swamp of despair, now, it blazed up once more. Emily strongly clasped back the hand of Kousuke that was clasping her hand.

□Kousuke, will also lend me your strength right?□

□Yeah. That was what I told you. I'll become your strength. Emily's family, let's save them for sure.□

Emily's eyes shined like a starry sky. The distance between the two was so close they could feel each other's breathing. It was as though that was the current distance between their heart——

□.....Should I read the mood and go outside? Or else, should I cut in saying "Don't forget me, pleaseeee"? That is the question.□

Vanessa muttered.

It went without saying how Emily leaped back from Kousuke like a nimble cat. And then, it also went without saying how she turned small from shame when she recalled how she was super close with a boy just now.

Part 4

In a time when the curtain of night had fallen completely, the darkness of night of a warehouse district at the outskirts of town was cut apart by a car's headlight. The car that was carefully advancing slow and quiet soon entered a spot that was surrounded from four directions by tall buildings.

The headlight illuminated a black car ahead.

Vanessa, Emily, and then Kousuke got down from the car with the headlight still turned on. Vanessa walked at the front with Kousuke and Emily following behind. Emily was clutching the sleeve of Kousuke's clothes tightly.

The black car at the opposite side turned on its headlight as though to oppose their side. A person got down from the black car in front of the vigilant Vanessa. The person's figure wasn't clear due to the backlight's backlighting, but Vanessa could make it out vaguely.

And then she thought. "Aa, so it's like that just as expected". At the same time, she also thought "It will still be better if it's Kimberly".

"Agent Paradis. You really have put us into much trouble. By all rights you should get a disciplinary discharge you know?"

That figure walked with clapping footsteps and showed themselves. It was a reality that if possible Vanessa wanted to deny.

Chief of national security bureau——Sharon Magdanese, it was this person who appeared.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

The next update is planned at 6 P.M Saturday too, desu.

Are You Prepared?

“How do you do, Doctor Grant. I am Sharon Magdanese, the person who is entrusted with the chief position of national security bureau. I will bring you into a safe protected place. Now, this way.”

Chief Magdanese prompted as though it was only natural that the situation went like that. In the middle of where the headlights of the two cars collided against each other in rivalry, the door of the black car for the backseat opened, from there the analyst Allen Parker and one other male agent climbed down.

Allen was spreading both his hands widely in an exaggerated posture, as though to say “Noow, you were scared right? Jump into my chest!”. Although for some reason the tip of his nose had a large gauze affixed there, he cut a really painful figure, or a stupid one.

“What do you mean “protection”! How dare you brazenly say that after kidnapping my family-”

The gesture that was too impudent caused Emily’s boiling point to be reached instantly. By all rights she should behave modestly in consideration of her family’s well-being, but right now she could depend on a reliable boy regarding that. Emily was able to honestly raise her voice in anger that she even surprised herself.

Chief Magdanese showed a really troubled bitter smile at Emily who was like that.

□Doctor Grant, it seems that you are under a really great misunderstanding. There is no way that we the people of security bureau will do anything like a kidnapping. We are only safeguarding everyone of the Grant family.□

Chief Magdanese talked with a tone and attitude as though she was admonishing a child that was throwing tantrum toward Emily who reflexively was going to object.

She meant to say, that they secured Grant family in order to protect them from the organization that annihilated Hughes and other agents of security bureau. The tablet that they left behind would only react to Vanessa's fingerprint, without her other people wouldn't be able to grasp the information in it. It was valid for them to be at the side of Grant family to make contact with Vanessa and Emily who cut off contact with the bureau. In the first place the bureau had approved the adoption of the protection program, so they had planned to move in order to take them into protection since the beginning.

□Bu, but.....□

Emily was at a loss for words after receiving the logical explanation. Vanessa took a step forward in place of such Emily.

□Chief, can I ask a question?□

□Refrain yourself agent Paradis. Your skill in protecting Doctor Grant by yourself is worthy of evaluation, but you are acting too arbitrarily on your own. Even though there was the attack of Warren and others, you should be able to get in contact with us more frequently.□

The knife-like words of Chief Magdanese cut off any argument with a single stroke. Her eye glint was also pressuring with several times the intensity compared to the usual. However, Vanessa who normally would falter in panic inside her heart against this instead took a further step forward and displayed her will with action.

□.....Do you understand, what are you doing right now?□

□Yes. I understand very well. Until my question is answered, I won't lower down this gun.□

Yes, Vanessa was aiming a gun at Chief Magdanese. Her gaze was sharp and showed that she wouldn't draw back even against Chief Magdanese. Her will of determination was emitted from her whole body. Allen whistled□Hyuu~□behind Chief Magdanese in admiration. The other agent also gulped down his saliva.

□This won't end with just disciplinary dismissal.□

□I'm resolved for that.□

Chief Magdanese stared fixedly at Vanessa for a while, and then she sighed a bit. It was unclear what kind of meaning that sigh had..... A complicated expression flashed briefly on Chief Magdanese's face while she urged Vanessa to continue with her gaze.

Vanessa opened her mouth with her gun still aimed vigilantly.

□Why are you, the chief herself is in this kind of place?□

□I lost five agents that I sent to execute the protection program, where one of them is that Hughes. And then, the culprit is also an agent from security bureau.....if this is

leaked outside, surely the media will be jumping wildly in joy. Furthermore, seeing how this is related to "Berserk Case" that greatly agitated the world then it will be all the more true. This case is already the biggest case even among the cases that security bureau is currently facing.

"Are you saying, that it's not strange for you yourself to come out?"

"Naturally. To say nothing of how we currently don't know how many people there are inside the bureau that are like Warren, or, more accurately those under the patronage of the organization behind Warren. The optimal solution is for me to move myself."

That explanation had consistency. There was double agent coming out from the bureau, on top of that there wasn't any time to clean up the organization right now, under such situations it could rather be said that it was a heroic decision for the top herself to take action accompanied by her few trusted subordinates.

Chief Magdanese sent Vanessa a cold gaze that said "Finished already?", however Vanessa didn't avert her gun even now.

"Then, one more question. What caused Berserk to be scattered in the research building was because of the dispute between Kimberly against someone to contest the possession of "Berserk". According to what Kimberly said, that someone was a skilled person in the level that even he couldn't match."

".....And?"

"An organization that possess an operator skilled enough to handle Kimberly whose combat ability is high even in

security bureau, it knows about the existence of "Berserk", and the operator came to steal it at that timing. And then, naturally that operator belong to an organization that is different from Kimberly's. There is only one organization that I know that fulfill all those conditions.

"Are you insinuating that I ordered for "Berserk"'s usurpation?"

"Am I wrong? Kimberly who attacked me hinted of that possibility."

Chief Magdanese shrugged with an expression that seemed to say how worthless this talk was.

"Don't tell me, that you are accepting the words of a betrayer seriously? If that's actually the case, then I can only doubt your qualification as an agent."

"Putting aside my qualification, there is no doubt that you chief is under suspicion of ordering the attack. Please answer. Was it you chief, the one that gave the order to steal "Berserk"?"

Vanessa's gaze pierced Chief Magdanese through her gun's aim. From the beginning Vanessa didn't think that she would receive honest answer. Therefore, with the determination to challenge her superior who should be regarded as a monster that had shouldered a bureau of Britain for many years until now, she concentrated to fathom the truth or lies.

But, as expected from the living legend who shouldered the national security, she wasn't someone common. Her face didn't change a single color even against Vanessa's sharp gaze and the fact that a gun muzzle was pointed at her. To the end she opened her mouth with naturalness, it even made anyone who heard her voice to feel her exasperation

as though she was facing a problem child that wasn't obedient.

□The answer, is No.□

□.....Is that, the truth?□

□Proving something that I haven't done is like proving that devil exist. If you are telling me to show the proof, then you have no more qualification to introduce yourself as the bureau agent. In the first place, why do you think that I have to the order to steal□Berserk□?□

Certainly, for the security bureau that didn't know how Emily and others planned to escape, it was a done deal that Emily and others would come to them. Even if the chief didn't intentionally order the stealing, the security bureau should be able to obtain everything, whether it was the □Berserk□, and the creator Emily, and also the antidote that Emily would create.

Therefore, it could be said that Chief Magdanese had no need to secure□Berserk□at that kind of timing.

The sources of Vanessa's doubt were all circumstantial evidences, her own instinct was also playing a large part in it. In the end, Vanessa who was self-aware of that could only attempt to thrust all those facts before the chief to try to shake her and then saw through the chief with her own eyes.

Vanessa couldn't say anything back. She focused her eyes to try to see through the truth, but Chief Magdanese wasn't shaken even for a bit. Vanessa was starting to doubt her own instinct.....could it be, that the first attack was really caused by a completely different organization?

□Are you finished with your question? Then, Vanessa Paradis, you will need to be restrained. Don't tell me, that you are thinking you will be able to continue in your post after pointing a gun like that to me?□

□That's.....□

Chief Magdanese raised one of her hand. The agent that was standing by beside the black car walked forward wordlessly. It appeared that he planned to restrain Vanessa.

Emily raised her voice seeing that.

□Wait! Vanessa did that only for my sake! Even until now, she has been protecting me all this time! That's why——□

However, that pleading was silenced forcefully by Chief Magdanese's eye glint.

□.....Doctor Grant. I wish you can stop with your childish selfishness too. Have you thought about how many sacrifices that appeared in this case you are involved with?□

□-, that's.....□

□You are a prodigy aren't you? Well, perhaps that is only limited to a specific field but.....I wish you can have the discernment to know right from wrong when it's actually necessary. I have the authority to have you restrained as the person who created□Berserk□and make you create the antidote. After all this is a situation that threaten the security of the country. But, in that case the protection of your family won't be included in it you know?□

□Such thing-. Didn't you say, that you are giving safeguarding them properly——□

□Yes, that's because of our good will.□

In other words she meant, that if Emily planned to complicate this case, then the security bureau wouldn't safeguard Grant family. And then, Chief Magdanese would restrain Emily with the authority possessed by national security bureau and forced her to research the antidote. Most likely, even if Emily took this matter to the court, it wouldn't go through. After all, this was a case that threatened the national security just like Chief Magdanese said. And Emily wasn't a third party in this, but she was literally the origin of the case.

Vanessa lowered down her gun. Her instinct was still ringing the alarm bell loudly in doubt of the security bureau. However, there wasn't any hole in Chief Magdanese's logic. Shea also couldn't detect any sign of lying. And then, even Emily was also feeling that she was only being outrageously selfish after hearing Chief Magdanese's words, her shoulders dropped. Her anger deflated when she was told that her family wasn't kidnapped or anything.

Chief Magdanese sighed as though to say how troublesome all of these were and she was about to turn around. In her place, the agent walked forward to restrain Vanessa and took Emily into custody.

There, a voice suddenly came into hearing.

□Don't you think it's better for you if you read up again what is the meaning of the words good will in dictionary?□

It was an aloof voice that didn't match the place. Even though the voice wasn't raised too loudly, but it resounded with extreme clarity.

Every single people in that place were taken aback without exception. Vanessa, and Emily who was emotionally standing beside her quickly turned around so fast their momentum could make whoosh sound.

□.....That reaction. That hurts you know. Why are you all looking like□WHO-!?□like that? Even Emily, even though you were holding on my sleeve until just now.□

Kousuke twisted his lips into shape of ‘□’ in dissatisfaction. Vanessa and Emily averted their gaze awkwardly. There was no way they could say that they had completely taken off their mind from Kousuke who was right behind them and they were plainly shocked just now. Although, Kousuke had completely seen through that already from their reaction.

□.....Who are you? It seemed that you were hiding inside the car?□

□No, no, I got down the car together with Emily there! When you were questioned by Vanessa-san, I was also standing normally behind her!□

□.....□

Chief Magdanese’s dubious expression! Kousuke was wounded further! But, he was used to it so he was fine!

□Answer the question.□

For now Chief Magdanese ignored Kousuke’s retort and repeated her question. Kousuke simply ignored her order and replied back with a really “nice smile (complete with vein on the forehead)”.

□It doesn’t matter who I am right? Rather than that, stop lining up pretentious statements and bring Emily’s family

here right away. No matter what you are going to talk about, everything will only start after you do that, right?□

□A foreigner boy like you, do you know who you are talking——□

A cold air that was incomparable with before struck from Chief Magdanese. But, even when Vanessa was reflexively sweating coldly from that, Kousuke only deflected it away in stride. So what if she was an authority of a country. Compared to the god apostles that were smeared with inhuman killing intent or the pressure of the demon king that was lacking in even a speck of mercy, this woman looked like a puppy making a menacing look.

□Something like the words of someone who was behaving worthlessly to fan up the talking partner's anxiety, no matter how consistent it sounded like, it cannot be trusted at all.□

□Fanning up anxiety?□

Chief Magdanese tilted her head as though she didn't know what he was talking about. Seeing that caused Kousuke to replace his expression into a cold one.

□Wasn't that what you did? What the hell with that message in the tablet. Don't tell me that it was just for keeping it a secret from other people. Stop it already with the stupid excuse. After all if you want to make contact with Vanessa-san then there are so many other ways to do that.□

They could simply leave behind a single cellphone that was filled with only one contact number to call at. There were many ways to make Vanessa to make contact with the bureau. Even if the one that made the contact wasn't Vanessa, then that could also be a chance to investigate just

who they were facing against. There wasn't any need to expressly leave behind the video recording of Emily's family in that way.

They were leaving that kind of message, they were taking that kind of method was in order to carve a message in Emily's subconscious. That if they felt like it, then they could do anything they liked to her family. That they were still safe *for now*. All those was to make it easier for the scale in Emily's heart to tilt to one way when she was approached with option that was putting on the face of protection. To instill into her what was the pecking order in their relationship.

Kousuke understood that, he understood just how much Emily was worrying for her family, he had already heard from her of her feeling that didn't want to lose her important people anymore for the second time.

Those were why, the voltage of Kousuke's anger was rising up without stopping.

□Even now you are acting like that. You dare putting on air as though everything is Emily's fault. The one that caused this case the first time, and then everything after that, all those, they are all the fault of the stupid idiots who got their eyes blinded by greed. The scramble for that thing that was created accidentally and even dragged in the important people of this child, those are the doing of some other stupid idiots somewhere. Don't get mistaken here. This child is the victim, not the perpetrator.□

Of course, she had the responsibility as the creator of □Berserk□. That was why Emily was here. She even had the option to hold her head down and turned small, and waited until everything was over like that. But, she resolved herself,

that there were things entrusted to her, that there were things that she had to do no matter what, and so she was standing here.

□She is still sixteen you know? And yet, she lost her important people that were like family to her, and she was also not allowed to meet her blood-related family.....and against a child like that, here you are fanning up her anxiety and guilt. I absolutely cannot trust someone like that.□

□.....□

Kousuke's aloof words were mixed with anger in them. It was unthinkable that this was the man that was forgotten even by Vanessa and Emily until just now. Something that couldn't be ignored by any means was oozing out from him. Chief Magdanese was staying quiet, however her body was facing straight toward Kousuke. That attitude of hers was the proof of the existence of that unidentified pressure.

Kousuke walked forward passing through Vanessa and Emily. And then, he stopped walking when he reached in the middle between Chief Magdanese and Vanessa, and then he asked without looking back.

□Hey, Vanessa-san, what is your instinct is telling you? Who cares about logic. Your heart that has been protecting Emily wholeheartedly until now in any kind of situation no matter what anyone said to you, what is it telling you now about that woman?□

Vanessa's gaze wandered around. However, even that was only for a moment. She responded with a cold expression, as though to cut off her hesitation.

□My instinct says, that she is black.□

□Isn't that right. I also think so.□

Kousuke's gaze shifted quietly from Chief Magdanese and he casted his gaze to behind her.

□In the first place, just what is the woman who was sending her shitty subordinate, one that pointed his gun at Vanessa when we escaped from the hotel, is saying at this late hour?□

Kousuke's gaze flowed smoothly toward Allen.

□Eh, m, me? What are you, saying so suddenly.....I'm just a humble analyst——□

□Don't play dumb, gauze man. Is that your true face? Your disguise is pretty good. But, the scar from my ashtray attack isn't something that can be treated somehow right away isn't it?□

□I really don't understand what are you talking.....□

□I'm not merely bluffing or just guessing. I remembered your presence. That's why, the hoodlum standing in our way that time, that was unmistakably you.□

The analyst with gauze on his nose, Allen Parker's gaze was wandering around in bewilderment. He was muttering□Oh maann, really, what is this about.....□, but Kousuke lost interest already and he took off his gaze from Allen. Behind Kousuke, Vanessa believed Kousuke's words and now she was making a questioning face, about why was a mere analyst was present in that hotel.

Chief Magdanese sighed once more.

□.....And, you cannot believe me, so then what will you do? As you know, the organization of Kimberly will be chasing after Doctor Grant mercilessly. They won't even care how many sacrifices will turn up from the surrounding.□

She implicitly declared that in the end, they had no choice but to obey the security bureau. Normally that was how it would be. An organization could only be opposed by another organization. That was the reason why Vanessa was trying to ascertain the true motive of the chief.

Just what could one agent and one foreigner boy do only by valiantly speaking sharply?

□I'll protect her then.□

□.....What did you say?□

Chief Magdanese reflexively asked back after she heard those words that were said really casually. That was natural. Even though the speaker was a boy from Japan that was often said to be peace idiot country, but that big talk was really far away from reality. There was a limit even in being out of place.

However, Kousuke didn't show even a speck of shame or looking like he was drunk with the situation, he continued his words matter-of-factly.

□I said that there isn't any problem. It's fine if Emily carried out her duty through the path that she decided herself. Together with her family. Of course, the best thing would be if the security bureau "respectably" give her protection without doing any messing around intervention. Even if we cannot obtain the backing of you guys, there will be no problem. It doesn't matter, I won't let anyone be a nuisance.

Whether it's Emily, or her family, I'll protect them with my all.

.....It seems that you are getting in a little high spirits after experiencing boy-meets-girl. I wonder if you have been watching movie too much?

Behind Kousuke, a girl was pressing on her chest saying 'hauu' as though she was shot through by something. Chief Magdanese gave that a passing glance with an exasperated look on her face. Seeing that, Vanessa objected with a self-assured gait.

Chief, he isn't a normal boy you know? At the very least, if he become serious then the like of one analyst and one agent won't be his match. In addition, he excelled in information war and can assassinate any kind of opponent. Chief, you are not an exception.

.....It looks like you evaluate him really highly, Paradis. And so? This boy who no matter how I see it is nothing more than a dreaming boy that misunderstand himself as a main character, who are you saying he is?

Vanessa made a smile that while small was clearly a fearless smile, and then she spoke her greatest trump card.

He is the one, who got his name recorded on the blacklist of the security bureau just from a few years of activity—Mr. K.

'That's why, don't do anything imprudent. Protect Emily and her family properly. And when she finished the antidote, dispose all the 'Berserk' that currently exist. Promise us that.' Vanessa conveyed that. 'I don't know what kind of ulterior motive the chief has, but concentrate only to resolving this case' She meant.

Vanessa returned threatening words in response of Chief Magdanese's similarly threatening words. For a moment Chief Magdanese showed an expression as though she was looking at a surprising scene, but at the next moment she sniggered.

□.....What is so funny?□

Vanessa's gaze sharpened in irritation. Chief Magdanese's shoulders trembled seeing that.

□No, you headed toward the house of Grant family on your own accord, you pointed your gun to me, there are many of your actions that were really self-assured. I was wondering just what was up with that, but to think that the basis of that confidence is "Mr. K" of all thing. Well, though certainly you were contacting Mr. K, so perhaps it's understandable for you to mistake that boy as him.□

□What are you saying——□

□He is not Mr. K.□

Her trump card was laughed at, and in the end it was denied decisively like that. Vanessa became speechless. She was about to argue back just what was the basis of her saying that.

Chief Magdanese showed a gesture as though she was thinking of something for a moment, and then she answered with a gaze as though she was looking at something pitiful.

□Paradis. You see, Mr. K is a member of security bureau.□

□.....Eh?□

Vanessa's eyes turned into dot in incomprehension. Toward such Vanessa, Chief Magdanese continued her words slowly and thoroughly as though to grind her hope into dust.

□It's natural that you don't know. He is a staff that is outside the law. —□JD(John Doe) Agency□. Intelligence bureau and security bureau, these two large organizations of our country oppose the dangerous and disturbing people and organization inside and outside the country. But JD Agency is *a non-existent organization* that extends over these two organizations. The members are all called with alphabet or number.□

□Bu, but, Mr. K, he is an assassin——□

□Yes, that's why I told you didn't I? That it's outside the law, and non-existent.□

Vanessa was speechless. Of course she would. After all the organization she belonged to was carrying out murder outside the boundary of law. It was truly like the world in movie. How darkness was an unavoidable part in a huge organization.

And then, this information that was originally known only to the highest class of leadership other than the chief was now disclosed here, it was in order to break the heart of Vanessa and Emily. In order to convey to the two of them that the bureau wouldn't pull back, they wouldn't let them get away. In order to display the mightiness of state organization.

□It was a surprise that you made contact with Mr. K separated with your contact to the headquarters. Because it was an unthinkable method to be taken by you who are still young with sense of duty and justice more than others even if you usually endeavor to be cool-headed. Although, even though I dispatched him to give back-up to the two of you,

for him to be taken out by a passing by ashtray.....I wonder if your ability ought to be reassessed, what do you think, Allen——no, agent “K”?□

Chief Magdanese looked behind and stared with a pressuring gaze that even emitted killing intent. Ahead of her gaze, was analyst Allen.

Yes, just as Kousuke said, the man that fainted due to the ashtray throw when they escaped the hotel, and furthermore got his crotch stepped on by Vanessa, was Allen in disguise. At the same time, he was actually Mr. K who received Vanessa’s request for back-up. The reason that Mr. K who was supposed to be assassin, agreed to receive the work of being Emily’s bodyguard was now said here.

□The, then, Kousuke, is.....□

Beside Vanessa who was astonished from catching a glimpse of the organization’s darkness, Emily muttered with trembling eyes.

Allen was walking forward with tablet in hand while shivering from Chief Magdanese’s gaze. He had been operating that tablet all along right after he confirmed Kousuke’s presence here, and the result of that seemed to be the answer of Emily’s question.

□Chi, chief? Certainly I have been continuously committing failure in these few days, but that’s because I’m an assassin, everything other than that is like outside of my specialty, can you see.....that’s why, what I want to say is, please don’t be so angry.....□

□Shut up, incompetent.□

□Yes, Ma’am.□

Allen who got the tablet snatched from him dropped his shoulders dejectedly. Chief Magdanese's gaze moved toward the information Allen gathered. There, the face photo of Kousuke that was taken from who know since when and his photo in the airport a few days ago were projected. And then, Kousuke's age and nationality were calculated based from the passenger list and Kousuke's true identity was pinned down.

Even though Allen was calling himself an assassination specialist, but as expected his skill as analyst was super first class. He was famous as an assassin that was strong in information war, but it seemed that fame wasn't merely because he was backed by security bureau.

□Kousuke Endou. Japanese, 18 years old. Born from a really normal family, a really normal high school student. Are you traveling abroad using your winter vacation?My, you are one of those "returnees" that agitated the world previously. I see, so you aimlessly traveled like this and poked your nose into this case. That baseless confidence of yours, I wonder if that is because of your optimistic thought that you will be okay this time too because you had come back once from that disappearance?□

Vanessa and Emily were shocked. Sometimes they got the thinking□Is he really a virtuoso hitman?□. He couldn't drive a car. He didn't bring gun, far from that he even said that he couldn't shoot properly. And above all else, the atmosphere he was clad in was too light. To the degree that saying that he was really a student from Japan fitted him to a tee.

Even so, they thought that he was Mr. K because they could cut their way through the assault in that hotel thanks to him. And then, the expression that that he sometimes

showed them made them got the expectation that “as expected he really is the one”.

But, it turned out he was really just a student from Japan.

□That’s why I told you two many times already. I’m not Mr. K. You two didn’t believe me at all.....□

Kousuke looked behind with a wry smile. Chief Magdanese announced to such Kousuke.

□Mr. Endou. I’ll consider that nothing happen if you just go home now.□

□Hee. You don’t think that I will blabber about JD Agency or that various other things?□

□Just who will believe that kind of story when it’s a Japanese boy who is telling it? Stop putting on air like you are a main character in a tale already.□

Right after that, a single gunshot rang, and a bullet gouged the ground near Kousuke’s feet. Allen said□Sorry, okay□ while firing so fast his gun drawing movement was unseen. That was the last warning. If Kousuke didn’t turn around and run away with his tail between his legs here, then there would be news report about how a Japanese boy met an unfortunate accident in his travel.

That was conveyed to Kousuke really clearly. But,

□Well, I cannot go home though.□

□Are you still unable to look at reality?□

□No, I’m aware of it. —There are thirty two armed men. They are lurking inside the buildings around us and

completely surrounded this spot. I know at least that much.□

Chief Magdanese's expression changed for the first time since coming here. Her eyes opened really wide with her shock laid bare. Even while she was like that, Kousuke's gaze ran through places like a building's window, the shadow of a street corner, behind a pillar, and so on. —All those places were the spots where the special squad of the security bureau's assault section was hiding themselves based on Chief Magdanese's arrangement.

□You are moving personally, bringing only those two because you have no one you can trust. That was what you say, but it looks like you are bringing really a lot despite of that.□

□You are.....□

Chief Magdanese's words got caught in her throat when she saw that piercing eyes of the person that should be just a student. Her preparation for the worst case backfired on her. Faint indication of agitation leaked out from the surrounding. Allen who was standing at the side narrowed his eyes slowly with his frivolous act thinning down.

The night breeze felt like it was growing warmer and damp. Even after seeing through the squad's position, Kousuke was still not showing even a fragment of agitation, his hands were still inserted inside his pockets with composure. He then said.

□I'll say it one more time okay. You cannot be trusted. And then, in this three-way fight, the enemy of the enemy actually can be trusted more than you. After all that hint from Kimberly is spot-on. The shitty bastard that infiltrated the research building and dragged this child's important

people into their death, it's that Mr. K over there. Just now, he said that he already failed continuously.□

□.....I also said this before. There is no need for me to do something like——□

□The talk about motive? Something like that is not important. If it's reason then I can imagine many. It can be to use it as weapon, or for pursuing profit, or because of the country's decision, or maybe it's for your own greed.....□

Chief Magdanese stared at Kousuke for a while. And then, she suddenly lifted up her hand.

Right after that, the members of the special squad showed their figure all at once. The muzzle of their machine gun that could shoot in full-auto was aimed at Kousuke. At the same time, Chief Magdanese gave an order through the wireless on her collar. Her command was to bring the people of Grant family here.

□In order to protect the large ship that is the country, there is time when evil is necessary. There are opponents that law or negotiation cannot do anything against, and yet something still has to be done against them to protect the large ship that is the country. The incarnation of that necessary evil, is the JD Agency, this Mr. K. □Berserk□is also like that.□

The gaze of Chief Magdanese caught Emily.

□I wonder if you know how many personnel, how many soldiers died in the battle against terrorist each year? If we can turn captured terrorists into mad monster to send them in as the substitute of those noble people.....just how useful that will be. How can we save the noble life of our country

without paying any sacrifice. However, surely Doctor Grant won't be able to understand that.

"That's why you tried to steal Berserk itself while making her create the antidote?"

"Correct. Because Doctor Grant seem to hate Berserk, there is a possibility she would build some kind of bug in the data through the process of researching the antidote. It's necessary to secure the original drug. There is a necessity to have at hand the antidote that the girl creates voluntarily and unaltered Berserk. Next if the girl dispose Berserk by herself, we can just advance the improvement of the drug by ourselves using the stolen data."

But, even that farce would end here. Now they would force Emily to improve Berserk for the sake of the country. Rather than making antidote, she should make the control drug for Berserk. And then, what would be used to motivate Emily was her family that was taken hostage.

Emily's face turned pale. She must be imagining the future where Berserk was put to use as weapon. And then, she also imagined one other thing at the same time. The reason why Chief Magdanese was starting to talk like this.

Chief Magdanese's gaze returned to Kousuke as though to prove that.

"This too is a necessary evil. You know too much about this case. This is incomparable with something like gossip about state organization that doesn't exist. It will be a little troublesome if you talk about Berserk to the media that is currently heated up. The cost of getting carried away with boy-meets-girl like this is a costly one. This time, you cannot be a "returnee" anymore you know?"

□Run away Kousuke! I'm sorry! I'm sorry to drag you into this! Quickly run away!□

□Kousuke-san.....my apologize.□

Emily yelled. Even while she understood that it was already impossible, even so, she couldn't help herself from yelling. Vanessa tried to rush at once, but she saw the red lights of laser pointer showering her body and her movement stopped reflexively. And then, when she saw Kousuke who was similarly covered with red points of death like her, she spoke her apology with expression that was colored by regret and guilt.

Seeing the two who were like that, Kousuke who had death thrust before himself was,

□Don't be so worried like that. I told you right, I'm not Mr. K but.....I'm the right-hand man of the demon king.□

Kousuke's face couldn't be seen. His face that was slightly looking down was hidden by his forelocks. Like that, it even looked like he was assaulted by fear of the fate that would happen to him after this, where he looked like he would crumble down anytime. But, even while he looked like that, his voice that spoke back to Emily and Vanessa resounded pleasantly like a gentle breeze.

And then, hearing Kousuke saying something like "right-hand man of the demon king" now that the event had reached this point, Chief Magdanese sighed thinking that this was a pitiful boy who was living in world of delusion while she was about to give the signal for the execution,

□Hey, chief-san.□

Her attention was diverted for a moment from Kousuke addressing her. And then, she noticed how her own arms were getting goosebumps without her noticing it. Toward Chief Magdanese who was feeling doubt about her own state, those words softly reached her.

—Emily's family, they still haven't arrived yet?

Feeling taken aback, Chief Magdanese spoke into her wireless, questioning just what were her men were doing. *zaa- zaa-* After listening carefully to the grating sound from the wireless that felt excessively eerie for some reason, an impossible voice replied back.

□Just now, they resigned from their duty. For the chief who has business with them, please do over your life again from beginning after the beep sound.□

She understood even through the wireless. That voice was unmistakably the voice of the person who had been talking with her until just now. It was impossible. How could the voice of the young man that was here in this place could come from the communication device of the personnel that she was sending to monitor Grant family?

She couldn't comprehend it. A chill was creeping up her spine like worm. Chief Magdanese was slowly raising her gaze from the wireless on her collar while feeling terror—and then, she saw.

With his expression still hidden by his forelocks, only Kousuke's mouth was splitting wiiiiidely. It was as though she was looking at the crescent moon shining in the sky tonight.

□You dogs of the state that sing the praises of necessary evil. Are you prepared? Are you resolved? If not then you better hurry. The abyss is already here.□

Chief Magdanese was feeling a terror that was like a black ink painting out her whole consciousness while swinging down her arm half unconsciously.

It happened at the same time with the appearance of “that guy”.

□Now, it’s showtime.□

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

He is coming, that guy, he is comingggg

The next update is planned at 6 P.M Saturday too.

Showtime Beginning Part

AN: This chapter became long, so I split it into beginning and end parts.

I will upload the later part in one more hour.

□Do it!□

Chief Magdanese's command that unusually sounded like a shriek was handed down. The elites lurking in the shadow showed their loyalty without even the slightest lag even though they were agitated from having their existence discovered.

Storm of death swept from all directions along with thunderous roar. Muzzle flashes flickered in the darkness of night as though to color the victim's journey to the next world. Bullets cut through the air mercilessly and arrived at their target through the shortest distance.

□KOUSUKEEEEEEE-□

Emily's shriek resounded along with the thunderous roar. In her eyes were reflected the figure of Kousuke whose body was rocked by overwhelming violence like a badly made marionette. His body was pierced countless time, and when the body was going to fall down, the storm of lead from the opposite direction would strike and made it stood up.

There was not the slightest ground for doubt, Kousuke was definitely pierced by several hundred bullets in front of everyone at that place.

However,

□He, doesn't fall?□

□Aha, haha, this is really a harsh joke.Why, is there no blood flowing?□

Vanessa murmured in astonishment, while Allen had his expression twitching grandly. Just as they said, Kousuke was still standing in the middle of ground that had been desolated and pierced by bullets.

The shooting was finished. Was it stopped because the loaded bullets ran out? Or else, was it because the elites who shouldered the country's safety shrank back from the manifested bizarreness? In any case, silence filled the area, as though all living things were holding their breath.

A beat later,

□It's over already? Then, next is my turn.□

The mutter that came from Kousuke who was hanging his head destroyed the silence. And then, the moment everyone opened their eyes wide thinking□Impossible□, an even further irrationality assaulted their brain nerves and common sense.

pon- Such light voice that could be called as stupid sounded, and Kousuke's figure vanished along with slight smoke!

□Where are you looking at?□

□Gueh!?!□

Everyone in that place directed their gaze toward the direction of those words and the shocked voice raised by Allen that was mixed with pain.

There, they saw Allen who without anyone noticing was lying on his face, his body stepped on by Kousuke above him. One of his hands was inside his pocket with his upper body slightly turning away, while the middle finger of his other hand was pinning down on the sunglasses that had been on his face without anyone noticing when he was putting it. Sunglasses, even though it was night!
Sunglasses, even though it was night!

□What coolness!□

□Vanessa!?!□

A shout of joy that sounded out of place was spontaneously raised. The side tail-san beside the voice owner goggled in surprise!

□You-□

Perhaps it should be said that it was just as expected from the real Mr. K. Even in this situation, the shadow of the country that was bestowed with license of killing still showed a movement that would make anyone who saw to have a chill on their back. He pulled out a small gun hidden inside his sleeve with his wrist's motion and fired at Kousuke while still lying face down.

What was terrifying was that the fired bullet was soaring toward Kousuke's head accurately even though it was shot from that kind of posture. Normally, if someone was abruptly

fired at from that close, that person would immediately travel into the next world, but.....

□Oops, you are really energetic there.□

Kousuke smoothly tilted his head while saying those words and the bullet rushed through toward the sky in vain. Allen didn't show even the slightest bit of agitation of having his attack evaded and wasted no time to pull his trigger in succession.

However, the bullets didn't even graze Kousuke. He only tilted his upper body slightly and evaded all the bullets with paper-thin difference. His figure that even looked blurred in double and triple layers was just like the agent in Matr○x!

□Don't tell me, your sight can follow the bullets!?!□

□Naturally. As long as this "Heavenly Eye" given by my friend is with me, any kind of attack won't be able to escape from my perception.□

kaclick- That kind of sound rang from the trigger. Allen's bullet ran out. Kousuke sharply pushed up the sunglass artifact that was enchanted with "Lightspeed" and "Foresight".

.....By the way, the creator of this artifact didn't give it a name like "Heavenly Eye" or anything.

The agent and Chief Magdanese returned to their senses and fired toward Kousuke. Kousuke magnificently danced in the air. Using a somersault with form that could even be called as beautiful, the bullets from the two passed through below Kousuke in vain.

□Don't just stare stupidly like that! Finish him off quickly!□

Chief Magdanese's order released the squad members from their petrified mind. They attacked Kousuke from all directions once more with barrage of bullet that was like a heavy rain.

□Fuh. Nice killing intent. But, it's not enough. It's not enough at all to catch this abyss without form!□

Kousuke said such thing while speedily evading the approaching bullets smoothly. He then finally took out a weapon. Before anyone noticed his hand was holding a jet black short sword that was unknown just from where he took it out from.

□Don't take your eyes off, from mine power of abyss!
——Purr, "Demon Sword of Destroyer Calamity Crawling the Earth".□

Kousuke called out some kind of chuuni name while leisurely caressing the blade of his short sword. When he did that, black light that could be mistaken as the night was starting to envelop the jet black short sword! And then Kousuke stabbed that short sword into the ground.

In a moment, the ground instantly bulged out and covered Kousuke completely. The surrounding ground became an omni-directional protection that blocked the bullet.

□——"Doton - Saryuu no Shiro(There is No Hope of Touching the Abyss)"□(TN: Earth Escape - Castle of Sand Bump)

Kousuke's words resounded the moment the ground bulge completely closed. Those words had no meaning, This was important so it needed to be said twice, those words had no meaning. If it had to be said further, the name of the short sword and the gesture of caressing the blade were also meaningless. So far as it went, the magic circle of the short

sword artifact wouldn't activate without chanting, so it was necessary to say something, but if the user had to chanted the name of the short sword and the skill name each time, they would be turned into swiss cheese by the enemy.

And so, the ground was already started bulging by the time Kousuke said "Pu" from the "Purr!".

Then, why did Kousuke chanted the meaningless skill name.....

Of course, because it was cool!

□Do, Do Do Do Do, Doctor Grant! Did you hear!? Just now, he said "Doton" you heard that!? What to do!?□

□What to do is my line there! That's not what you should be surprised with! The ground was suddenly moving you know!?□

□That was Doton skill so the ground moving is only natural isn't it!? Just what are you talking about! Rather than that, Kousuke-san was using "Tonjutsu" (TN: Ninja art of escape)! Aa, how can this be! He is, he is—a Japanese ninja!□

□I don't get what you mean!□

Vanessa was so excited that it seemed her character was breaking down, and Emily was desperately making retorts back. The members of the special squad were giving them a glance while losing their patience of how bullet wasn't working. They then took out grenade.

The grenade directly hit the mass of rock while at the same time making stupid sound *poshu*. Fierce thunderous roar resounded and the mass of rock was instantly pulverized, its fragments were scattering everywhere showily.

□He isn't there!?!□

□Watch out at your surroundings. This is a trick! That guy is using trick! Don't get lead astray!□

The person who seemed to be the captain of the special squad spoke loudly and gave words of warning. The squad members whose mind was painted out white by the supernatural phenomenon that was happening repeatedly were recovering their calmness from the word□trick□the captain said as temporary explanation.

Although, when they collected themselves, it didn't change that what happened before their eyes wasn't any trick or mechanism, it was a genuine "mystery" where any explanation was futile. Therefore,

□Gaa!?!□

□Gueh□

One of the troops hiding at the third floor near the window whirled in the air. It was as though he was ran over by a truck from behind, he cleared through the window and was blown away to outside. That was how it seemed, but at the next moment, from the fourth floor of the opposite building, the troop that threw the grenade just now shot out like a human bullet in spiraling motion, and crashed into the opposite troop whirling in the air with graphic sound.

The two crashed at each other midair and fell toward the ground. Right underneath them was the figure of Allen who was pulling himself back together. Allen tried to dodge right away. But,

□From the bottom of earth, the dead captures—"Doton - Naraku no Jigoku(The abyss seize thee)"□(TN: Naraku no

Jigoku = Prison of hell.)

□Wha-□

Allen's ankle was caught. The hand thrusting out suddenly from the ground was seizing Allen. The abnormal situation that was like a horror movie caused him to feel shaken, even so he immediately attempted to shake off the hand, but he only felt pain from being caught tightly as though by a vise and the hand didn't even twitch.

And then, right after that, Allen was dragged into the ground just like the words of the resounding voice. The ground wasn't paved by asphalt or anything, but it was a hard ground that couldn't be easily dug by human strength, yet regardless of that, he was buried from his waist below into the ground without any resistance, as though he was swallowed into a smooth quicksand.

□Shit-, what is this——gueh!?!□

Allen thought that his whole body might be completely swallowed under the ground like this, but unexpectedly he was dragged only until his waist before the pulling strength was gone. At the same time, the surrounding ground also recovered its former hardness. Allen struggled and hit the ground, but the next moment, he was crushed under the falling two fully armed men and he shrieked like a flattened frog.

□Serves you right! Mr. K, serves you right! Doton rulez!□

□I beg you, please come back Vanessa! I really like the usual cool you!□

Vanessa turned toward Allen who vanished from view due to being squashed by the two troops that appeared to have

fainted, then she pointed while going 'hyahhaa—'. While Emily was making retort with teary eyes, chaos and scream resounded from inside the buildings surrounding the open space from four directions.

□Shit, what is going on!?!□

□Just where is he aiming from!□

□Be careful of friendly fire——gua!?!□

The troops of the special squad were cursing while their gun muzzle was wandering in doubt. But, they were unable to catch sight of their formless enemy(Kousuke). They sometimes caught something like black shadow at the corner of their eyes and at the nook of their mind, but the moment they turned their gaze there, the splash of their comrade's blood would fly from completely another direction or they would get blown away like a joke.

□The stillness of the dark night is splendid. Don't you think that something like the sound of explosives is boorish for it?□

□Wha——gih!?!□

hyuu- Wind blew, right after that a troop got the tendon of his hands and feet cut and he collapsed.

□You feel it don't you? The cold yet gentle arm of darkness.□

□DAMN YOUUUUUUU-!?!□

The smooth sensation of caress on the nape caused a troop to have gooseflesh through his spine. He cursed while drawing out handgun without delay and shot behind him,

but what he felt was hot touch caressing his four limbs instantly.

□Don't you know, there are things in this world that you ought to not know. Do you know what I mean? Yes, it's me.□

□This-, monster——□

There should be his partner beside him shooting his gun desperately. Yet, what was standing there was only a black shadow. Where did his partner go? Why, didn't his comrade back him up? Without even any time to speak out such doubt, one more troop had his consciousness fell into the bottom of darkness together with hot touch that he felt on his limbs.

□What is this.....just, what is happening.....□

Chief Magdanese muttered in blank amazement. The thunderous sound of shooting in full-auto, consecutive muzzle flashes, and then scream and angry roar reverberated from all the surrounding buildings. Her gaze ran through the buildings around her as though she was a country bumpkin looking up at a skyscraper. She took back steps with shaky footsteps.

This was impossible. Even if Kousuke was skilled, this was strange.

How could troops get blown away from her right and behind at the same time when a troop was thrown out from the building at her left? Was enemy removal being carried out in all the four buildings surrounding this place?

Kousuke was alone. The enemy should be one person. Even if the enemy possessed strange fighting technique using trick, but it was only this fact that should be certain.

□Who in the world you all are fighting!? The enemy number!? All teams-, report!□

Chief Magdanese raised an angry voice. Normally there should be concise and swift reply coming back to her.

The moonlight was hidden behind a small cloud and darkness swept the area. The headlight illuminated her as though she was an actress standing alone in the stage. Replies returned at Chief Magdanese who was sweating coldly.

□This is Beta 2. The enemy's identity is unclear. The shadow, the shadow is attacki——□

□This is Delta 4! I don't know! I don't know anything! Shit-, my partners are disappearing!□

□Alpha 3-. The enemy is a Japanese young man! That guy is a monster-! The bullets-, the bullets cannot hit-. I can see him-, yet it's not hitting!□

Reports were screamed from the communication device. *DADADADDADADA-* The voice of the troops that were dyed with panic mixed in the interval between the unceasing sounds of gunshot. Not a single one gave a clear report that Chief Magdanese could comprehend.

□All troops, get outside! For a circle!□

A harsh voice that was tinged with dominating aura resounded from the communication device. That was the command from the captain of the special squad. The troops obeyed that voice as though it was their lifeline. They all jumped out from the window simultaneously without even a glance, without even thinking of the consequence, wishing

only to take distance as far as possible from the terrifying something that was lurking in the darkness inside the room.

The troops that jumped out from the second floor took skillful landing posture that was as expected from trained operative, they sprang up to their feet and rushed to Chief Magdanese's side. The people who were at third floor and higher descended down to the ground by using stair's handrail, window frame, and so on to decrease their speed, but the dread filling their chest threw out their limbs out of kilter and more than half of them struck the ground and writhed there.

Even so, they were dragged by their comrades to gather around Chief Magdanese and the formed a circle formation around her. They aimed their gun at the surrounding buildings with desperate look. They strained their eyes toward the window they jumped through just a moment ago while desperately holding down their rough breathing that was unrelated with the exhaustion of their stamina.

Inside the window was dark as though all light was being sucked in. Surely even if they were told that it was a hole that connected to the realm of the dead, the troops would easily believe it right now. Their gun muzzles were busily wandering around, searching for the enemy, which displayed the state of their heart. Surely in their heart, there was also the ashamed feeling that they had left behind inside that darkness many of their comrades with whom they had shared joys and sorrows with.

The personnel of the special squad that was at first more than thirty people were already decreased until seventeen people, including Allen who somehow managed to crawl out from the ground and the agent that was standing by beside Chief Magdanese.

It hadn't been even five minutes since Kousuke vanished. In just that much time, a platoon of the special assault squad owned by the state's organization was pushed into a partially destructed state.

The sound of breathing that couldn't be pushed down resounded. The sound of rustling clothes from roughly wiping out the sweat that was flowing from reason other than heat resounded. No one was making any voice. Even Allen who often joked around was desperately searching for the enemy position with his wandering eyes. Even Chief Magdanese was also feeling cold sweat trickling from the tip of her jaw while her gaze looked around from the center of the circular formation.

There, a strange sound resounded.

—clop, clop

It was footsteps. Footsteps were echoing in the world of night that was ruled by silence.

—clop, clop

But, there wasn't anyone that could react to those footsteps. No, to be more accurate they were reacting. However, aiming their gun when they learned the enemy's position by hearing—wasn't the reaction they made.

—clop, clop

The expression of everyone was twitching. Because the sound of footsteps resounding in their ears right now was coming *from an impossible place*. Their gun muzzle was clattering. It wasn't because they didn't understand who they should aim at. The assaulting terror finally caused the

tough elite squad troops to be unable to repress the trembling of their fingertips.

—clop, clop

Slowly, teasingly, the footsteps reverberated in the dark night. *gulp-* Sound of swallowing saliva pierced the ears clearly.

Chief Magdanese sighed deeply. And then, she slowly *lifted up* her face toward the place where those footsteps resounded from, to the place where the owner of the footsteps seemed to be at.

□—Impossible.□

That mutter where it felt like the soul of the speaker also came out at the same time with it, made the other troops, and Allen, and then Vanessa and Emily to lift up their gaze too.

□Once again, good evening, ladies and gentlemen. Don't you think that tonight is a really good night?□

There, a man in black was standing.

That black outfit was darker than even the darkness of night, as though it gave anyone who saw it a hallucination that the black of night was melting into the outfit. A mask hid the mouth, completed with a sunglasses of one-lens type. In one hand was a mysterious black short sword that gave anyone chills.

His voice resounded with echo that conveyed night of night, and darkness of darkness. Absolute confidence and domineering aura dwelled inside it, however, at the same

time, it contained dread that tightly held the entrails of heart.

At midair, footsteps echoed on invisible stair, like a ruler that was descending from his throne. Behind his back, was a beautiful crescent moon that looked like the sneer of the devil. A step, a step, that figure that descended from the night sky to the lower world while making darkness colored ripple under his feet, was truly an existence of myth.

□I like the crescent moon better than the full moon. It's not so bright that it will drive away the darkness of night, however, it garnish this wonderful darkness with color. Its shape that draws an arc looks like the smile of the goddess of night.□

He——Kousuke was looking down on everything, with an exaggerated gesture like a stage actor, he spread his hand as though to embrace the whole night, however, seeing no one replying back he shrugged his shoulders. And then, he slowly made a rotation, he turned his hand that was holding the short sword to behind, and his other hand propped up his sunglasses, he drew back his left foot a bit.

By the way, that rotation, and also his chuuni pose, of course, they were all meaningless.

□You.....you, just what in the world, are you?□

As expected from the chief of the security bureau. Chief Magdanese asked Kousuke's true identity while everyone were at lost of words and fell into stupor seeing the impossible situation. The situation was too abnormal to be dismissed as trick. In the end, was it really okay to classify the man that was making pose midair even now as mankind.....

That question came from such doubt.

In regard to that, Kousuke's answer was,

□"What are you"—I believe that question ought to be asked to all of you instead.□

□What, do you mean by that?□

Chief Magdanese returned a sharp gaze even while feeling perplexity. To that, Kousuke twirled in a rotation once more, and then, he pushed up his sunglasses with one hand while at the same time he threw his head back a bit with the tip of his short sword pointed in sharp motion.

□O guardian of the country. It's exactly as you said before, there are few things that can be protected using beautiful ideal. Without the resolve to dirty oneself, what is waiting ahead will be a trampling down.□

The eyes of Chief Magdanese turned round from Kousuke's words. She didn't even imagine that he would make a statement that affirmed her own words. It seemed that Vanessa and Emily were also similarly shocked from that. Emily was still wholly shook up without being able to get back on her feet from her agitation, and Vanessa opened her eyes widely from the shock that she received.

□Just feeling is insufficient. Nothing can be done without resolve. Trying to resist fate without dirtying one's self, something like that cannot even become a funny story.□

Those were heavy words. Even though they didn't know anything about this young man, they understood that he had gone through tremendous experience. They understood, how it had been engraved into his flesh and bones.

□One has to choose what they ought to protect. One has to persist in carrying their own will, surpassing the distinction of good and evil. To wish for everything, that is only possible for someone who transcend the extremity of that will.□

To protect the great ship that was the country from the ill will and hostility that lurked all over the world, was impossible with just law. It was impossible to resist with only right conduct and beautiful ideal. By the point of time someone cursed that the other was cowardly or the worst, what they lost wouldn't come back.

To “protect”, was a next to impossible undertaking more than human could imagine.

Therefore, Kousuke didn't deny. The hidden face of this country. The act of the non-existent organization that was called JD Agency. If there was things that couldn't be protected without such existence, then that was inevitable.

However, still, however.

□Even so, there are things that one mustn't throw away.□

Yes, that was why Kousuke was here. He was here, with his blade unsheathed. He unleashed the technique and strength, that he obtained at the end of deadly combats, along with bitter experience, at another world.

□The humanity and justice in one's soul.□

Those must not be forgotten. Even if the body was dirtied with necessary evil, the soul must not get rotten together with it. If not, then the necessary evil would someday be degraded into mere evil.

□The faith in one's heart.□

The people had faith in them. That they would protect the safety of this country. That faith must not be betrayed. If that was betrayed, then the whole foundation would be shaken.

□The sincerity in one's resolve.□

Their established resolve, their oath, those must be carried on faithfully. The moment they made compromise, that resolve would run wild, and bared its fang even toward those that it ought to protect.

Just like the current situation.

□O guardian. Is Emily Grant not someone that you also ought to protect?□

□.....□

Chief Magdanese didn't answer. Or possibly, she couldn't answer.

□She was born in this country, raised in this country, live in this country. A girl like her, isn't she someone that you ought to protect? Necessary evil—I won't reject that. But, in the end, is Emily someone that ought to have such thing pointed at her? Cornering someone who is desperately doing her best, a girl who wish to create a remedy of an incurable disease, is that the national safety you are talking about?□

Hearing Kousuke's question, there were people who made complicated expression among the special squad troops, there were even people who were obviously looking guilty. The expression of Chief Magdanese didn't change. Right now, she was staring straight at Kousuke without any discomposure.

Kousuke also stared back at Chief Magdanese as though to wait for her answer. Still in his chuuni pose.

Just how long they were like that. Before long, Chief Magdanese sighed, and quietly opened her mouth.

□I too, am the dog of my country. I feel no self-depreciation or regret of that. Not to mention hesitation, I have none of that.I have, made my determination already.□

That was her answer.

Allen sent a sharp gaze that only lasted for a moment at the captain of the special squad and the agent. The captain of the special squad tensed his jaw slightly, at the same time, the agent slightly moved back.

Kousuke sensed it. They were planning to make Allen and the special squad into disposable pawn, in order to evacuate Chief Magdanese from this place. The agent intended to rush until the car to bring Chief Magdanese to escape.

Should that be admired, or be exasperated at? What made Kousuke hesitated in making conclusion, was how lacking Allen and the special squads troops in hesitation. In order to let their boss got away, they accepted their end without even a moment of hesitation.

□Is that the resolve and sincerity of you guys?□

They would coerce a girl of their own country, in order to protect the people of the country. Despite Kousuke's opinion that it was putting the cart before the horse, that was the answer of the security bureau. They knew only too well of that, even so, if that was what their homeland decided, then they wouldn't hesitate. For that, they had made the resolve to put their life on the line since a long time ago.

Chief Magdanese spoke.

□About the research building, that was a sorrowful miss on our part. We were also unable to detect the betrayal of Kimberly, and also how the students of Down classroom were going to raise a commotion.It was my misjudgment to make Allen infiltrate by himself.□

She had never expected that the bodyguards safeguarding Berserk had been replaced by Kemberly's accomplice. At that time Allen caused the alarm to sound because the reaction of the bodyguards that was different from the usual trained agent, and he completely got taken by surprise by the unexpected conduct of the fake bodyguard agents.

□I have no excuse for that.□

□Such thing, even if you say that-□

Emily was enraged hearing that apology which was directed at her. She questioned whether this woman planned to beg for forgiveness only with that one sentence. Did she know understand just how great what had been lost due to her action.

But, it seemed that in contrast with her sentence, Chief Magdanese didn't have even a speck of intention to ask for forgiveness. Her eyes were still cold even while receiving Emily's rage right from the front.

□All of you, this is an order. Carry out your duty.□

□□□□Yes, Ma'am-!!□□□□

Chief Magdanese drew back. At the same time, Ellen rushed out from the circle toward Emily while the agent turned around toward the car. The eyes of the troops shined with

their last killing intent and they were about to pull the trigger at Kousuke midair.

It happened at that moment.

tan-, tan-

Two gunshot sounds resounded faintly.

□Muh□

□-!?!□

Those didn't come from the special squad. It also didn't come from Allen.

One shot splendidly drilled on Kousuke's flesh, and the other shot pierced through one of the troops while gouging Chief Magdanese's left shoulder.

Chief Magdanese collapsed from the impact with splash of blood scattering. And the, Kousuke fell to the ground in an arc trajectory.

□KOUSUKEEEEEEEE-□

□KOUSUKE-SAN-□

Emily and Vanessa screamed loudly.

□Chief-□

□-, protect the chief!□

The sprinting Allen made a turn that disregarded human's body structure while raising a voice that exposed his agitation and uneasiness for the first time. With the command of the captain of the special squad, several of the

troops used their body to cover Chief Magdanese as shield and dragged her body toward the wall.

Emily and Vanessa dashed toward where Kousuke was falling. Emily embraced Kousuke with an expression that could break into tears anytime, and together with Vanessa she pulled his body to the cover of car.

The second wave of attack didn't come. It seemed that the sniper became unable to take a line of fire. Even so, everyone there stayed still while staying on guard to the surrounding. Kousuke's body was limp without any movement.

It was unclear how long time passed. Perhaps it was about a few dozen seconds. The captain of the special squad gave a glance and saw that the first-aid to Chief Magdanese was finished, and he was about to order them to move out, but several lights cut through the area.

Those were lights from car headlight. And they didn't come from merely one or two car. More than ten cars were rushing at them with fierce speed.

Several of the cars arrived with a drift before stopping and took position that encircled the people of the security bureau and Emily's group. The cars were all stopped horizontally and blocked any path of escape.

Vanessa and Chief Magdanese scowled their face from having a certain person coming to their mind from seeing this method that was repulsive yet cunning.

It seemed that their expectation was right on the mark.

□Yoo, honored chief Magdanese. How envious for you to have a clandestine meeting outside the city at night. Let me

join in too, okay.□

□Kimberly.□

The one who got down from one of the cars was Kimberly who was sporting a really disgusting smile. With that as the start, dozens of armed men also got down from the other cars. They didn't look trained like the special squad troops. They looked more degenerate and violent, if it had to be said they were fellows that looked like mafia members.

Allen and Vanessa tried to move nonchalantly. But, as expected Kimberly gave no opening and sharply noticed them.

□Whoops, both of you, don't move from there. Especially the analyst-kun. You are bad news after all. Just try it if you move even for just a bit. I'll slaughter everyone without mercy.□

Kimberly commanded his men to release their weapon's safety. Although, the people who had resolved to die just now wouldn't obey that instruction that easily, both of them glared with their gun muzzles raised even with that overwhelming difference in battle strength.

□Well, guess so. There is no way the chief will comply that simply. No matter what you are the "cornerstone of Britain's protection" or "the iron woman that married Britain" huh. What's more you also got strong bad luck.□

Kimberly shrugged while watching Chief Magdanese's left arm that was oozing blood. And then, he turned his gaze at the reason why he didn't kill Chief Magdanese and everyone else here right away.

□So, chief-sama. Just what the hell is that?□

At the end of his gaze was the limp Kousuke who only looked like unmoving corpse even now, and the figure of Emily who was embracing such Kousuke.

□The elites of security bureau assault section was half-destroyed under a few minutes. What's more, he unveiled amazing technique like floating in the air. When I heard the sniper's report and watched the recorded video, I thought my eyes gonna popped out of their socket y'know.□

Kimberly's gaze left Kousuke and wandered to the air. □Well, there must be wire or something put in the air□It seemed that he thought what Kousuke did was a trick from those words that he said.

Although, even though he was a traitor but he was formerly a member of security bureau, because of that Kimberly knew how powerful the assault section was. It seemed he wanted to know the reason how a group like them could be cornered into devastation helplessly like that. That was the reason why he let the troops stayed alive even now.

Chief Magdanese distorted her expression cynically at such Kimberly.

□There is no way I know what that is. That is.....yes, it's "something" that human knowledge doesn't reach. According to that thing's words—he is the right-hand man of the demon king, something like that.□

□Demon King's, what? Just what kind of joke that is huh. That's——□

——Calling me "that", "that" from some time ago, that's a little bit impolite isn't it?

A voice suddenly reverberated echoingly. Kimberly and his groups were taken aback and they looked around the surrounding. Chief Magdanese shook her head with an expression that looked a bit tired while saying "Aa, just as I thought".

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

The later part will be uploaded in one more hour.

Showtime End Part

AN: This is the later part of two parts.

For those who come here directly from bookmark, please pay attention.

kii kii Such small sound resounded. That was the sound of wheel. At the same time, multiple footsteps also echoed.

The sound came from the building behind where the car of Chief Magdanese was parked. Everyone focused at the steel door of that building.

And then,

□Fumu, Mr. Carl. About the wheelchair of Syladono, don't you think it needs maintenance? It's making this kind of sound each time it moved. It's causing various anxieties hearing it.□

□A, aa, no, I planned to bring it to give it maintenance just today you know? I, isn't that right, honey?□

□Yes, tha, that's right. But, just when we were about to go out, the people of security bureau came so.....□

□I see. That's impolite of me. I have acted impertinently there.□

The people that came out from the opened door while making normal talk were a middle-aged man and woman who were making twitching expression. There was also a woman who was definitely passed seventy sitting in a wheelchair that was pushed by the man. It went without saying that these were Emily's family. And then, a man wearing sunglasses and black outfit was walking in the lead of them.

□Father! Mother! Grandma!□

□-, Emily!?!□

□Emily-□

Hearing the shout of Emily that was filled with joy, the father Carl and the mother Sophie called back the name of their beloved daughter without being unable to hide their happiness. It seemed that the grandma Sylva was sound asleep. Perhaps Kousuke had done something to her. Surely he had judged that this hectic situation would be harmful for her who was afflicted with Alzheimer.

The two parents had been told about their daughter's current situation to a certain degree. And so, they were about to rush toward Emily driven by their worry and the joy of reunion.

But, because of the pressure of the armed men that was standing between them and their daughter, and the ominous sound *kaclick* that came at the same time with the gun muzzles moving toward them immediately, they stumbled and came to a stop. And then, blood was leaving their expression when they saw the scene of the men that really resembled mafia, the personnel of security bureau who looked cornered at near the wall, and then, the

collapsed person who their daughter was holding in her arms.

They now painfully understood the situation. The terrifying situation their daughter was confronting, it was different from the explanation of the security bureau that was a mix of truth and falsehood. They grasped just how dangerous the situation their only beloved daughter had been placed in.

It was in the middle of that, a dumbfounded voice resounded.

□Thi, this is a joke right? He, should have been sniped.....□

It was Kimberly. At the same time, what he spoke represented what was in the mind of everyone there.

But, the right-hand of demon king exaggeratedly shrugged his shoulders saying □Good grief□ to the crowd that was a hindrance to the family reunion, completely unconcerned with that kind of question of bewilderment. And then, he suddenly formed a handseal with both his hands. Yes, he formed a handseal! As though, just like a NINJA! Just like a NINJA!

It was unknown just where was the expression that was worried for Kousuke just now had gone, the female investigator that might be beyond hope already yelled □Handseals come——!!□ while she desperately tried to copy it. It seemed that she was trying to memorize the handseals. But, the girl lacked a certain bloodline eye, on top of that Kousuke's handseals that were super complicated and super fast due to its lack of meaning weren't something that could be copied just from a glance.

'Your level is insufficient!' The handseals didn't really have any meaning, but with a glance those words were whispered

toward Vanessa-san who was grinding her teeth.

□To disturb the family reunion like this, what a really boorish bunches. ——”Kuuton – Banji Saikuu(I exist, in the desired spot)”□(TN: Air Escape – Air Reside in the Whole Earth)

Something like black mist instantly whirled around Kousuke, but right at the next instant, Kousuke disappeared, and not just him, but the whole Grant family too. In their place, the corpse of Kousuke that was inside Emily’s arms until just now appeared! And then, right after that, the corpse vanished with *pon-* sound as though it had accomplished its role!

□Thi, thi thi thi thi, this iiis!? Mikawari no Jutsu!? Isn’t this Mikawari no Jutsu, Kousuke-san!□(TN: Mikawari no Jutsu = Kawarimi no Jutsu/Substitute Technique)

□It’s a little bit different. Naturally I can also use Mikawari no Jutsu, but Banji Saikuu is something that is not limited to just myself. It designate things within a certain range around me and replace them all with my clone body along with the space. Fufu, this is a more advanced technique.□

In response to the yell of Vanessa who was in a state of ‘Excitement Climax!’, Kousuke answered while brushing up his hair with ‘fuh’. Kimberly and the bureau staffs come back to their senses from hearing the exchange of the two, and when they turned their gaze at that direction, there were the figures of Kousuke and Grant family that had teleported at Emily’s side unnoticed.

□Wha wha wha, what happened thank god Emily! You are safe!□

□Emily, you are not hurt just what happened!?!□

□Ca ca, calm down mother, father! You two are safe I am also confused here!□

Grant family was in a state of ‘Bewilderment Climax!’. The parents and daughter hugged each other while showing quite the skill where they were rejoicing with their reunion while acting bewildered at the same time. The grandma opened her eyes a tiny bit saying□My? Is it morning already?□, but she soon went ‘munya munya’ and went to sleep again. What a grandma.

□Impossible, what kind of trick is that. Is that thing just now a puppet!?!□

Kimberly raised an angry voice in half-panic, trying to find an explanation that his understanding could accept.

Toward such Kimberly, and then also toward the armed men and Chief Magdanese’s group, Kousuke suddenly lifted up his right hand to the sky and opened his mouth.

□Puppet? Ku-ku-ku-. Certainly, you can call it that. Isn’t that right——right me?□

Kousuke waved his lifted up right hand elegantly as though he was an orchestra conductor while making a finger snap *pachin-* and pointed at the right building. There,

□Or, you can also say that it is a dream, or an illusion, or even darkness. ——Front me□

At the window in the right building’s second floor, a man in exactly the same appearance appeared as though he was oozing out from the darkness. The Kousuke that was called as “right me” then stepped out to the empty air without any hesitation, and walked down on the air while spreading ripples that looked like black miasma.

□At the same time, it's a reality, a counterfeit, and also a real thing. Right, —left me.□

Kimberly and others turned unbelieving gaze at the right building, but right after that the same voice resounded from behind them this time. When they turned around in panic, as expected, there was also the figure of man in sunglasses and black outfit showing his appearance, oozing out from the darkness of the building over there, as though he was born from the darkness itself.

□Although, there is no need for you all to understand. After all, understanding the true abyss with human body, is something that cannot be done.□

The same voice entered their ears once more. When Kimberly and others turned to the left as though they were being toyed around, there, on the roof of a car that was parked horizontally to block the path, was the same man standing elegantly with his arms crossed and one of his feet drawn back slightly. Leaving aside a female investigator who was greatly being noisy□Real clone! Real clone!□in high spirit, everyone was lost for words feeling dumbfounded and astonished.

□Ko, Kousuke is, Kousuke is, four people.....□

Emily's whisper echoed faintly at the place where silence had descended. Right after that, the four Kousuke smoothly unsheathed their jet black short sword and made cross shape with their arms.□Camera-, where is the camera-□ Leaving aside the female investigator looking around with a desperate look who was surely beyond hope already, the right-hand man of the demon king chuckled at the words of the girl who he had promised to protect while he called out to her.

□Emily.□

□Ye, yhesh□

Emily's voice spontaneously squeaked because she didn't think that she would be addressed here. Seeing the girl like that, the nearest Kousuke chuckled while asking her.

□I'm not an ally of justice. If those who doesn't balk from harming others for the sake of their own will are called evil, then without a doubt, I am extraordinarily evil.□

□E, err.....□

Emily-san was bewildered. She didn't understand the meaning of those words, and she also totally didn't understand Kousuke's speech and behavior! But, Kousuke didn't pay that any attention. Because, the one who was here wasn't Kousuke anymore.

□But, I plan to at least bear in mind the moral code that I should stick to. Therefore, I will protect you. I will protect my promise to protect you. That's why, will you believe in me, and let me protect you?□

□.....Ye, yes. I believe you, Kousuke.□

It didn't seem like that she wasn't a little bit creeped out, even so the cheeks of Emily reddened when she was told "I'll protect you". She joined her hands in front of her chest, and returned back her trust as though in prayer. Toward her who was like that, Kousuke went□fuh□for who knew how many times today, and then lastly he spoke.

□Emily. And then, everyone here in this place. Listen-□

Each of the four Kousuke displayed diverse chuuni pose's variation from their original arm-cross pose that even left behind afterimage, while he raised a voice that echoed in the dark night!

And then, Kimberly and his group went 'twitch!' from witnessing that somehow amazing movement while they came back to their senses and aimed their gun toward the four Kousuke. Toward them, Kousuke declared! With a voice that was loud, proud, and echoed from the bottom of the abyss.

□I, am the shadow! The right-hand man of the godslaying demon king that was born from the bottom of the abyss! I came from the deep abyss, from the darkness that is deeper than even darkness! Now, engrave into your soul, this taboo name!□

The jet black short sword was swept, and the empty-handed left hand spread open its five fingers while covering the right eye. The left eye that sharply glared over everything, emitted penetrating light!

Kimberly gave his order□Fire! I don't really get it but, anyway, fire!□. The armed group broke out of the bizarre atmosphere that restrained them, and they pulled their trigger simultaneously. In the space that was blanketed with thunderous roar and muzzle flash, "his" introduction rang out clearly.

□——Rapid Fang Shadow Claw, Kousuke E Abyssgate. I have arrived!□

The bullets that were fired without thinking of leaving behind any reserve, all of them cut through empty air in vain. *shu-* Together with such sound, Kousuke——no, Lord Abyssgate's figure vanished!

Right after that,

□Crawl on the ground. Embrace the infinite hell fire!
——”Katon – Kouen no Ryuu(The flame of abyss extinguish
all creation)!”□(TN: Fire Escape – Prominence Dragon)

Lord Abyssgate appeared behind the armed group and stabbed his short sword on the ground while saying such thing. Instantly, vividly crimson blaze *gou-* was spreading in radial shape like great snake crawling on the ground.

□Uwah-, what!?!□

□Hot!? Shit-, the fire, the fire is coiling around me-□

The flame was crawling below the armed group coiled on the men and twined around them burning them mercilessly.

——Short sword “Heaven Destroying Sword of Brilliant Lightning Flame”

It was one of the treasures bestowed to him from the demon king. Originally it would create flame snake that randomly ran around to make the area fall into chaos, it was an item that was enchanted with a sublimated flame element magic circle to assist in escape. Just as the name showed, it was also possible to do the lightning version of the attack, not just flame element. It was possible to instantly activate two elements magic for escaping or assisting in battle.

By the way, he thought up the naming himself. Together with a rabbit-eared woman of another world.

Some of the men were about to rush out reflexively, perhaps to help their comrades to put out the fire. But a black shadow slowly appeared right beside them and they turned their gun there with great reflex. However,

□The surge of darkness, corrode everything——”Rasetu no Mashu(It is beyond your mean to touch the abyss)”□(TN: Rakshasa’s Evil Hand)

□Ugoh!?!□

ton Lord Abyssgate’s palm lightly touched the man’s chest, at that moment the man was blown away like a joke, as though he had been hit by a truck.

——Fingerless glove “Rakshasa Black Hand of Second Advent and Rejection”

This artifact was inserted with “Magic Shockwave” that converted magic power into shockwave——”Rasetu no Mashu(It is beyond your mean to touch the abyss)”, and regeneration magic “Daten no Ote(There is no end to the abyss)” that could regenerate what it touched to a certain degree. (TN: Daten no Ote = August Hand of Fallen Heaven)

By the way, the chief of rabbit-ear thought and groaned for three days to come up with the naming.

□Die-, die-, this damned monster-□

Several men who fell into panic were brandishing their gun indiscriminately. The bullets that flew out randomly were something dangerous that might drag Emily and others who originally they should secure into danger instead.

□How could you guys appeal to Emily and others while ignoring me. I feel lonely——”Zekkou Senjin - Shin’en no Kaina”□(TN: Light Severance Thousand Blades - Abyss’s Arm)

Lord Abyssgate had jumped to the sky unnoticed by anyone, and in midair he swept his arm in large movement. With

that, four kunais appeared from empty air. Those kunais flew as though they had their own will, three of them stabbed on the ground around Emily and others *ka-ka-ka-*, while the remaining one came to a stop still above them.

And, just before the astray bullets reached Emily and others, they were obstructed by invisible wall that manifested at the space slightly ahead.

—Offense and defense dual use gravity control kunai
“Zekkou Senjin”

This artifact’s ability was almost the same like the demon king’s bit weapon. It would lay out space isolation defensive wall by making each other as fulcrum. It flew freely using gravity control, and could accomplish space teleportation by replacing their position with the user.

By the way, Kousuke didn’t have a thousand of this kunai. He had twelve. The one who named it as thousand blades was the rabbit eared sniper boy. It seemed that the naming reason was□Heheh, stylish right?□

□Don’t screw around-□

Kimberly howled. Lord Abyssgate was about to land on the ground with several kunais orbiting around him like satellites. Kimberly aimed the moment he would land and pulled the trigger. It was a superb timing. Even while he was in panic and confusion, that was still an amazing judgment and technique. Furthermore, foreseeing that as a chance, even Allen also gave support fire to make it so there was no place of escape. Perhaps this was the so called the enemy of my enemy if friend.

Lord Abyssgate smiled wryly. He fired a single kunai to the ground while falling and his body made a single rotation

midair.

□Invite to the abyss——“Doton - Shin'en Ryuusa”□(TN: Abyss Quicksand)

Instantly, the ground undulated like a whirlpool, Lord Abyssgate slipped through the bullets and then smoothly dived into the ground. □The true worth of Doton, IT COMES-———!!□The frenzied voice of the female investigator who was beyond hope already, it startled Kimberly. At the same time,□CALM DOWN VANESSAAAA□everyone of Grant family was also startled from their beloved daughter's shriek.

That became an opening where Kimberly was made to pay a painful compensation.

——Bulge, breaking wave. “Doton - Raiton Combination Art - Raika Hourai” (TN: Raiton = Lightning Escape, Raika Hourai = Lightning Flower Phoenix Arrival)

Such words were propagated from the whole darkness of night. Right after that, the ground underneath Kimberly bulged up with explosive momentum. And then, roaring lightning attack burst out, like a roaring dragon climbing up to the sky.

□-, gah!?□

Kimberly was hit hard by hard rocks that came like buckshot while intense lightning attack showered him. Kimberly who couldn't even make a proper scream was launched to the sky like in a cartoon.

For a moment, everyone's eyes were fixed to that sight. In the middle of that,

□Be aware of your own sinfulness, o shadow of the country.□

□Wha-, the ground is again——□

Before he could finish speaking, Allen turned his head from the fright that attacked his spine. There, he saw the figure of Kousuke who flew out from the ground with a momentum as though he was launched out. His figure with both his hands spread and his legs lightly folded, was truly the pose of a savage eagle!

But, Allen also didn't lose. Even while his eyes opened wide in surprise, he aimed the gun in his right hand with amazing reflex and he pulled the trigger.

But, Lord Abyssgate who floated midair, with his body that could be said to be exposed to death, he went□fuh□that he had done a lot today, and then he dodged the bullet with a stylish midair spin.

And then, he kicked flying Allen's gun with a midair spinning kick fully filled with centrifugal force. In the next instant, Allen's left arm moved. Of all things, a hidden gun came out from his left sleeve too.

□Got you-□

□No, that's your illusion.□

Lord Abyssgate's other leg cut through the air. Using the centrifugal force of the midair spinning kick, it was a second leg attack that wasn't unlike a second sword. Allen's hidden card was sent flying too quickly. Even so, the movement of the shadow of the country didn't stop, he fluttered the sleeve of his coat and his right hand that should be snapped away reached toward his waist. There, a revolver for quick draw was stored.

Although, that out of norm movement was already a step late in front of Lord Abyssgate.

□Shih-□

□Wha!? Gah□

A third kick attack. By twisting the upper body after the second spinning kick, it further connected to the third spinning midair kick. The right kick that returned to its original position after a rotation cleaved through the wind *gou-* while hitting hard the haw of Allen who immediately tried to pull back.

Allen's body was blown away, his body danced midair while making triple spin. The white of his eyes was exposed and he bounced on the ground, at the same time Lord Abyssgate's feet also touched the ground.

□.....Abyss-style assassination martial art - kicking form....."Hien Renkyaku(The bird of abyss chirped three times)"□(TN: Flying Abyss Tempered Leg)

That unnaturally long pause was of course, because he only thought up that name just now!

Putting aside the former investiga—the mere otaku who said□Aa, not just ninja art, but even martial art.....it's lovely□and the father-daughter who conversed□Emily, i, is this person alright?□□No, it's too late already for her, father□, the battlefield where the abyss lord had descended was filled with scream of chaos and despair where everything was merely trampled helplessly by the darkness that he brought about.

□I didn't hear anything about this! What the hell is that guy-□

□Damn it-, don't come here!□

Barrage of bullets surged along with thunderous sounds. But, Lord Abyssgate that was the target wasn't even grazed. No, to be more accurate, the bullets actually hit. To the double or triple layers of afterimage following him every time he moved. It was as though the bullets were sucked in, they shifted slightly from Lord Abyssgate's body and drifted toward the afterimages.

□——"Juuton - Keishi no Kage". No one is able to seize the abyss.□(TN: Gravity Escape - Shadow of Unusual Death)

The combination technique from skill "Phantom Step" and gravity magic——"Keishi no Kage". While generating afterimages behind using "Phantom Step", those afterimages were enchanted with gravity magic that averted every attack.

□.....This is like, a B-class movie.□

Kimberly cursed like that while somehow raising up his body that was finally freed from the numbness. He vomited blood 'gahah'. He looked at his surrounding while on all fours and made a dry smile.

The incarnation of death boasting overwhelming force that surpassed the speed of sound couldn't even graze the existence before his eyes. Even though they were able to see him, even though they could perceive him, but they were unable to grasp his real state. Even though they were fully observing him like this, yet when they noticed they would suddenly lose sight of his existence, and the next time they noticed would be when they were on the verge of having their consciousness swallowed into darkness along with intense pain. And only the back figure of the lord that was in unrelaxed alertness.

Flame crawled on the ground, lightning flew wildly about, wind blade raised up blood splash, and the ground swallowed everything. The shadow ran whether it was on the ground or the sky, vanishing and disappearing, cloned itself into several bodies and kunais were rushing through the sky by ignoring gravity.

□Aa, shit. I really cannot go along with this-□

□That too, is the consequence of your choice isn't it?□

□-□

Kimberly whispered once more while somehow crawling toward the nearest car, but right after that, a cool voice replied to him from right behind him.

When Kimberly looked back, there was the figure of Lord Abyssgate looking down on him. At the same time, *dosha-* a body of his comrade fell with raw sound beside Kimberly. That body's neck was clearly twisted into a direction that a neck mustn't go.

□This, monster□

□You who prey on human, who doesn't feel any hesitation at involving unrelated people, and slaughter your comrades for money, aren't you the monster?□

It was a scathing reply. Kimberly faced Lord Abyssgate with his body falling on his backside. When he noticed, he couldn't hear any gunshot anymore. When he looked around with just his gaze, there was already no one standing in this battlefield.

No, there were barely some people. The troops of the special squad. With their back facing the wall, they formed a half-

circle to become the shield of Chief Magdanese. They were standing even while trickling cold sweat. Beside them was a clone body of Lord Abyssgate, they weren't allowed to run away, even so they didn't seem like fighting each other.

On the other hand, the organization member that Kimberly led here seemed to have passed on already without even any time to feel pain. There wasn't anyone with showy wound. A single stab on the heart, or internal organ destruction using impact, stopping heart with electricity, or severing artery using wind blade. Even the people that were enveloped in flame had their life severed by a single attack of flying kunai before they died by fire.

□Oi oi, what the hell. You overlook them, but slaughter us all? Just what is the difference between those guys and us huh?□

Kimberly cracked jokes even with his cheeks twitching while his body was sweating from pain and unease. Lord Abyssgate changed his hold on his short sword into reverse grip while shrugging his shoulders at such Kimberly.

□Evil with conviction, and a mere fiend. Is it fine to consider that both will meet the same end as the result? The answer, is no.Well, there is also the difference at the level of troublesomeness for the cleaning up afterward though.□

Lord Abyssgate was Lord Abyssgate. He wasn't that demon king. A method of annihilating anything and everything when hostility was directed to oneself, was a method that he couldn't take based from his sense of value and also his lack of means to clean up afterward, nor did he want to take it. Not to mention how this was at earth.

But, he the experience that he had gone through was also not so sweet, that he would let alive fiends scattering

around malice for their own selfish desires, for their own pleasure. Therefore, he made his choice. That was all there was to it.

From the slight movement of Kimberly's gaze, Lord Abyssgate guessed that he was wracking his brain for some kind of solution to escape from this situation. He unhurriedly walked toward Kimberly. And then, he violently grasped Kimberly's collar and lifted him up with one hand easily.

□Uoh. Wait-, just wait! What happened wasn't my real intention-. Even I have a circumstance, I cannot help it! Listen to me!□

Kimberly desperately beat at the arm of Lord Abyssgate that lifted him up from behind while speaking excuse that would overshadow even the word unsightly. Lord Abyssgate lifted up him who was like that, like a criminal that was crucified on a cross.

At the same time,

□Uh. I, I was.....aa, if I'm not mistaken, I fainted!? Why am I lifted up!?!□

Allen who fainted until now with the white of his eyes showing was lifted up similarly like Kimberly by a clone body and carried near.

The special squad troops starting from Chief Magdanese, and then Vanessa who was sending Kousuke a strangely sparkling gaze, Emily who was completely creeped up by such Vanessa, and Grant husband and wife who was turning pale from the surrounding situations in a silent panic where they couldn't even hide their bewilderment, they all were paying full attention.

Amidst that, the lord drew back and recovered the kunais protecting Emily and others while raising his voice.

□Emily Grant! Vanessa Paradis!□

□Fua, fhyes!□

□Yes, what is it my god?□

Emily who was suddenly called in her full name responded with shaken stutter. As for Vanessa at her side, for some reason she wasn't shaken at all, instead she fell on one of her knees *sucha-!* right away, and replied with reverence as though she was kneeling before her lord. The end of her sentence caused Emily to goggle at her in shock.

But, even that no-good investigator Vanessa who wrecked the serious atmosphere like that immediately corrected her expression from the next words.

□I have captured the perpetrator that snatched away your precious family, your precious comrades.□

Yes. Kimberly snatched them away. Her esteemed superior Hughes. And also the life of her colleagues.

Yes. Allen snatched them away. Even indirectly, the lives of her substitute father, of her big brothers and big sisters.

□Can you two stay quiet?□

There was no way they could. Their heart that had been paralyzed by the serial unusual situations started to move again. The scorching rage they had been holding all this time started to blaze again like fire that was put into fireplace.

Emily stood up. The figure of her family floated around her mind. Because it was command? He didn't directly do it? So what. It was beyond doubt, that what was scattered by the man in front of her eyes, had snatched away the life of her important people.

Vanessa stood up. What filled her mind, was the figure of the superior that she should aimed at. And then, the figures of the comrades with whom she entrusted her life to and vice versa. Who was the one that shot at them from behind with a reason like "for the sake of money"? Who was the one who snorted at the offered trust while trampling on it? It was, the shitty bastard before her eyes.

□O, oi, Vanessa. Wait, just calm down! I——□

□Silence.□

Vanessa slowly stepped forward.

□A, aa~, young miss? That, it was my bad that I blundered——□

□Shut up.□

Emily stomped forward loudly.

Both of them, the two woman who had survived to this point, walked forward side by side. Their expression couldn't be seen from the shadow covering their face. But, their lips that were tightly pursed into a line spoke of their emotion more eloquently than anything.

They clenched their fist. Both of them broke into run. The two men who became the origin of calamity imagined the future that would befall them and sighed. In their action, there was contempt that could be seen, after all what they

faced were just female, furthermore one of them was nothing more than a girl. Getting punched wasn't really a big deal.

But, that contempt too disappeared right after that.

—There is no end to abyss. The deep darkness envelop everything.(Now, beloved children. Let's bestow the protection of abyss to you.)

The moment that whisper was uttered, the night suddenly coiled about on the greatly clenched fist of the two. The blackly whirling light that gave such illusion was increasing in strength with pulses each time the two took a step forward! Yes, it was as though, the abyss lord was increasing that strength with each passing of time!

Unease ran through the expression of Kimberly and Allen. Both of them didn't understand what phenomenon that was. But, their soul understood this much. 'That's bad news-!' Following that impulse, they raised their voice to stop the two.

Wai—

Sto—

No more discussion-

But, at that time the two were already right in front of them. Their hidden expression became exposed. What was there was wicked look that even resembled evil Rakshasa.

ZUDAN- Impossibly loud footstep resounded. Cracks in the shape of spider web ran through the ground! And then, it was unleashed. It was like cannon ball that blasted through the air, the fist clad in the abyss!

□FLY AWAY-□

□DIE-□

Emily's fist at Allen, and Vanessa's fist at Kimberly. Both of them put their whole feeling, and their billions of rage, they spitted out everything, and struck!

□□THIS SHITTY BASTARD-!!□□

GOU-!! The thunderous sound of hitting flesh and, □GUPEE!?□□GEHAH!?□such screams resounded. On the eyes of the lord that had the perception ability raised by "Heavenly Eye", the sight of Kimberly and Allen's cheeks getting ran through by fist, their cheekbones broken, their teeth pulverized, and their flesh squashed in undulation, was projected.

When the lord timely released his hand, Kimberly and Allen were blown away in tailspin as though to prove that might and they bounced together on the ground. And then without any lessening in their momentum, they crashed on the car behind. Both of them cordially plunged through the front glass head first together and in the end there was only their butt sticking out without even a twitch.

The sound of someone gulping their saliva *gulp* echoed. The troops of the special squad were making expression that was shuddering in fear as though to say□Those fists really a damned bad news□.

Amidst that atmosphere, Emily and Vanessa who were standing still with their fist still outstretched slowly relaxed their tension. And then, they lifted their face and gazed at the lord.

There on their face, floated a smile. Looking at their smile, it could be clearly understood that even though it wasn't wholly, but at least their expression had cleared up a bit.

□Both of you.That attack felt like it would make me fall in love.□

The lord gave words of praise while once more going□fuh□ that he had lavishly displayed throughout this day.

Emily and Vanessa looked at each other's face, and then, they turned their face at the lord one more time. Wordlessly, they both fixed a thumb up resolutely.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

This is not over you know? It's still continuing you know~.

The next update is planned at 6 P.M Saturday too.

Please Kill Me Instantly Instead.....

AN: This one is short. There is big possibility it will be rewritten, or added to.

□Now then, here we are o guardian. I'll grant you the chance to choose.□

After Emily and Vanessa made their settlement with a fist of all their might (plus abyss), the lord that was observing Chief Magdanese and her group said such thing with his eyes shining.

In the silent night where the tumult of death and strife had passed, leaving behind the heaps of corpses of armed men all around, the voice of the lord resounded clearly. Emily and Vanessa, and also Grant husband and wife who were in slight distance away, they all went 'hah' and their gazes turned toward that voice.

Even the special squad troops whose awareness slackened slightly from the extermination of the enemy and the *observing* act of the lord, they began to put on a tense air once again.

□Choose?□

Chief Magdanese was pressing on her arm that was soaked in blood while standing up with the help of the agent beside her. Her cheek was dirtied by blood splash and painted her gruesomely, but she responded at the lord with a straight calm gaze without even a grimace on her face.

□Yes, choose. Will you be exterminated in this place? Or will you take the second option?□

□What nonsense.....I already told you my, no, the security bureau's will. If you want to kill us then kill. Even if the country lose a pawn like me, it won't affect this country's system.□

She had made her resolve. Her cold gaze without any emotion in it discarded the lord's proposal as nonsense.

But, the lord wasn't making "proposal" here.

□Certainly, I don't think that your death will affect this country's decision considerably. But, I believe that the influence of the living you is powerful, isn't that correct? Don't you think that influence ought to be used for the sake of the country's safety?□

□? What are you.....-, such thing. That's a contemptible threatening isn't it.□

Yes, this was the "ultimatum" that was only dressed up as "proposal".

Even if Chief Magdanese died, it would be impossible for the upper brasses of this country who knew about the appeal of □Bersek□ to retract back their hand, there would be some remaining that would keep trying. The successor of Chief Magdanese would succeed her duty or else that duty would simply be moved toward another organization.

But, if this great woman who could even be said as a living legend used her position and all her influence to insist that "Berserk" was unneeded, or even dangerous, what would happen then. Chief Magdanese said that she was nothing more than a dog of the country, but sure enough, could the upper brasses ignore her full report?

From the lord's conjecture, there would be no way for them to ignore her.

For the lord who was lacking in the means of cleaning up the aftermath with the country as his opponent, the method of bringing over Chief Magdanese to his side and made her to revoke the "Berserk" case could be said to be the most realistic means.

Of course, the lord also had the means to make the top brasses of this country to forget everything regarding "Berserk". He could make request to that demon king. If he did that, the whole case would be settled without leaving any loose end.

But, the lord didn't choose that. The dignity of the lord wouldn't forgive him if he left this case's resolving to other people wholesale even though he was the one that poked his nose into his case by his own. Above all, he thought of that person as a friend, and so there was no way he could treat him as a convenient existence. If he did something like that, then the lord wouldn't be able to say that he was the friend of that demon king while raising his head high.

Therefore, for the lord, it would be for the best if Chief Magdanese herself put an end to this "Berserk Incident".

And then, in the case this option couldn't be practiced, then it would be war against the new security bureau without

Chief Magdanese, no, against the country itself that was backing the bureau.

□This is different from threatening. This is a declaration. If your side wishes for a fight to the bitter end, then I will fight until this body is reduced into worthless thing. Now, guardian. You can imagine using that sagacious mind of yours. In the end, just how much sacrifice will be necessary to stop this abyss lord.□

□.....□

Chief Magdanese stayed silent. Her gaze surveyed around slightly without even speaking any words. What entered her gaze was the mere shadow of the armed men's former self. In contrast, the man before her eyes had not a single wrinkle on his outfit.

In front of this person who utilized supernatural technique that surpassed the realm of understanding, even the special squad of the security bureau would be powerless. His conduct and speech were also beyond comprehension.

Although, it was by no means that the winning percentage was zero inside Chief Magdanese's thought. No matter how much irrational strength this person had, but as long as he was only an individual, he would be in a losing battle against an organization. Inside her head she had already pictured several routes of killing the lord by using "strength of organization".

But,

□Haa.....□

She let out a deep sigh. From how the agent standing by beside Chief Magdanese was blinking his eyes, perhaps it

was really rare for her to act like that.

But, if that agent knew about what was inside Chief Magdanese's heart, then surely he would feel that it couldn't be helped for her to make that deep sigh from the overwhelming fatigue drowning her heart, he would even feel sympathy to that.

(The right-hand man of demon king.....what's more, the "returnees", is it.)

Yes, the lord had proclaimed before. That he was the "right-hand man of demon king". In other words, this embodiment of irrationality before her eyes *was nothing more than a subordinate*. In the end, was that existence which was referred as demon king, an existence that was even more powerful than this lord? That was something that Chief Magdanese didn't understand.

But, here, for some reason her mind was naturally under the impression that *this information was nothing significant*—from that, and when the keyword "returnees" emerged on her mind, terrifying possibilities were welling out from inside her, one after another.

The returnee incident that shaken the society for a period. Naturally the intelligence department of Britain also didn't ignore that incident. But rather than the boys and girls who were called as returnee, the intelligence department focused more in observing and dealing with the disturbing elements who were sniffing at the occult aspect of these returnees. Even so, there was no doubt that Britain was paying attention to the Returnees Incident.

But, at one point of time, the heated up media and suspicious organizations that were showing disturbing

movement suddenly stopped showing any movement. It happened so quickly like the tide that was drawing back.

(Yes, that incident came to an end so naturally that it was unnatural. And then, I and also the intelligence department didn't feel that it was unnatural!)

The existence of the lord and the few keywords that he put before her eyes opened up Chief Magdanese's eyes.

—This person wielding supernatural power, is a returnee

—The returnees, numbered thirty people in total.

—At the very least, there is an existence that this person looked up as above him.

—The recognition toward the returnees is weak, and much less in their own country, but almost the whole world was like that.

—Even now she isn't feeling that it was unnatural about how weak this recognition is

'Just what's with this situation', Chief Magdanese thought. 'The opponent is an individual', such assumption was an excessively hopeful conjecture.

□Let me, ask a question. Among *all of you*, how high are you in comparison?□

When that question left her mouth, she thought that there was really no meaning in asking that, even so Chief Magdanese couldn't help but asking the question. She wanted to know even if just a part, about "they" who managed to hide from the whole world even after having the attention from all over the world gathered on them once.

Hearing the question of Chief Magdanese, the lord hummed
□fumu□while touching his chin. He showed a gesture of
thinking for a bit, and then he shrugged his shoulders in
over reaction and answered.

□I can boast that I'm top class even among my friends.
However.....□

□However?□

The lord was putting on airs, however, Chief Magdanese only
asked back quietly without showing any irritation. Toward
such her, the lord held his head high, and then he spoke in
pride.

□Compared to our demon king and his ladies, I cannot hold a
candle to them. Even in one-on-one, using my whole body
and soul, where I take out all of the trump cards that I
have.....dealing a scratch is the best that I can do.□

□.....I see.□

The special squad troops were going slightly astir. An
opponent that cornered them until half-destroyed state, and
in his back there was still someone else waiting, someone
that this person could do nothing except putting on a
scratch. What's more, there were several of such people.
What's more, he said *ladies*. Ladies-! The fingertip of the
troops that was on the trigger was trembling! How
envio——terrifying!

□Although, perhaps it won't even become a fight against
you guys to begin with.□

The detail that was added like an additional blow convinced
Chief Magdanese. It was just as she thought, even their

awareness was being guided. That conviction made a sigh to leak out from Chief Magdanese's mouth once more.

And then, she asked the scale on her heart and a bitter smile emerged on her mouth.

□Indeed, it's not worth it to continue this just for the merit of turning□Berserk□into weapon. By the way, I wonder if there is any room for negotiation?□

□None.□

□Is it fine for you to say that even without asking that demon king-sama you respected?□

□Of course.□

A curt response. Chief Magdanese sighed for the third time.

□The effect and usefulness of□Berserk□are already known by the top brass. I cannot assert that this case will be resolved by me advocating for the opposing argument. It's my specialty to make argument armed with theoretical backing, however I cannot guarantee anything with certainty if I have to omit your existence in my argument.□

□Are you implicitly telling me to expose the information about me and the one behind me? Know this, guardian. In this world, there are things that shouldn't be known.Or rather, if I told you about them then it will be seriously bad news for me and for you too. Especially if anyone try anything to the wife~s it seriously will be the end. It will be totally over for this country. If this is known, then there will absolutely be some fellow coming out to do stupid thing, this country will disappear from the map yea——cough-. Anyway, I have no intention of telling you anything about us.□

□.....□

For some reason, it was as though the bare face came out from Lord Abyssgate. It was a momentary shiver that was obvious even through the sunglasses and black costume. Other than Chief Magdanese, even the troops were horrified. Just what kind of existence could make this aberrant existence to unconsciously return to his bare face!?

□Hhn, a, and, what is your answer?□

The lord cough unnaturally as though to pull himself together, and then he pressed the choices once more on them. The mind of Chief Magdanese was groping frantically for the best solution to her country even now in this moment, but she was aware that the answer had already come out from inside herself since some time ago.

The country's safety was everything for Sharon Magdanese.

Then, if what was waiting at the end of the path of pursuing that goal would be a war against an unknown, and furthermore a powerful organization without equal that could even possibly overthrow this country, then that would be really just putting the cart before the horse. At the very least, she knew that in the current time she was overwhelmed in the information aspect and battle strength.

A long silence descended. The cold gaze of Chief Magdanese pierced straight at the lord.

The lord was also staring straight back at Chief Magdanese. While crossing his arms.

Just how much time passed? When anyone realized, Emily and Vanessa were already standing close to the lord, the troops were nervously gazing alternately between Chief

Magdanese and the lord. It was at that time that the words that would decide their fate were finally spoken.

□.....Fine then.□Berserk□is uncontrollable. Refinement of wonder drug for it is impossible. At this rate there is a high possibility of it adapting to the environment and start airborne infection, the damage in that case will be vast. What do you think about that? Of course, I will put seasoning on that story sufficiently.□

□Wonderful. With this there will also be no need for a joke like all the upper brasses of Emily's country showing the same symptoms with Alzheimer, despite that being the illness that she is fighting against. My greatest respect on your decisive judgment.□

□I don't need your respect or anything, however I think that it's a silver lining that you are someone rational.Though honestly, I think there is something wrong with your speech and act.□

The words that were muttered in a whisper by Chief Magdanese in the end there. Surely those words came half from being sore loser, and half came from her heart.

The lord pretended not to hear that while his gaze moved to Emily beside him. By sending flying one of the causes that cornered her important people to death, her feeling had been diverted somewhat, but as expected, the flame of her hatred was still directed at Chief Magdanese who was the ringleader without even the slightest weakening.

□Emily. Just as you heard, we have procured a method to end this case. But, I know that this method is not something that you really can agree with.□

□.....right□

Emily clutched the sleeve of the lord tightly. Her tightly pressed lips looked like she would bite on her lips anytime. That look of hers eloquently exposed the inside of her heart that was yelling "This kind of people, it's better if they all just die!".

The lord questioned to such Emily.

"I was the one who said that I will become your strength. That's why, if Emily wish for revenge, I'll draw my blade against them. Emily, what do you want to do?"

Those words of the lord that came this late in the game caused the troops who were breathing sigh of relieve to make tense expression just when they thought the talk was concluded already. It was only Chief Magdanese who was sending a calm gaze at Emily, like a criminal waiting for the judgment.

The strength of Emily's hand that was clutching the lord's sleeve became stronger. Her figure that was looking down while trembling a bit as though she was holding down a great emotion looked even more painful to look at. But, the first word that were let out from such Emily was strong, it resounded with dignity that made everyone there to be taken aback.

"Don't look down on me."

The gaze of Emily who lifted up her face stared straight from the shoulder of the lord. In that distance where they could feel each other's breathing, there was light other than hatred shining in those eyes of Emily.

"You are asking me that kind of question after finishing the talk, are you testing me? I'll say it one more time. Don't look down on me, Kousuke. I decided to walk this path because I

want to become the strength of someone who is suffering from sickness, because I want to keep alive even if just one person more. There is no way I will trample on the best path you have grasped for me!□

Her voice resounded clearly. That will spread like a ripple. Surely, that will was something that wouldn't lose even against the will to safeguard the country that Chief Magdanese displayed.

□Besides, I don't happen to have a shamelessness that allow me to entrust other with killing people for my own sake. Vanessa that has been helping me all this time, and Kousuke who told me that you will become my strength even though you are not related to this. I absolutely won't make that kind of horrible request to the two of you!□

Her cat eyes glared intensely. She was holding blazing hatred in her chest, however, she didn't mistake her path. This girl would immediately turn small in crisis, she was a scaredy cat, and obstinate, however it was obvious that inside this awfully straightforward girl, there was strength that couldn't be mistaken.

A faint smile emerged on the lips of the lord. Different from the fearless smile that he showed before this, it was a smile that was vaguely fleeting, and gentle. The lord's hand reached toward Emily's head in a natural motion. *pon pon* Light touches were conveyed to Emily.

□Emily. As I thought, you are a good woman.□

□.....Boe!?□

Instant petrification. Next, she turned into a completely ripe tomato when she comprehended what was said to her. The garnish was a weird shocked voice. And then, she noticed

how their face had approached each other until super close range where her lips would be able to touch if she stretched up herself a little, and how she was tightly clutching the lord's arm. She went 'awawa, hawawa' while backing off in shaky footsteps.

And then, she noticed Vanessa who was giving her a thumb up for some reason, Chief Magdanese and the troops who were making complicated expression, and then, her family that was sending her a strangely lukewarm gaze.....□Do, don't loook!□she said while turning small. She crouched, she held her head with both her hands, and then her body was trembling from shame. That figure was truly that of a small animal.

The lord made a pleasant smile at such Emily before his gaze returned to Chief Magdanese.

□That's how it is. Guardian-dono, please, for the sake of this country's safety too, persuade this country with desperation. There is no worth in effort. Result is everything. If anything is going to harm this child and the people at her surrounding, no matter what kind of shape that is——then know this, the abyss swallow everything without exception.□

□.....I know.□

Chief Magdanese nodded quietly at the abnormal killing intent and pressure that were filling the last sentence. And then, she proposed that she would like to dispatch personnel to clean up this place, and prepare a place to talk to each other regarding the organization behind Kimberly.

Indeed, they couldn't just neglect the heaps of corpse, and it was essential to know about the organization behind Kimberly to save Emily completely. And so, the lord accepted that proposal while teaching them one fact.

That fact, was that the number of body bag they needed to prepare was only for Kimberly's comrades. Yes, actually the troops of the special squad, although they all were seriously wounded with their limbs' tendon severed, or their internal organ terribly damaged, but not a single one among them received lethal damage, none of them had died.

Thinking from the beginning that bringing over the security bureau to his side was one of the methods to end this case, the lord left them alive so as not to leave behind seed of future trouble as much as possible. Although, even though the troops felt joy that their comrades survived, at the same time their mind felt down from the terror that they were partially annihilated even when the opponent was holding back that much.....but that was just a trivial matter for the lord.

Now then, for the moment a relationship of cooperation was build with the security bureau and the matter had reached a point where they could pause. It was at this time

The lord, no, Kousuke heard. The sound of *saa—*. It came from inside his body. It seemed that he could hear for real, the sound of blood leaving his face.

Kousuke's hand was moving toward his sunglasses with small shivers. And then he slowly took off his sunglasses with the item clattering *rattle rattle*.

What appeared from behind the sunglasses was a grandly convulsing expression.

Other than the agent who received Chief Magdanese's instruction and made contact for personnel dispatch, everyone there noticed Kousuke's pale expression that was obvious to see even under the faint moonlight. His eccentric atmosphere until just now was vanishing.

Kousuke turned on his heel wordlessly, however, everyone could clearly see his dead eyes. He started to walk unsteadily, and totteringly. Before long he reached the gap between the wall and stair on the building, he flattened himself into the gap and turned small. Just like Emily-chan.

In front of the people whose eyes turned round in wonder, Kousuke buried his face onto his knees and whispered in small but clear voice.

□Someone, please kill me instantly instead.....□

He wished to be beheaded in the middle of the warehouse district.

It seemed that the compensation to become peerless was great.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Actually I wanted to write more about the entanglement when Kousuke returned, yet the time wasss~.

Work of 4 months is seriously bad news.

The next update is planned at 6 P.M Saturday too.

No More, I Want to Go Home.....

AN: I'm sorry.

In the end, just posting the next chapter is the best that I can do.

Just what is golden week I wonder? Does it mean a week of demonic work?

Haha-

Because of that, I'm thinking of putting aside the rewriting and improving the previous chapter for the time being.

If there is anyone holding hope for that, my apologies.

□Hold on! Get a hold of yourself, Kousuke!□

Emily's tragic call that didn't suit the warehouse district at night echoed. Kousuke sat on the floor while hugging his knees, he was staring at empty air with eyes of a dead fish, and a dry smile was pasted on his lips. Emily was holding the collar of such Kousuke while desperately jolting his body back and forth.

Everyone of Grant family was staring at such situation with a bewildered feeling in wonder of what was going on, also, Vanessa too was throwing doubtful gaze at Kousuke who

suddenly became useless, even so she was running her gaze at the surrounding vigilantly in his place.

And then, at the end of her gaze were several bureau staffs and the surviving troops.

Yes, currently there were many bureau staffs in this place. When Chief Magdanese finished her talk with Lord Abyssgate, Kousuke suddenly turned into a state as though he was a stain on the wall. After that Chief Magdanese called in bureau staffs for cleaning up the aftermath.

After all the phrase of heaps of corpse all around perfectly suited this place right now. They couldn't just leave the corpse like that, and the cars Kimberly and his group were riding to this place needed to be confiscated too. They needed extra hands for dealing with all those.

In addition, they needed to share information between the two sides regarding the organization behind Kimberly and also interrogating him. It was for that reason that Chief Magdanese and her group, and also Kousuke and others were remaining here.

Both Kimberly and Allen now looked as though their former handsome look was only an illusion. Their caved-in face was too tragic to look at, and they were still unconscious without even a twitch and the white of their eyes exposed. Several troops were watching over Kimberly, but he looked so atrocious that they questioned "Is this really need to be guarded?".

And so, they were still unable to hold interrogation. Or rather, Kousuke's heart was hurled to far beyond as though he was in the verge of being swallowed into abyss, so currently they couldn't even exchange information with Chief Magdanese. Emily was doing her best so Kousuke

would return to his sanity but.....the damage on Kousuke-san was deep.

Chief Magdanese received treatment of her arm that was drilled by rifle bullet beside a car that was equipped with first-aid facilities, mixed among the injured troops. She was narrowing her eyes at Kousuke who was in such state.

Although they had reconciled, or rather formed cease-fire agreement for the moment, but the other party was the great woman who carried both good and evil in her method. With Kousuke's state where he was currently murmuring broken language "I'm, fine. I'm, working hard. I'm, fine", Vanessa also needed to endure various things and kept watchful eye to the other side.

However, she wished that Kousuke would return to his sanity soon already. And so, looking at Emily who was desperately calling at Kousuke while her arms were circling on his head as though she was going to embrace him, Emily who was starting to reduce the sense of distance into one where it was hard to claim that they were just mere friend, Vanessa gave her advice.

"Doctor Grant. Can I say one thing?"

"Whaaat. Right now I have no free time to look after mere otaku heree!"

"That's impolite to call me a mere otaku. I'm not just an otaku. Even if I'm an otaku, but I'm otaku that is an agent——no, I'm the SOUSAKAN." (TN: Sousakan means investigator in Japanese. All this time when I refer some people from security bureau as agent, the raw was actually calling them as sousakan or investigator. I changed them to agent in the translation though.)

□I don't get it!□

For some reason, Vanessa and Emily pulled a smooth funny man and straight man routine a little bit like a comedy duo. Emily went 'fusha—' like a cat while her gaze insisted□Be quiet a little!□. Of course, Vanessa-san was unstoppable.

□About my god, it appear that his state that was overflowing with awesomeness not long ago, for some reason that I don't understand it put a burden on his mental state. And so, how about trying something that will make my god's feeling to lighten up? Something that will make him happy.□

□That's a good advice you have there.....but you see, let me point out at just one thing! What's with that "my god"!□

Emily Grant didn't fail to notice that opening to be the straight man.

Vanessa showed a really irritating face that seemed to question□Just now, is it really something important?□, even so she explained with the sense of values of good old Japan.

□Doctor Grant. The origin of why I call Kousuke-san as my god come from the tradition and culture of Japan, that is the correct way for displaying respect, because that is a title of honor.□

□Wha, what do you mean?□

□At Japan, people who displayed transcendental skill, producing result that cannot be matched by any other and ought to be given high praise, they would be called "～is god" (TN: Kami in Japan can mean god, but can also mean incredible or fantastic) in praise. Therefore, I'm praising "Kousuke-san is god!", or "Kousuke-san's awesome style is

seriously godly!!” is something that is really natural and par for the course!□

□I, I didn’t know that.....□

Vanessa’s finger snapped out powerfully and pointed to emphasis her claim. Emily’s expression changed just like when she received new knowledge from university lecturer.She didn’t even notice how inside her arms, Kousuke was shot by Vanessa’s word bullets and he convulsed *twitch twitch twitch*.

It seemed that the SOUSAKAN’s mood became pleased looking at Emily’s attitude. Her tongue moved even more fluently.

□Doctor Grant. This is a digression, but at Japan, everyday new gods are being born.□

□Li, lies.....in Japan, there are a lot of people like Kousuke!?□

Emily showed a frightened expression. Her side-tail stood on end. Beside her, the expression of everyone of Grant Family was grandly twitching. The eyes of Chief Magdanese narrowed so thin it looked like string now, and the troops expression turned grim as though to say□Despair!□.

.....It seemed the people of the security bureau were also pricking up their ears and listened really attentively.

Whether she actually knew that or not, Vanessa shrugged her shoulders with over reaction that looked like a certain someone somewhere and said□No no, how can that be□and denied Emily’s words.

□As expected, even Japan(the country of fantasy) won’t have anyone that is in the level of my god. However, it’s the fact

that gods endowed with technique and zeal which shaken the soul exist there.Doctor Grant. Even you should at least hear about it before. The other popular name of that country. Bringing forth gods into existence day after day, this alias display that essence!□

□I, I don't know, I don't know what it is, Vanessa!□

It seemed that the strange switch inside Emily-chan was turned on. Or perhaps, she was simply someone that got easily swept away by the place's atmosphere. Speaking in term of story tale, then she was definitely in the category of easy heroine. (TN: Easy heroine is those heroine in the story that easily fall to the main character just because of a bit of kind words or gesture, or sometimes without any clear reason at all)

Vanessa who obtained amazingly excellent audience was showered by the support light that was the moonlight while she raised one hand to her chest, her other hand was spread widely, and with an air as though she was an actress on stage, she made the alias of the country she would forever love to resound.

□People, call that country like this. —The country where eight million gods are born.□

□That's not it-. Apologize to the sense of values of the good old Japan! You representative of misunderstood foreigner!□

That statement of Vanessa was really too much this time, which caused Kousuke to flew out from the bottom of the abyss like a launched missile. He reflexively stood up while roaring angrily. Emily also got carried up to standing position by his momentum, she said□Standing! Kousuke is standing!□which sounded like a joke material while revealing her joy.

□Congratulations of your revival, my go——□

Vanessa immediately fell on her knee with a thud and bowed like a retainer revering her lord, but her words were cut off in the middle. By *hyu-* the sound of cutting wind and the wind pressure grazing her cheek.

□Oi, Danessa. The next time you call me “my god” again.....I won’t miss.□(TN: Danessa, in the raw, the katakana of ‘Va’ here is replaced with the kanji of ‘da’ which could mean, worthless, hopeless, useless, etc. Sorry, but I cannot think up any fitting translation to English for this)

A cold sweat smoothly trickled down Vanessa’s temple while she quietly looked across her shoulder. There, she could see a jet black kunai stabbed deeply on the ground. But, she wouldn’t get discouraged by something of that level. Such thing didn’t fit for this SOUSAKAN!

□.....Then, I’ll call you master.□

□Why!? Isn’t it fine if you keep calling me “Kousuke-san” the same as always!?□

□No, there is no way I can do that. As a person begging for teaching, I wish to take up an attitude that adequately express that!□

□Somehow I’m feeling amazing spirit from you though. Somehow it feels a bit scary though. Or rather, begging for teaching?□

□Yes. Please accept me as pupil by any means!□

□This development, is unexpected!□

The spirit of Danessa-san was full to the brim. After a total of five minutes explanation that hit Kousuke like surging wave.....in short, she was awfully moved by Kousuke's strength, so please accept me as a pupil by any means, something like that it seemed.

To expand further, Vanessa was giving her explanation with enthusiasm that was at the peak of the peak, so it went without saying that a lethal wound was dealt once more on Kousuke's shame.

She said how magnificent the pose of Lord Abyssgate while reproducing it with a perfectly copied motion, she also chuckled 'fuh' while saying "The moon tonight is wonderful!"..... Kousuke was covering his face with both hands while shaking his head screaming "Stoop! Please, stop it alreadyyy!".

"Why a pupil huh. I don't get how your thought process is working anymore."

"I think that if anyone witness that numerous techniques which look like Japanese ninja, it's only natural that they will want to receive teaching though....."

"Have some self-awareness. The natural that Vanessa is saying is generally unnatural you know. Or rather, you are an agent of security bureau right? What are you going to do about that huh?"

Kousuke averted his face looking unpleasant after seeing Vanessa's fierily sparkling gaze while gently giving his refusal.

Vanessa glanced at Chief Magdanese before for some reason she went "fuh" with a smile that looked really irritating. Chief Magdanese's eyes twitched in reaction.

□In the first place, I entered security bureau because I thought that□Isn't something like an agent that fight against evil really cool?□□

□That motive is like elementary student huh.....□

□Even after I safely became an agent, my heart was throbbing from thinking□Won't I get dragged into national conspiracy I wonder?□while I went through the days.□

□Your way of thinking is seriously like an elementary student.□

Chief Magdanese covered her eyes with one hand. Her emotion could be easily guessed. There were several of the troops averted their eyes a bit and others that sent Vanessa lukewarm gaze. Surely they were the same kind with this Danessa.

□I was moved when I met with the chief the first time. She is the living legend that handed down swift yet cool-headed judgment, when I actually met her and felt her atmosphere on my skin, I thought□Eh, what, isn't this a real-life M!□. I instantly decided then. □Yosh, I'll become a real 007□□

□Oo~i, chief-sa~n! It seems that this otaku SOUSAKAN wanted to become your 007!□

Chief Magdanese whispered□.....The Paradis that I knew, was just an illusion□with a tired expression. And then, when she averted her gaze away as though to say that she couldn't bear to see any more than this, ahead of her gaze she witnessed the troops and bureau staffs who were giving out air that said□Yep yep, I get that~□. Her cheeks were twitching grandly.

□However, yes, However! I had seen it! I had known it! That there are things in this world that not ought to be known! Yes, it's you!□

□Guhah. I, I let my guard down. It all came back at once.□

□Compared to master's awesomeness, this M wannabe chief is just too shabby. What I should aim for is right here! Master, I beg you. Please, accept me as your pupil.□

Saying that, Danessa-san bowed her head. As for the chief-san, after getting arbitrarily treated as fictional character, getting expectation arbitrarily put on her, and in the end she was called as shabby, she pulled out her handgun with gaze that was like tundra. Seeing that, the squad captain beside her held her from behind while saying□Ca, calm down-, chieef!□to stop her.

While sending a glance to that commotion, Kousuke who was given petition from someone to be his pupil for the first time on his life sighed loudly while saying a word.

□Rejected.□

He cut down the request resolutely.

However, it seemed that Vanessa had predicted that from the beginning. She nodded once without looking particularly losing her composure. And then, she spoke a request that she seemed to have prepared beforehand, or rather this one seemed to be her heart's actual desire.

□Then, please sleep with me.□

□Your crypticness just know no bound there! What are you saying!? Just what the hell you are saying!?!□

□Vanessa!? Wha wha wha wha, what is your intention!?!□

Kousuke was greatly shaken, while Emily who was previously in a daze from the exchange between Vanessa and Kousuke was revived in one shot.

Vanessa was explaining with her gaze staring at Kousuke without any trace of shame in it, rather her gaze was like a hunter aiming at a prey. According to her explanation, the point was if it was impossible for her to become a pupil then 'I will become your woman!', something like that. If she received the privilege to stay at his side like that, later she would steal his technique by herself, she said.

□Impure! That's impure-, Vanessa! So, something like that, if it's not properly between two people who love each other——□

□No, Doctor Grant. I wish that you won't misunderstand me like that. I won't offer this body just for the sake of my objective whatever it is. I have fallen in love normally. Or rather, I have gotten wet.□

□W, we, weeeet——□

Emily-chan buried her face on Kousuke's shoulder. Her face when bright red until not only her ears, but even until her neck. And then, the confession that was too much of a straight ball caused Kousuke to forget the hopelessness of his talking partner temporarily and he unconsciously turned red.

□Please don't worry, Kousuke-san. Perhaps I don't look like it, but actually I'm a devoted woman.□

□N, no, even if you appeal at me like that. In the first place, you see, I actually——□

□Tha, that's right! For Kousuke and Vanessa, such thing is.....no good! It's absolutely no good!□

Kousuke was about to say□have a lover□, but Emily-chan who was on her absolute limit pulled tightly on Kousuke. She embraced him as though to cover him, or possibly to claim that she wouldn't let him get taken away, while her almond-shaped eyes glared really threateningly.

□Please don't worry, Doctor Grant. I'm completely okay even just as a mistress.□

□Thi, this is not that kind of problem!□

Vanessa-san's freedom was unstoppable. The bureau staffs who were working hard at dealing with the corpses laying all over the place without getting any late night overtime pay already stopped still. They were gazing fixedly at the conversation of Kousuke and co. With bloodshot eyes, and shaking fist, and then, curses that were leaking out unintelligibly.

□E, excuse me. Can I interrupt a little?□

In the middle of the growing pandemonium, a timid voice called at them. Looking toward that voice, Emily's father Carl was staring at Kousuke, Emily, and Vanessa with a really complicated expression feeling unsure of what to say.

□That, Abyssgate-san, should I call you that?□

□It's Kousuke. Are you listening? My name is Kousuke.□

Father Carl's natural mentioning of Abyssgate caused the mini Kousuke inside his heart to vomit out blood. Even while he was plainly eating damage, Kousuke vigorously pressed

on to correct Carl. Father Carl nodded obediently at that even while he was feeling creeped out.

□Err, Kousuke-san. First, let me say my gratitude. You are the benefactor of Grant family. If it's something that I can possibly do, then please ask anything from me so I can express my thanks to you. I won't inquire about that mysterious power of yours. Surely there are various circumstances about that..... But, there is one thing that I want you to tell me no matter what.Just what is your relationship with my daughter? You two look really intimate with each other.....□

Color of awkwardness was residing inside the gaze of father Carl. That gaze was seeing the figure of his beloved daughter who was hugging Kousuke firmly even now.

There, it seemed that Emily finally noticed how she was clinging all over Kousuke. She raised her voice□Awah!?□ while backing away with her hands going banzai. (TN: Like when people yell banzai, they will raise their hands high)

□Aa~, no, it's not, our relationship is not like what Carl-san is thinking. I am just her bodyguard, just a friend.□

□Friend, is it.....□

Carl's gaze was directed to his daughter once again. He could see the vision of dark cloud with sound effect *doyoo~n* behind Emily. She was obviously feeling down when she heard "just a friend" said so easily. Even if he wasn't her father, it was completely clear that Emily wasn't thinking of Kousuke as just a mere friend anymore.

Father Carl made a complicated expression at that condition of his beloved daughter. And then the one that threw a stone and caused ripples there, was obviously this person.

□Kousuke-san. The way you are saying that is just too much. Even though Doctor Grant had already offered her precious thing(peeing).....□

□Offering her precious thing!? E, Emily! What is the meaning of this!? Explain it to your father!□

□Yo, you are wrong, father! That, isn't something like that.....that was because Kousuke was mean to me, it couldn't be helped at all!□

□Wha-. You are saying that your precious thing was stolen because you got bullied!? Su, such thing.....□

Emily's cheeks were dyed red from shame and she turned small. It was her usual style, but right now, in this place, it also could be seen as a girl who crouched down because she got hurt. Actually even Emily's mama Sophia went□Emily! Aa, you are trembling like this, how pitiful!□and hugged her tightly with tragic expression.

As for Kousuke,□"Being mean" and "bullying" has really different nuance there!□he made a retort inside his heart, but it was the fact that he acted mean and shamed Emily because of that, so he was hesitating of what to say. He absolutely didn't do atrocious thing like what Carl and Sophia were imagining but..... Or rather, it was him who got dirtied that time.....

The gaze of father Carl who was desperately holding down his rage was cornering mini Kousuke inside his heart.

□Abyssgate-san. You are my family's benefactor. My words that I want to repay you with anything that I can possibly do aren't a lie. But, but-, please spare just my daughter! Like this-! Please, I beg you don't shame my daughter more than

this-!□(TN: The word shame here can also mean rape or violate in Japanese)

□You are wrong! It's a misunderstanding! I'm telling you I'm not that kind of brute!□

Starting from Chief Magdanese, the bureau staffs were all giving Kousuke cold gaze. It was as though they were looking at a criminal.

After that, the misunderstanding was resolved somehow by Kousuke's desperate justification, and the flustered words of Emily who noticed that an outrageous misunderstanding had been generated.

Although, because of the fault of Danessa who put in timely interruption with mistaken good intentions, the misunderstanding that Japan was overflowing with boys who hungered for "reward" from beautiful girl permeated not just Grant family, but even until the bureau staffs. In the end, Emily's blunder of wetting her pants became known far and wide and her soul embarked on a journey. When Kousuke consoled her, seeing that and thinking that the two would go into a relationship by themselves, Danessa casually added in her mistress application. Kousuke was flustered by himself with□This isn't affair! This isn't an affair at all!□.....

Through this and that kind of ruckus, the cleaning up of the site somehow was finished, and finally, really finally the discussion between Kousuke and co with Chief Magdanese's group could start. It was at that time, one of the bureau staff that was holding a communication device rushed toward Chief Magdanese.

From the condition of that staff who had tense expression on his face, it seemed that some kind of uncommon situation was occurring.

The staff handed over the communication device that seemed to be connected to somewhere, to Chief Magdanese who was looking doubtful.

□Chief. This is the smartphone recovered from Kimberly. The caller said to hand it over to you.□

□.....I see. The preparation?□

□All okay. But, it's likely the other side is taking countermeasures. Please prolong the talk as much as possible.□

□I know. Everyone, don't make any sound. I'll put it into speaker.□

Chief Magdanese accepted the smartphone that was put on hold and quickly gave instruction. Nervousness spread between the staffs and troops. From the situation, it seemed that the organization behind Kimberly was attempting to contact them. The call was put on speaker so that Kousuke and others could grasp the situation too.

The one at the other side of the call most likely was the organization that was the ringleader of everything. Perhaps they finally contacted the phone because there was no result report from Kimberly or because he failed to make contact regularly.

Emily's expression vanished, Danessa returned into Vanessa, and Kousuke's eyes quietly narrowed.

Inside the back of the car that was loaded with specialized equipment, one of the staffs wearing a headphone made OK sign. Chief Magdanese nodded once and pushed the call button.

□This is Sharon Magdanese, the chief of national security bureau. You are?□

□How do you do, chief-done. Although it's only through a phone, it's an honor that I can talk with a living legend like you. I, let's see.....can I ask you to call me Odin?□

□.....Pretending to be the chief god of Norse Mythology? It's really painful listening to you trying to match your theme with Berserk's naming like that.□

For some reason Kousuke pressed on his chest. Vanessa's lips grinned broadly just for an instant. But, right now was a serious time, so everyone cordially ignored them.

□How biting. As expected from the iron woman who has shouldered the country's safety for many years until now. Even though I granted Kimberly-kun quite a lot of man power, but as expected it seems that it's too heavy of a burden for him to be your opponent.□

□Enough with the idle talk. Get straight to the point.□

□It's really sad that you are lacking in playfulness.....well, I guess it's fine. I only have one demand. Hand over Emily Grant that the security bureau is sheltering.□

Emily's shoulders shook from shock. Seeing that, Carl and Sophie nestled close to her and gave her a hug to support her.

□Do you think, that I'll comply with that demand?□

□You have no choice but to comply. If not, berserkers will raise the first cry of their birth in the middle of city. Just like this□

Right after that,

“a, Ga, aAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA!!”

A shriek resounded in the warehouse district at night. Everyone was startled and their gaze moved toward the source of the roar.

Over there, there was the figure of Kimberly convulsing fiercely with the white of his eyes still exposed. The handcuff restraining his hand on his back was raising creaking sound, displaying how great the pressure that was being put to it.

“Get back! Everyone get back! Take distance and surround him in half-circle!”

The chief’s order resounded and the troops moved simultaneously. The staffs were also moving quickly even with uneasy look emerging on their face so that they wouldn’t be a hindrance for the special squad.

Everyone understood. The abnormal state of Kimberly was the symptom of him transforming into berserker. But, their expression was overflowing with bewilderment and doubt. That couldn’t be helped. Kimberly wasn’t seen consuming the drug of “Berserk”. If someone was dashed with the drug, then they would turn into berserker in a matter of seconds. The question was how could Kimberly who was in restrain was now displaying the symptom in this timing.

Kousuke and Vanessa shifted their position to protect Emily and Grant family while taking wait-and-see stance. During that time, Kimberly finally tore off the metallic shackle using his enlarged body and reinforced muscle.

“oOOOOOOOOOOOOOOO!!”

Kimberly whose looks now had overreached a little bit too much from being wild-type, glared at the surrounding with bloodshot eyes. No one understood how Kimberly suddenly turned into berserker, even so it didn't change the situation that there was a threat before them.

Therefore, the captain was about to give the shooting order.

□Kimberly-kun. Thank you for the great demonstration.
You can die already now.□

□Gih, gah!?!□

The voice of the man who introduced himself as Odin streamed out from the phone speaker. It was a death sentence that sounded really light. The next moment, Kimberly who even now was deciding of which prey to attack suddenly twitched and convulsed, and then it began to writhe in agony while raising anguished voice.

While everyone was feeling baffled, white smoke was raising from the whole body of Kimberly and his body was enlarged even further while unpleasant sound *book book* could be heard. And then, the next moment when his body height reached three meter, he dried up and shriveled all at once like a balloon that was leaking out air.

□.....This is.....Berserk overdose?□

Emily whispered in a daze. The symptom occurring in Kimberly's body was exactly as Emily diagnosed. It was indeed due to Berserk overdose.

□What, did you do?□

With an expressionless gaze, Chief Magdanese was staring at her former subordinate who was meeting his end in an

excessively gruesome fashion while she threw a question at the smartphone she was holding.

□You can guess can't you? It's not something that is especially difficult. A capsule filled with normal dose of Berserk, and another capsule made from concentrated Berserk that is three times the amount for overdose, those capsules were set so they would broke using remote control, then I made Kimberly-kun swallowed them. Even without antidote, I can dispose him using overdose, that's how it is.□

Odin's words caused most people to be speechless. Even calling this man as inhuman still felt lacking. This act should be called as fiendish among the fiendish. But, Odin continued his speech as though to say that there was no need to even pay attention to something like that.

□Now then, I think you understand already, but if you refuse to hand over Emily Grant, perhaps a berserker will suddenly appear in a city somewhere. You know, I have faith that you who is shouldering the safety of this country will not commit any foolish action that will lead to that.□

□No negotiation with terrorist. That is the international practice.□

□Terrorist? Let's not make a joke. I am a businessman. I'm merely doing the best I can for the sake of profit. This is a transaction. I think it's only common sense for the side that makes the proposal to obtain advantage in the negotiation.□

□.....□

Chief Magdanese fell silent. This man didn't think of anything about murder. No matter how many sacrifice would result, if it was for his own profit then he would surely discard everything. Her abundant experience told her that

Odin's warped and broken sense of values was the real thing.

She felt a slight hesitation. The figure of Kousuke was reflected in Chief Magdanese's quietly opened eyes. He was staring straight back at Chief Magdanese.

Next, Chief Magdanese looked at Grant family. Carl and Sophia who were hugging Emily close were looking so pale they looked like they could faint anytime, their expression was a grievous one. But, as for the daughter in question Emily,

□.....□

□.....□

There was no word. For a moment, Emily's gaze moved away from Chief Magdanese toward Kousuke at her side. And then, within a moment, a small smile emerged on her lips. Like that, flame was blazing within the eyes that returned toward Chief Magdanese. It was flame of rage and resolve. That passion was certainly conveyed toward Chief Magdanese.

□Fine. I'll hand over Emily Grant.□

Carl and Sophia were about to protest loudly with despairing expression, but Emily herself stopped them.

□That's a heroic decision, chief-dono.□

Odin's voice turned slightly lively. His superiority complex oozed out from being put on an overwhelmingly dominant position.

After that, Odin told them the delivery place and the method of delivery before cutting off the communication.

□How is it?□

□.....I'm sorry. We were led astray by dummy.□

Chief Magdanese returned a brief□I see□to the vexed staff. It seemed she really didn't expect much from that venue. In exchange, her gaze captured Kousuke.

□And? What will you do?□

Kousuke shrugged. He looked back across his shoulder at Emily. No word was exchanged between the two. But, when Kousuke nodded with a grin, Emily smiled softly without even a speck of unease there.

Kousuke who turned toward Chief Magdanese again then smiled fearlessly while saying.

□The other side expressly showed their tail to us. There is no reason to stay quiet isn't it? This is where both sides alternate the offense and defense turn. I am the hunting dog, and they are the prey. It's time to punish them grandly.□

Chief Magdanese sent a brief glance at the shivering Vanessa before making a deep sigh, and then she whispered with a faint smile.

□Hunting dog? Call yourself Fenrir instead. I'm feeling like going along with that god make-believe, just for a bit.□

The troops who seemed to catch that whisper were smiling wryly while nodding. Vanessa-san was sending Chief Magdanese a gaze that seemed to say□Even the chief can also speak a really excellent line huh□.

.....For some reason, Chief Magdanese felt like she wanted to go home very much.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Postscript

I also wrote this at my activity report but, the latest chapter of the comic version was updated.

I put the activity report late at night, so just to be sure, I reported it here too.

Kaorin is super heroine, so if you have interest, please try to have a look at Overlap-sama's homepage without fail.

The next update is planned at 6 P.M Saturday too.

**Salmon Sandwich is
Justice**

Part 1

It was the time when the sun was reaching the peak, when warm could be felt even in this chilly air.

It was also the time for afternoon break. Places like café and the likes in the downtown were showing bustling situation as suits the occasion with housewives and company employees.

In one of such café, the wooden building complemented with furniture, table, and chair that were similarly made from wood brought out chic calm atmosphere. It was an old shop that was locally famous. Kousuke was there.

The inside of the café was spacious. Even the second floor was usable, which was rare for an old shop. About a third of the café starting from the entrance was used as atrium, so someone standing near the banister at the second floor could observe well the situation at the first floor. Kousuke and co were sitting around the table near the banister at that second floor.

□Britain has strong image of bad food, but delicious shop is normally delicious isn't it?□

□Kousuke.....it's not like I'm saying that it's bad, but what are you doing eating normally like that? Even though this is a place that the enemy designated.....□

Kousuke was stuffing his cheeks enthusiastically with salmon sandwich, one of the specialties of this café. Seeing

that, Emily made a troubled expression while she took a sip at her own tea that had been mixed with a lot of milk.

□Isn't it fine, Doctor Grant. He doesn't lose his presence of mind in any kind of time. As expected from Kousuke-san. I'm getting wet.□

□Paradis, please bear the TPO in mind. I'll arrest you for public obscenity.□

Vanessa who in a glance looked serious with her crisp expression ran her mouth saying such obscene thing. Before her partner Emily could make a retort as the straight man, an intensely chilly warning was given. It was Chief Magdanese who was drinking black tea with a composed atmosphere.

Yesterday, after they received contact from the mastermind who introduced himself as Odin, a mail that detailed of the time and place to hand over Emily Grant was sent to the smartphone Kimberly left behind.

It was this place. It was a bit unexpected for the delivery to be done in this café at the afternoon when it was overflowing with people, but when an additional instruction that Chief Magdanese would be the one doing the handing over at that place, this method could be said very clever.

The habitual practice for something like this would be for Emily alone to be present at the designated place, but naturally the enemy would be on guard against tracking measure. And then what they would be worried about the most was in a case that a countermeasure that was beyond mere tracking measure was applied.

Yes, they feared that the security bureau would take step to erase Emily. It was hard to imagine that the security bureau

would let go of Emily under their very nose to the hand of the enemy after they knew the value of "Berserk". In this situation, such last measure had to be kept in mind.

Emily going alone to the designated place where she then got retrieved by the enemy, if here she wasn't attached with tracking measure but explosive instead..... Honestly, that would be unbearable. Even the enemy was a creature that belonged in darkness, that was why they knew about how lacking in mercy Chief Magdanese was.

But, if they designated a place that was crowded like this, and furthermore they made Chief Magdanese to also attend, then as expected even Chief Magdanese wouldn't be able to take that kind of measure without doubt. And then, they would ascertain that Emily really didn't carry anything unnecessary at the scene of the handing over.

By the way, Kousuke and Vanessa attending the handing over were due to Chief Magdanese's instruction. Naturally the enemy instructed for Chief Magdanese to do the handing over alone, but it seemed that she would take a stance of "I brought them by mistake. It can't be helped that they are here right?".

Kousuke wasn't even hiding himself, but from the perspective of the enemy who was desiring Emily so much that hand could grasp out from their throat, it seemed that they wouldn't be able to do anything other than complaining about instruction violation of this level. Leaving that aside, it was better for Kousuke and Vanessa to be at Emily's side to show that they weren't yes-man, and also as the support Emily's heart.

Although, honestly, putting aside Kousuke, perhaps it was a bit of failure to let Vanessa attend too. That was what Chief

Magdanese was thinking.

□And, it's okay that you are entranced by the salmon sandwich but, what about the surrounding's state, Mr. Abyssgate?□

□It's Kousuke. Are you listening? My name is Kousuke, okay, chief-san.□

□Yes, I understand Mr. Abyssgate. And? There isn't any report about something suspicious from the deployed personnel, but I wonder if there is anyone suspicious slipping in the crowd?□

□.....The plump middle-aged man in grey suits entering the café just now, and the emaciated middle-aged female arriving right now. It's vague, but they are looking strangely nervous for someone who only arrived for lunch.□

Chief-san didn't change the way she called him no matter how many times he said it. Perhaps she was unexpectedly bearing grudge from getting her prided squad half-destroyed. She gave no damn at the reproachful gaze of Kousuke. While pretending to drink her black tea, using a receiver attached on her arm cuff, she called the attention of the personnel that were standing by without showing even a bit of unnatural sign.

Emily who was smiling faintly seeing that exchange then sighed a bit. It was as though she was unraveling her breathing that she didn't realize was tense. Kousuke who sharply noticed that moved her reproachful gaze from Chief Magdanese toward Emily.

□What's the matter Emily? As I thought, are you feeling scared?□

It seemed Emily was happy that Kousuke noticed the small change in herself. She returned a soft smile at Kousuke's worried gaze. Inside that smile, there was heat that were unmistakably filled with immense trust and an even more immense special feeling that could be peeked on in a glance.

□I'm fine Kousuke. I was a bit tense, but I'm not scared or anything. Because Kousuke is staying at my side. Surely this spot is the safest place in the world.□

□Uh huh.□

Kousuke replied curtly. However that wasn't because he was apathetic, but because he was shy from the trust and good will that a beautiful girl were sending to him without any doubt. His faintly red ears showed that more eloquently than anything.

By the way, the people of Grant family were currently safeguarded in the truest meaning at a facility of the security bureau. The elites of security bureau and Kousuke's clone body were standing on guard there, so it could be said to be completely safe. That too made it so no unease and fear existed in Emily's heart.

□I'm also not scared you know, Kousuke-san. I believe in you. I love you.□

□Wait Vanessa! What are you saying out of nowhere! It's no good if you say something like that so lightly!□

Vanessa-san nonchalantly confessed her love with extremely serious expression. Emily's cheeks turned red while she retorted, or rather she intimidated. The voice of her heart □Get your hand away from my Kousuke!□felt like it was audible somehow.

Kousuke who got good will directed at him from two women was troubled, about should he convey the truth that he couldn't properly say since last night due to the all the mess—that actually he had a beloved lover who his heart had decided on. No, he definitely should tell them about it, but the problem was choosing the timing.

Just what kind of change would occur in Emily's mental state if Rana's existence was shed light on at this series of events that showed no sign of stopping..... It was a matter that ought to be informed to her quickly, but in the worst case it would bring about bad influence at the situation from here on.

Even while Kousuke kept worrying 'uu~n', he saw how the straight (?) confession of Vanessa who knew no shame was causing Emily's face to turn red before she shook her head with her side-tail shaking left and right, her mind worriedly thinking 'Uu, is it better if I properly speak out too? But, that's really embarrassing!'. That caused him to determine himself that it was better to say it clearly with urgency.

'He, hey, Emily.'

'Whaaat, Kousuke.'

Emily-chan's cheeks loosened up broadly in a smile, as though she was happy only from getting called. There was a theory that it was easy for man and woman who were sharing dangerous situation to convert the nervousness they felt at that time into emotion of love, but in Emily's case, it seemed that theory was spot on. As expected from an easy heroine.

Seeing how Emily was like that, Kousuke went 'Uuh' with his words got hitched inside his throat. From Emily who was waiting for Kousuke's words, he could see the vision of dog

ears on Emily's head and a dog tail on Emily's lower back. Those visions were shaken to left and right so energetically. She looked like a loyal dog that was waiting for her owner's word.

—Genius girl wearing lab coat, cat eyes, blond hair, side-tail, charisma guard, peeing girl, straight-man attribute, easy heroine. And then, loyal dog attribute toward someone she liked.

Just how many attributes she was planning to increase.....

Honestly speaking, the figure of Emily waiting for his words with wide smile was really lovely and charming. But, exactly because of that, that Kousuke resolved himself and opened his mouth.

□Yo, you see, I, actually—□

□They are coming. Stop with the youthful scene there, focus yourself.□

Chief Magdanese's cool voice interrupted him decisively. Kousuke's cheeks were twitching. Emily's expression turned puzzled, but she immediately tensed her expression.

Chief Magdanese and Vanessa were looking at downstairs. There were three men wrapped in black suit and coat. Their expression couldn't be understood because of the sunglasses they were wearing, but their atmosphere was obviously different from civilian. Those who understood would understand. These three had heavy air coiling around them, air of someone used to immorality and violence.

The three men were slowly looking over inside the café, and then they noticed the gaze of Chief Magdanese looking down at them from the second floor and they lifted the

corner of their lips. And then, they climbed the stairs that connected to the second floor.

□Hmph? Chief-san, what is the meaning of this?□

□Is there any problem?□

One of the men stood still and shifted his sunglasses while glaring at *Vanessa*. But, Chief Magdanese calmly replied to the question, and so the man only snorted before sitting down on an empty chair. The other two were sitting on the chair at the neighboring table.

The moment the man sat down, his gaze crawled all over Emily without any reservation. Emily looked aside without even hiding her disgusted look. And then, perhaps because it was his habit, the man snorted again. And then without even asking permission, he took the ginger ale Kousuke ordered and drank the content in one gulp.

□Well, no matter. Our side won't make any complain if you hand over Emily Grant to us. I think you understand, but don't have any stupid idea. Including tracking.□

The man lightly lifted his hand. In response, one of the men took out a small device from his breast pocket. And then, he pointed that device at Emily. It seemed that it was something to search for transmitter.

At the same time, the man took out something square from his breast pocket. It looked like a Zippo lighter which made *kin-* sound when its lid was opened. Inside it wasn't anything like incendiary apparatus, but a button.

□It's interesting isn't it? Just by scattering a bit of bait to cornered people, they will do anything you want. Just with a single cheque, they will believe shady words like being test

subject for new nutrients and swallow unknown thing. They will even obediently follow sudden cryptic instruction to go into this café for example.□

The speech of the man who was putting on a warped smile caused Emily to grit her teeth audibly and Vanessa to glare wrathfully. Needless to say, the man meant that people who had taken capsule-type Berserk were inside this café. And then, the detonator that looked like lighter the man was holding could destroy the capsule and transformed those people into berserker that wouldn't be able to go back to normal. In the middle of this crowded café with the sun high in the sky.

The man pretended to tremble at Emily and Vanessa's wrath.

□It doesn't seem like you are that Odin. And then, what are you going to do after taking away Doctor Grant? You will make her create the antidote, cause pandemic of□Berserk□ to outbreak, and then make a killing in profit.....by that point of time you will be tracked down you know? It will be the same even if you sell it to some organization somewhere in the underworld. Do you think you will be able to get away from the security bureau?□

□Who knows. That's not something that lowly bunch like us will know. That will be boss's decision. Now then, we also cannot keep making pointless talk. How about we excuse ourselves soon?□

The man directed his gaze at the man who was checking for tracking device. The man who seemed to finish already his checking shook his head and reported that he found nothing. The first man nodded in satisfaction hearing that and he put his hand on Emily's shoulder. *twitch*, Emily's

body trembled, not from shock or fear, but simply from disgust.

Vanessa was about to reflexively drive off that hand, but then the man showed off the lighter detonator.

He showed——

□Kufuh□

□Puh□

□Fufuh□

Vanessa spontaneously snorted. Emily also averted her face with her shoulders shaking. And in a very rare occasion, even Chief Magdanese had a small smile on her lips.

That couldn't be helped. After all what the man was lifting with expression of contempt that was full of sense of superiority as though to say 'you cannot do anything can't you huh' was.....

A salmon sandwich.

Furthermore, it was a remain of one that had been eaten until a size that was about the same with the lighter, a bite-sized salmon sandwich. It was accompanied with a lot of splendid bite mark.

□!?!□

The man raised a soundless voice of shock and threw that salmon sandwich to the ground. And then, he stood up while kicking down the chair before taking one, two step away from Chief Magdanese and co.

□You bitches, screwing around with me!□

The man immediately guessed that the detonator had been replaced when he didn't notice, and that the perpetrator must be Vanessa who was attending here for some reason. He was about to take out something from his breast pocket. Most likely it was a spare detonator.

The man quickly took that out and thrust it forward threateningly.

Yes, it was a bite-sized salmon sandwich.

□What the hell!?□

Emily, Vanessa, and Chief Magdanese burst out□pufuh□once again. Hearing that, the man turned beet red from shame and confusion.

□Oi-! Take out the spare! Blow up the first and the second!□

The man ordered the third man. It seemed that the third man was also in possession of the detonator. A spare on top of spare. They were really prepared.

Although, there was no response from the third man toward the first man's order. The reason was

□Oi-. You listening!? Quickly——wait, why the hell you bastard stuffing your mouth with salmon sandwich huh!?□

Yes, the third man had his mouth stuffed full with salmon sandwich. The first man was enraged and he gripped the shoulder of his subordinate who got the sauce of salmon sandwich trickling down from the corner of his mouth, and he pulled him up forcefully.

Then, with a shake the third man fell face-up limply, exposing his face, the white of his eyes were laid bare with

salmon sandwich still filling his mouth. The man unconsciously raised his voice "Oo!?" in shock and backed away. *thud* A sound came from behind him and he turned around in reaction.

Over there was,

"You got salmon sandwich too!?"

As expected, there he saw another of his subordinate fainted with salmon sandwich stuffing his mouth and the white of his eyes exposed. In addition, both of his hands were joined together on his chest for some reason, like a corpse that was put inside a coffin.

"What, what is happening——"

"Isn't it simple? The salmon sandwich of this café is just too delicious. So much so that the moment they ate it, they ascended to heaven. That's all."

"-!?"

Hearing the unknown voice resounding from right behind him, the man twitched while turning around. Over there he saw Kousuke stuffing his mouth elegantly (?) with salmon sandwich. He might be transformed halfway to Lord Abyssgate, because even though his attire was still the same but he was wearing sunglasses.

While the man stiffened seeing the unfamiliar Japanese young man with the strange atmosphere, Kousuke called "Isn't that right?" to a young female waitress stiffening in slight distance away due to the commotion, looking for agreement.

The waitress who suddenly got attention directed at her shook her head left and right forcefully while strongly denying “Our salmon sandwich is not that delicious!”. Surely she meant to imply that ‘No one will want to eat sandwich that send people to heaven!’.....

That voice of the waitress that unexpectedly resounded really well reached the first floor. A middle-aged man that seemed to be the shop manager looked up in wonder about what was going on there. Seeing the beautiful vein emerging on that man’s head, it seemed that the waitress’s implication wasn’t conveyed correctly to him. The future of the girl’s employment in this café from here on was in doubt.

“Yo, you think you can get away by doing something like this? We are not the only one carrying detonator you know? Even now, this place——”

“Are you talking about the five men who monitored this place? Or perhaps, about the people who *were* watching the image being sent by the hidden camera set up inside the café? If it’s them, then right now they should be heading to a special hotel escorted by the kindly considerate troops I think. Everyone is sound asleep. It seems they cannot stand their everyday exhausting work. Don’t you think that your company is too black?” (TN: Black company = a company that exploit its employee too much)

“I, impossible.....”

The man tried to take out a communication device from his pocket in panic.

.....What came out was a salmon sandwich.

Also, the one that made the enemy observing this café from outside to faint was of course Kousuke. The hidden cameras

inside the café were searched around by Kousuke in full invisibility last night, while the bureau staffs traced the communication channel and determined the location of the observers.

During the time Kousuke was searching for hidden camera, the enemy force that was observing the café in case the bureau was setting up something to the building sometimes witnessed black shadow displayed in the camera out of nowhere. They all shrieked in complete chaos yelling things like "Tha, that's Shadowman! This is the first time I saw it!" or "Lies.....even though I shouldn't have any supernatural sense" or "AMEN-, AMEEEN-!".

Even when Kousuke normally entered their room, they were replaying the recorded video while,

"Don't you think this will be big money if we bring it to TV station?"

"Wa, wait. This is the real Shadowman you know? I, heard something before. That there are dangerous guys researching something like this."

"Aa, I also heard that from mummy. In this world, there is occultist group who is extremely fond for something like this, so be careful she said. She also said, that even if you see it, just pretend you never saw anything. If not, you are going to get kidnapped somewhere, and turned into sacrifice for black magician."

"Seriously.....it's scary, this underworld organization....."

They said things like that to each other while making a fuss. It went without saying that Kousuke made a retort "No, you color is different, but you guys are also members of underworld organization".

And then, Kousuke who was suddenly driven up by mischievous heart took how he was unnoticed as a good opportunity and he tried to cause several bizarre phenomenon. For example he made the door to open and close on its own accord, then he made knocking sound from outside the window, and kidnapped them one by one unnoticed, and wrote "next is you" using magic on the monitor while the panicked people didn't notice, and so on, and in the end, he twined steel thread on the legs of one of them, and pulled that person out from the room.....

The expression of the remaining people who were witnessing the figure of their comrade screaming while reaching out his hand to them, however, it went in vain and he was pulled by something unseen and disappeared deep in the corridor..... those were expression that had trauma completely planted in it.

And then, the bureau staffs that were watching that from the side exploded in laughter all at once. It also went without saying that Chief Magdanese covered her face with both hands while sighing.

All the enemies fell into the bottom of terror, in addition they were perfectly apprehended. Kousuke who accomplished that was welcomed by all the bureau staffs with high five and "Iyahha—!". Seeing that, Chief Magdanese whispered "I should just go home already". It could be seen how tired she was from that.

Now then, putting aside Chief Magdanese who was having a faraway look from remembering the event that gave her headache last night, the man who possessed nothing but salmon sandwich and whose comrades were annihilated without him noticing was drenched with cold sweat while he tried to turn around.

□Well, don't be in such a hurry. I'm thinking of making you as our guide. That's why, it will be troubling if you go home by yourself.□

□Gu, guide you say? To boss's place? Hah, that's pointless. I'm not going to say anything yeah? I know really well boss's scariness. If I betray him, just what kind of hell I'll taste then.....it's better to die.□

□I see. You will surely guide us gladly after this. I'm convinced of that. Anyway, we will become nuisance staying here. Let's have a slow talk over there okay?□

Kousuke stood up from his chair and put on a smile on his face. Seeing that, the man yelled□Shit-□while trying to jump out from the terrace of the second floor. Because Kousuke was blocking the stair, he thought that he would be able to escape somehow if it was just from the second floor.

But, there was no way Kousuke could be taken by surprise just from that much,

□Abyss-style Martial Art's Secret Technique——"Inconsiderable Banquet of Gluttony(Salmon Sandwich Got No Match!)"□

□Mugah!?!□

Kousuke that circled behind the man instantly stuffed his mouth full with salmon sandwich. The writhing man was completely pinioned from behind with his mouth being pressed down, unable to run away or spit out the sandwich.

The man became half-panicked and for a while he kept struggling and kicking around, but before long his eyes rolled up and exposed the white of his eyes, and he fainted

powerlessly. A scrap of salmon slipped out from the mouth of the limply falling man.

“Yep, as I thought, the salmon sandwich of this café is amazing. It instantly send people to heaven.”

Kousuke nodded in satisfaction while looking at the fainting man. Everyone inside the café thought this. “No, you just made him suffocate normally there”. But they didn’t say it out loud. Because, it was scary.

Chief Magdanese whose sigh remarkably increased in number these few days was sighing even deeper while sending sign to her subordinates. The rushing subordinates quickly apprehended the three men and furthermore they also politely led away several of the guests that seemed to have “Berserk” administered into them.

The café fell into uproar from the sudden arrest. In the middle of that Emily was making a complicated expression while asking Kousuke who was going to leave the café following behind Chief Magdanese.

“Hey, Kousuke. Why are you so fixated with salmon sandwich like that? Do you love it?”

“Yep, I love it.”

“I, is that so.....”

Of course, Kousuke answered that he loved salmon sandwich. But, Emily’s face turned red from seeing Kousuke saying ‘love’ with a serious face that was staring straight at her. With a glance at Emily who was like that, Kousuke climbed down the stairs while he started to explain with exposition that was at the same level like a certain gourmet reporter whose catchphrase was ‘jewel box of taste ya~’,

about just how amazing the salmon sandwich of this store was. (TN: In Japan there is this famous gourmet reporter named Hikomaru, with a catch phrase of 'jewel box of (insert food name here) ya~'. It seems this guy's cheerful personality and impactful comment made him the face of the present era gourmet program)

After Kousuke left the café, it went without saying that the sale of this café's salmon sandwich increased explosively.

Part 2

That night the moon was completely hidden by the cloud. In this dark world without light from the night sky, there was a high-rise building illuminated brilliantly by artificial light. For a normal company, at this time most of the employees would be home already and there would be few lighting, but it was only this building that was leaking out light from all of its floors.

The entrance of that high-rise building and the outer wall near the highest floor were drawn with the company name and emblem. The company name was "Gamma Pharmaceutical".

A car's headlight was illuminating the back road of that "Gamma Pharmaceutical". The car was stopped once by the guard in front of the gate of iron bars. The man behind the car's steering wheel showed his face to that guard and also his identification card.

It seemed that the guard knew the face of the driver. The guard showed a wry smile while giving words of appreciation "Must be hard work to come at this kind of time even though you aren't even a researcher". He then took the identification card to the guard room and used a card reader to read the card to open the gate.

The man behind the driving seat shrugged his shoulders and said "It's the superior's command. I cannot go against it" while receiving back his identification card. At that time, the

guard saw the person sitting at the backseat and he raised his eyebrows questioningly.

When the driver told the guard "This person is a genius doctor even if she look like this. It seems she will be our company's hidden ace you know", it seemed the person in the backseat noticed that they were talking about her. The girl wearing lab coat with her hair tied into side-tail then faced toward the guard and smiled friendlyly.

Being smiled at by an amiable beautiful girl, the middle-aged guard slackened down and he smiled broadly. And then he said "Even though you are still young, you mustn't force yourself too hard to work until this kind of time you know" while drawing back.

The car then passed through the gate and kept running until its figure vanished into a rear entrance for the underground parking area.

The car parked on a corner of the underground parking area before the driver and girl in lab coat——Emily got down.

"Is this place really where the mastermind is staying? This is a large company that can be counted in one hand even at Britain."

"So you doesn't believe it Miss? I said already that I am the direct subordinate of this place's president——Kaysis Wentworks."

"Shut up. I won't talk to you."

".....Ou."

The man who received that really piercing reply got sullen. Even so he obediently backed down. He, the man who

fainted after eating Kousuke's secret technique——Woody urged Emily to move with a pouting face.

Following Woody's guidance, they rode an exclusive elevator that would only move using employee ID card. This high-rise building had 66 floors in total with a height that surpassed 200 meters. They could see the night view of the city from the high-speed elevator that was attached on the outside. The higher the elevator got, the wider the view that could be seen.

□It's beautiful.....□

□Yeah, this scenery——□

□I'm not talking to you.□

□.....Got it.□

Woody's feeling was hurt from that second piercing reply. A beautiful girl with sparkling eyes clinging at the scenery outside, and a tough man exposing pouting face beside her. The scene was really surreal.

Before long, *ting* along with such sound, the elevator's floor display showed they were at the highest floor. Emily who came back to her senses from that sound turned around and followed behind Woody who had exited the elevator first. They passed over several corners and rooms, through several electronic locks, and in the end reached a heavy door that was engraved with the company's emblem.

Woody walked toward the display installed beside the two-leaf door and pressed a button.

□Boss, this is Woody. Just as my message, I arrived just now. I'm bringing Doctor Grant.□

□Finally. I'm opening the door now.□

The door of the president's office was constructed so it could only be opened from inside. Because of that, Woody and Emily waited for the room's owner Kaysis to open the door.

pushu With the sound of air spurting out, the two-leaf door opened. The two of them entered with Woody in the lead. The door immediately closed behind them. Emily looked at that across her shoulder and inside her heart she evaluated that the enemy was really cautious.

When her gaze returned to the front, she saw a man at his early thirty sitting deeply on a luxurious chair. He was a slender and blond man. His narrow eyes that looked like fox and his loose and slovenly smile gave a frivolous impression that didn't suit a president of a large company.

But, the moment that man saw the figure of Emily behind Woody, Emily saw inside the man's slightly opened eyes and unconsciously felt gooseflesh in her spine.

She thought that this man was like a snake. His gaze was that of a snake catching sight of a mouse that would be the prey. She must not be deceived by this man's external frivolous impression. Cunning and malice were compressed inside this man. Yes, detestable aura that made her unconditionally believed that was expressed in this man's eyes.

Emily unconsciously stopped walking all of a sudden. Seeing that caused Kaysis's smile to deepen further. His evil smile that gave no hint of humanity made Emily to spontaneously gulp loudly. Even Woody that was slightly in front of her also gulped loudly like her. Surely he understood just how evil that smile was.

□Hey, Emily-chan. Nice of you to come. My company welcomes you with open arms.□

Kaysis stood up and detoured around his large desk while spreading his hands open in a welcoming gesture. Emily almost shrank back from the approaching mass of malice, however, she suddenly noticed what she was about to do and she gritted her teeth.

And then, she returned her drawing back foot to its former spot and glared back threateningly with piercing cat-eyes.

Kaysis displayed emotion of surprise for a moment, but he soon started to stare with a gaze of unconcealed sadism.

□How nice, that arouse me. A girl making that kind of eye is just my favorite. How about it Emily-chan? Won't you become mine instead of just being a researcher in my company? You will be able to obtain anything you wish by doing that you know?□

□And, you will torment me who naturally is going to refuse, and then want to make me say that with my own mouth isn't that right? Anyway, go through plastic surgery first. The vulgarity of your character is coming out on your face you know?□

Even while Emily was still shaking a bit, but she threw back a scathing reply boldly. Woody looked back to her with a slightly shocked expression. Kaysis's expression was increasingly changing as though there was a delicious fruit put in front of him.

□That's a hurtful way of speaking. But, it arouses me instead. Just how long you can continue with that kind of attitude, aa, I'm really looking forward to it more and more.□

□Your disgusting behavior doesn't matter. Rather than that, are you Odin?□

While nodding, Kaysis approached until he was in short distance from Emily who was asking that to him with undisguised revulsion.

□Indeed, that's correct. I am Odin. Well, that name is just for a jest though. My real name is Kaysis Wentworks.□

□You were.....the one that stole□Berserk□? The one that released the infected person in the middle of city?□

Kaysis's fingertip stroked Emily's cheek. Even while feeling nausea from that touch, Emily asked for confirmation to him. She wanted to confirm, 'are you the main culprit of everything?', like that.

□You can say that, but you can also say that it's not so.□

□What do you mean? Answer me!□

□Fufu, you are really strong-willed. Just like a cute cat.□

Kaysis dodged Emily's questioning noncommittally. His snake-like eyes shined while his hand touched Emily's slender neck. Of course, just with that it would be impossible to choke the neck and kill a person. But, most likely he just wanted to see Emily's suffering face for fun.

Emily's face slightly grimaced when that hand jerked with strength. Kaysis's expression was increasingly filled with joy by that but.....

□.....What are you doing?□

□I cannot just stay quiet watching more than this. Can I ask you to take off that hand from the miss?□

The one that grasped Kaysis's hand and forcefully jerked it away from Emily's neck was the man at her side——Woody. Kaysis sent him a dangerous gaze. Kaysis's eyes were tinged with dangerous light from how his subordinate showed an unforeseen rebellious attitude, and from how he called Emily as□miss□.

□I wonder if you understand just who are you opening your mouth to. Or else, don't tell me you are cajoled by this child? No matter how unlikely I think that is.□

□No way, such thing is unimaginable to happen between me and miss. Besides, I'm doing this with full preparedness for everything.□

Kaysis shook off Woody's arm roughly, then he took out a handgun offhandedly from his breast pocket and pointed it at Woody. At the same time, he snapped his finger *pachin* and armed men appeared from hidden doors set up everywhere inside the room. They pointed their gun muzzle toward Woody.

However, Woody who knew about the existence of the guards standing by inside the room naturally wasn't perturbed.

□Full preparedness? I really don't get you. Just what in the world happened?□

□Nothing special. If I'm forced to say, then it's because I found a place with better employment term than here I guess. Any humble salary man will change their job to a place with better condition right?□

□Hou. I see, so you are cajoled by the security bureau. Just how much you can receive from them? Aa, just to be clear, I'm not planning to ask you to come back by offering you more than their offer. Your fate is decided already here.□

□Even if you told me to come back, I absolutely won't. After all, it's remuneration that you cannot possibly prepare.□

□.....It's that much money? Answer, how much that you got?□

So much remuneration to the degree that a president of a large company that was in the top five of Britain couldn't match it. Kaysis's expression was slightly colored with interest when he was told something like that. He was wondering, just what kind of world the security bureau used to steal his subordinate.

Seeing Kaysis like that, the corner of Woody's lips rose up in a wide grin. And then with a boastful, elated, and joyful expression that couldn't be suppressed!!, he spoke the detail of the remuneration he obtained.

□Kukuh, listen and be astonished! My reward iis, the finest quality of salmon sandwich, FOR A YEARRRR-!□

□.....hm?□

Kaysis-san was confused. His heinous air was unconsciously scattered apart and he tilted his head plainly thinking□Am I mishearing?□. The other guards were also the same like that.

Amidst such confusion, Emily who knew about the circumstance made a complicated expression as expected. And then, for the second time she asked the same question like before in the café.

□Hey, Kousuke. Why is it salmon sandwich? Do you like it that much?□

Hearing Emily calling a name of a person he had never heard before, Kaysis sent a suspicious gaze at her.

But, at the next moment, he turned around in shock.

□Aa, yeah. Honestly, even I myself am thinking, perhaps this hypnotist is wrong.□

The guards also turned around.

Over there, before anyone knew it, a young man in black clothes was sitting on the president chair while scratching on his cheek with a wry smile.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

About the salmon sandwich pressuring of this chapter.

If I have to say why, that's because the author is getting fixated with it.

Salmon sandwich that is unexpectedly off-the-shelf.

If I made a handmade one, it was doubtful the chapter posting would make it in time.....

I'm sorry.

The next update is planned at 6 P.M Saturday too.

**Become.....A Splendid
Villager**

Part 1

With magnificent night sky as the background, a young man in black clothes was sitting on the president chair.

Such a sight made even Kaysis to be struck dumb and lost for word. The guards at the surrounding too, they were guards that were under the direct control of the president, usually no matter what the situation was they wouldn't be shaken and able to react swiftly, but it was only at this time that they exposed a stupid expression without being able to aim their gun.

□Emily, over here.□

□Yes!□

Kousuke beckoned with his hand and Emily rushed toward him with an excited voice. Even though her external appearance was like a haughty cat, but dog ears and dog tail could be hallucinated to be attached on her. That energetically shaking ears and tail truly made her fit to be doggy Emily-chan.....

Emily circled around the large desk with cute sound of footsteps *pata-pata* and without stopping she stopped still right beside Kousuke.

After that, 'Don't leave me behind!' with such feel, Woody followed behind in hurry while his footsteps were loudly resounding. And then he came to a stop at the opposite side of Emily and slightly behind.

.....Someone sitting snugly on the president chair, waited on by a beautiful girl beside him and a scary-looking man standing by behind him.

No matter how anyone looked, it was Kousuke that looked like a mastermind. Perhaps it should be said that it was just as expected from the right-hand man of the demon king.

□.....What are you? Where did you enter from?□

Kaysis recovered quickly from his agitation, and then he asked toward Kousuke who was sitting on his chair while staring angrily.

That question was only natural to be asked. The elevator that Emily and Woody were riding was the only route that could lead to this president office. Naturally that elevator was installed with security cameras which could be watched from the president office. There were countless security cameras existing between the elevator until the president office, and naturally there was also a security camera in front of the door of the president office.

Naturally Kaysis himself checked on all those cameras, and the guards who now finally moved their gun muzzle, they should have also checked the monitors at the observation room located at the other side of the hidden door of the president room.

But, there wasn't even a single one among them who detected Kousuke's existence.

To enter this room located at the highest floor, it could only by getting through the front door that could only be opened by Kaysis from inside. If that door was closed, the room would completely become a closed room. The air duct's size

couldn't be entered by human and it would be absurd for someone to enter from the window.

From the point of view of Kaysis and others, in this situation there was no other way to describe it other than this young man suddenly appearing out of nowhere.

Although, the answer of Kousuke was simple.

□Even if you ask me from where, wasn't it you who invited me in? From that door over there.□

□Impossible. I don't know someone like you.....□

□Well, that's because I'm just a little bit inconspicuous. I won't be bothered even if you overlooked me, not at all. I'm speaking the truth you know?□

Kousuke shrugged. This time he was following Emily from behind using full power invisibility while making use of the blind spot of the security cameras, so it was justified that they didn't notice him, and he was also really not bothered by it. It was his habit, of making excuse□I'm not bothered okay? I'm really not hurt okay?□when other people couldn't notice him.

Kaysis naturally couldn't believe Kousuke's answer, and he guessed that Kousuke didn't plan to disclose the trick. So he straightened up his collar and took a pompous attitude before changing the topic.

□.....Well, no matter. By the way, you, the one sitting there in my chair as though it is your own. Who are you? You seem to be Japanese, and I cannot believe that you are from security bureau but.....even so, you infiltrate to this place by yourself. By any chance, there is even a Japanese young man among the agents of "JD Agency"?□

Kaysis's expression was clearly displeased seeing his chair occupied by someone else while he spoke his prediction. But indeed, that prediction was the most possible one.

□Hee, that JD Agency is supposed to be a “non-existent organization” but.....it's normally known like this.□

□It's not normally known. But, that's a common knowledge among the highly positioned people of this side of the world. They are paying the maximum caution to the security bureau chief and intelligent department chief, and toward the “erasure organization” these two are leading.□

□Well, if you are the top of underworld organization, I guess you would have them getting in your way many times and dealt you a hard blow. That kind of people should be able to grasp their existence from the piling up facts.....but, won't it be a problem that the name of the organization is exposed?□

Chief Magdanese was grasping the situation at this place through a device that was attached on Kousuke. She was shrugging inside a surveillance car that was slight distance away from the building.

□This is what you called an open secret. Having it be known to a certain degree will also become a deterrence.□

Kousuke nodded□I see□to the words transmitted to him through the device. Kaysis guessed from that, that Kousuke was communicating with outside and he became convinced that Kousuke was a member of security bureau.

Though in truth he was the vanguard of a more dangerous group.....

□Fumu, should I say that it's just as expected from the chief of the security bureau. To be able to subvert an enemy at that kind of situation and then sending in a skilled agent..... Yet, I cannot help but say that you are a little bit too rash.□

Kaysis said that and took out a smartphone from his breast pocket. Then his finger suddenly slid through its display.

□Aa, that again. That's a switch for□Berserk□activation right?□

□Fufu, so you understand. Once I pushed this button, a lot of berserkers would rampage at the middle of several dozen cities. Aah, let me correct one thing. This is certainly an "activation" button, but this smartphone is originally used for "cancellation".□

□.....I see. I had been thinking about it even before entering this room, but you are really a wary person huh. If a password isn't entered into that smartphone in regular interval to cancel the activation state, then the drug will activate on their own accord. Is it something like that?□

□You have a good understanding. Exactly. Therefore, even if you steal this from me, even if you kill me, it would be meaningless. Rather, that will become the opening curtain of an unprecedented disaster. It's not something that can be risked by you people who are shouldering the security of this country isn't it?□

Kaysis talked with a broad grin and snake-like gaze. Surely the cancellation password wasn't known by anyone except Kaysis. And it didn't seem like he would talk even if he was captured, and if he was killed then a great disaster would definitely occur.

Kaysis believed without doubt that he was in an overwhelmingly superior position. It seemed his selling point was this craftiness of him. He lifted the smartphone that was his lifeline in one hand while his other hand moved forward in inviting gesture.

□Now then, Emily. Come to my side. That is if you don't want a great number of sacrifice to be created in this country because of something that you created.□

□-, this low-life□

Emily's skin felt goosebumps from the gaze of Kaysis who was immersed in joy. She cursed him without even hiding her feeling of disgust. But Kaysis's smile was deepening. It seemed that even that disgust felt pleasant for him.

□That's right. It's already inevitable that you will become mine, but a punishment is needed after you dragged this uninvited person here isn't it? How about you give me a kiss of oath after you come here.□

□Wha, what are——□

□Fufu, it seems that young agent-kun over there is a special existence for you. Then, it will be a lovely punishment if I make you offer that body to other man in front of his eyes as the proof of parting. Don't you think so?□

Surely when someone talked about the height of low-life, it would refer to a person like this. Making other people submit, and smeared them with humiliation and shame were the greatest happiness for this man. The unhappiness of other people was exactly the nourishment for his life. His smoothly moving tongue moved even smoother from imagining the future that was smeared with unhappiness.

“Aa, while we are at it, perhaps it will also be good to torture him in front of you who are crying pleadingly. And then, after he become unable to endure the pain, I will make him say this. —“Please, just do whatever you like to Emily, spare me already” like that. When I imagine the face of Emily at that time——”

“So it’s true that a third-class villain like to prattle on and on.”

A calm voice reached Kaysis who was continuing to talk with expression of ecstasy. That voice sounded exasperated, as though it was directed to a worthless existence, an apathetic voice that was really lacking in emotion.

Kaysis stared suspiciously at Kousuke who wasn’t showing even a speck of unease at this situation.

“You are saying, that I’m a third-class villain?”

“Yeah. I don’t know if it’s because you have prepared an absolute superiority(trump card) or because you are like this from the start, but you who can play around in *this situation*, is without a doubt a third-class.”

“.....”

Kaysis fell silent. He wracked his brain and reconfirmed whether there was anything that could shake his superiority, but he was holding a switch that could instantly open the curtain of tragedy if it was pressed, and if something happened to him then the tragedy would act on its own anyway in less than an hour. Such card was something that wouldn’t become a worthless card that easily.

Kaysis reached a conclusion that this might be a bluff. But Kousuke suddenly stood up while speaking.

□According to the demon king, it seems that what is called a trump card is something mass produced.....what about you I wonder?□

□What? Demon king? Just what are you talking a——□

Kaysis talked in suspicion, but instantly, he opened wide his eyes and his word cut off.

That was because without any advance sign, Kousuke was right in front of him.

Kaysis immediately tried to draw back his body, but the next moment, his field of vision was reversed and he was falling into confusion. But, he immediately felt an intense impact hitting his back and his voice got caught in his throat.

His gaze was wandering while he was filled with pain and confusion of what in the world had happened to him. And then what entered his sight was only the ceiling and the LED lighting. From that he understood that he had been thrown on the floor.

□Yo, you bastard, do you not care, what will happen to the city——□

□Well, that will be for later.□

His mind was flooded with pain, however Kaysis made use of his astonishment to wring out words from his mouth. But the reply he got was a casual sentence along with the back of a shoe that filled his field of vision. Simultaneously an intense impact assaulted him and his consciousness was cut off with a snap.

Inside his hearing that was rapidly getting farther away, he felt like he could hear gunshots and angry yells, and also

screams.....but Kaysis was swallowed by darkness without even being able to process that.

Part 2

□Bubeh!? Hah, wha, what!? What happe——hih!?!□

The pain and impact suddenly running on his cheek made Kaysis woke up. His face grimaced from the dull pain he felt on his back and forehead, but even in such state he tried to rally his confused mind somehow.

However, the moment his hazy visual field became clear, he raised a shriek that he had never made until now.

Although, no one would be able to laugh at him from doing such thing. After all the cause that made Kaysis scream was a sight that was just that bizarre.

□Wha, what!? You guys, just what the hell you are doing!?!□

Kaysis called out with an obviously shocked voice. Ahead of his gaze, there were his subordinates that he was familiar with.

.....However, each of his subordinate was perfectly making chuni pose.

They were the guards under Kaysis's direct supervision who were inside the room with him just now. One of them had a pose where one of his legs was lifted with both his hands extended straight to both sides. It was a magnificent pose, as though he was a savage eagle that would fly away anytime.

Another person was standing in low stance with his legs spread apart widely, one of his hands was on his hip while his other hand was held crossing his chest diagonally. That pose looked as though the man was going to transform into a masked warrior in any second now.

And another pose was taking pose where his body tilted slightly forward while his right shoulder was lifted slightly, his right arm extended to below and his left hand was covering his face with his five fingers spread wide open. The angle of his waist was extremely sexy. That pose looked as though something would come out anytime now from his back.

The other too, the guards who were inside the room just before Kaysis lost consciousness, all of them were lined up with everyone taking some kind of chuuni pose. So to speak it was like a museum of posing statue. The gallery was using the whole spacious president office.

Those people didn't answer even when Kaysis was yelling in extreme panic. Everyone of them was wearing sunglasses so their eyes couldn't be seen, but perhaps they were unconscious seeing how they weren't reacting at all. When Kaysis strained his eyes to the limit, those posing guards had their body and four limbs entangled in very fine strings, and he could see that they were being hung up like marionettes.

At the same time, Kaysis noticed that he was being restrained on his chair. His four limbs were being restrained by a similar super-fine string.

□Hey, Kousuke. Is it necessary to do this?□

□.....If you ask whether there is any necessity, then the answer is definitely negative. This is bad, the damned Lord

Abyssgate is easily showing out his face. Perhaps, it's hopeless already for me.□

Hearing that casual conversation in this bizarre space caused Kaysis to return to his sense in surprise. When he turned his gaze toward the voices' direction, he confirmed that there were several people right beside him.

Three of them were Kousuke, Emily, and Woody who were inside the room before this. But, in addition of them, there were further three more people.

□As expected from Kousuke-san. You don't forget this thing called "beauty" even in the middle of battle. I have underestimated you.□

□.....Indeed, you suppressed the enemies in less than a minute, and during just the few minutes from you contacting us, you created this kind of artwork. This can be said as terrific. Though now I'm completely filled with the desire to go home.□

□Ahahaha, it's great that I can move now after having something unknown done to me but.....this case that made even the chief to be haggard is really a heavy burden huh. I wish I could keep losing consciousness without waking up.....□

Vanessa who for some reason looked dejected even though her expression was enraptured, praised Kousuke. Chief Magdanese was having a faraway look while his gaze wouldn't move toward the posing men no matter what. And then, Allen who was made to drink restorative medicine made in another world and healed until a point where he could at least move.

In Allen's case, Emily wished that he would exit the stage with his face still disfigured like before, but Chief Magdanese said "This idiot who kept making mistake cannot be allowed to rest more than this. He has to be made to work like a cart-horse". And so without any other choice, he was healed.

Even so, he was still far from being fully healed, for the time being his swelling was suppressed and his broken jaw repaired so he could talk. His broken teeth and lacerated nose and cheek were left alone. His face was wrapped with bandage all over like a mummy, making Allen's figure looked really painful, but there wasn't anyone who cared about that.

By the way, regarding the restorative medicine made in another world that healed Allen (the highest class of product sold for the general public), Kousuke skillfully hid it and explained that Allen was healed using his ability, so it was currently ignored by everyone thinking that Kousuke also had that kind of power.

Though it seemed that Emily was really bothered with a power that could heal bone fracture in the blink of eye but..... Naturally there was no power that could heal people turned into berserker, so Kousuke told her that while saying that he would explain to her later. Hearing that caused Emily to obediently withdraw.

".....My word, for the chief-sama of the state security bureau to be personally here. What an honor. However, you have made an extremely poor move. As expected, even a living legend has finally gone senile hasn't it?"

Kaysis implicitly conveyed that at this rate berserkers would be released in the middle of city with his sarcastic and

obstinate words. His expression was also sneering at Chief Magdanese.

In a glance he looked composed, but if observed carefully, it could be seen that his eyes were twitching faintly and his voice was slightly shaking. The cause of that went without saying.

Because, there were his subordinates making chuuni pose within his view after all!

□Mister Abyssgate. I'll leave this to you..□

□That's why I told you that my name is Kousuke□

Chief Magdanese didn't show any particular concern to Kaysis's words and her gaze moved at Kousuke. Kousuke punctually said his request for correction before sighing. Then he put down a chair in front of Kaysis roughly.

Kousuke put the chair so the back of the chair was facing Kaysis and he sat down on it. He put his arms on the top of the chair's back and he gazed straight at Kaysis.

□Mister Abyssgate..... So that's your codename inside the agency. Fufu, I'll remember that. I will surely investigate your background. And then, your important people will——UBAoAa!?!□

□Just who do you think you are talking to? Hold down that tongue.□

Right in the middle of Kaysis's curse toward Kousuke, immediately after that, he directly received a kick on his crotch from Vanessa who had been reduced into a believer of Lord Abyssgate, and he raised a weird scream. Actually he wanted to writhe around, but he couldn't do so because he

was tied on the chair and he could only twitch repeatedly while desperately enduring the pain.

□Aa~, Vanessa. Let me do it, okay?□

□Forgive me. Against my better judgment, it annoyed me seeing his attitude that is making light of Kousuke-san.□

Just where had the Vanessa-san who was always calm, cool, and collected gone at? Even though she absolutely wasn't someone who would instantly make 'Direct Attack!' to the crotch because of provocation.....

Allen and Woody similarly turned pigeon-toed while drawing away from being creeped out. Kousuke faced toward the writhing Kaysis once more while they were like that.

□Now then, Kaysis. I'll have you spit out everything. Not just the cancellation code, but also how this case started, your plan from here on, and then the location of all the□Berserk□ that you stole.□

□Do, do you seriously believe, I'll talk——□

□You will. I said it right? The one who doesn't understand the situation is you. Why do you think you who is holding the trump card is getting captured like this without question? Why did Woody change side? Didn't you think about that?□

□That's.....□

Of course Kaysis noticed about those abnormalities. No matter how, it was unthinkable that his subordinate would get lured away by salmon sandwich, he didn't want to think about it. Also, it was unthinkable that the security bureau would make a gamble that could involve a lot of people's life

using a baseless method like torture, because there was no way he would easily confess just from that.

But, even so, there should be nothing that could shake his absolutely superior position with him taking hostage of this country's people, as long as he didn't confess anything, then there was nothing the security bureau could do except doing whatever Kaysis told them. It was undeniable that such believe was curbing down his feeling of danger toward the abnormalities. It was when he was thinking like that,

□I also told you this didn't I? That's why you are a third-rate. Honestly, regarding the mastermind of this case, well, I have no doubt that it's really you but, I think there is high possibility that there is still another existence behind you. The existence that granted you the seat as president of this large company.....something like that.□

Kaysis's expression didn't change. There wasn't even any turmoil inside his eyes. His breathing was also not shaken at all. But, there also wasn't any sarcasm coming from him right away. Kousuke was convinced just from that.

Surely there was another person that knew about the existence of□Berserk□and stole it the very first. After all an impetus was necessary for Kaysis to know about the existence of□Berserk□.

At the same time, there was no doubt that this man was cunning, merciless, and excellent, but, no matter how, Kousuke couldn't believe that Kaysis had the status that counterbalanced with the organizational power Kousuke expected, so surely his conjecture that this□Gamma Pharmaceutical□wasn't at the deepest bottom of everything was correct.

While thinking so, Kousuke suddenly took out from his breast pocket a string that was attached with something that looked like five-yen coin. The size was about the same with five-yen coin, but the material looked like an amber crystal. There was a round hole at the center, and the string was tied there.

Once Chief Magdanese and others saw that item, they made a really complicated expression.

□.....I don't know what you are planning to do, but if you don't release me, a lot of people will die you know? After all no matter what you are going to do to me, I absolutely won't speak.□

□You know, the world is overflowing with irrationality. Do you forget that just because you are at the side that is scattering around irrationality?□

Saying that, Kousuke then dangled the string. The crystal shaped like a five-yen coin swung back and forth in front of Kaysis's eye.

Kousuke coughed once *gohon* for a moment and he straightened up his sitting posture, before he suddenly opened his mouth.

□You are gradually becoming stra~ngee~, you are gradually becoming straa~ngee~□

□??? Just what are you saying..... Is your head having a screw looseee-hee~□

The crystal five-yen coin systematically swaying like a pendulum in front of Kaysis's eyes. At the other side of the coin was a suspicious incantation (?) that sounded strangely stupid. Kaysis's was doubting Kousuke's sanity that matched

Kousuke's expression that looked complicatedly embarrassed.

But, right after that, the end of Kaysis's sentence crumbled. Light slipped off from his eyes, and his snake-like atmosphere dispersed as though it was just a lie, where now he seemed like a mere simple man.

□You are gradually wanting to taa~lkk~. You want to talk about everything, everyy~thii~ng□

□I, I want to taa~lkk~. I want to talk about everything, everyy~thii~ng□

□If you are asked you will want to anss~werr~. You will be unable to not anss~werr~□

□I will want to anss~werr~. I become unable to not anss~werr~□

□You will be happy by telll~ingg~. You will be wanting to tell everyy~thii~ng□

□Will will wiilll~□

The slow and stupid voices resounded inside the room. Kaysis was completely transformed into a repeating machine. At the same time, light of expectation was starting to grow inside those eyes. His atmosphere was like a Villager A who was called out by a hero party, who for some reason knew about a local legend and would tell it to the hero party without leaving anything out.

——Soul magic enchanted-type brainwashing artifact
“Staking the Pride of a Villager”

The villager in RPG would tell everything they knew if they were talked to. If they were addressed by hero party, ordinarily they would obediently listen. They also wouldn't say even a single complain when their house was entered by a hero party as they pleased, and even if their home was rummaged and in the end their possession got taken away without permission.

This artifact would turn the targeted human into such lovely villager. This was an artifact for dealing with the aftermath of an incident, bestowed by the demon king to the abyss lord for his personal use.

A minute later, the president of a large company that could be counted as one of the top five even in Britain finished his job-change into a splendid Villager A. He happily spouted out everything that he knew.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Thank you very much for the festival of salmon sandwich's review column.

It's a happy feeling that something I liked is shared by other people!

Now then, the end of this extra compilation too is gradually coming into view.

I think it will be 2, 3 more chapters.

But even though I said that, even Hakumei don't know how this tale without any plot or anything will roll in the future.

When it's over what will I write then I wonder.

The next update is planned to be at 6 P.M. Saturday too.

DAS

Part 1

“Welcome, this is Gamma Pharmaceutical”desu. Welcome, this is Gamma Pharmaceutical”desu. Welcome, this is Gamma Pharmaceutical”desu. Welco——”

“Yosh, it’s a success.”

Kousuke nodded in satisfaction seeing Kaysis who was continuously saying the same line like a broken recorder with a friendly smile.

Chief Magdanese and Allen who was watching the happening from behind were making twitchy eyes as though they had seen something repulsive.

Both of them were people that had been fighting in the underworld where it was a vortex of scheme and violence, rather it wouldn’t be an exaggeration to call them as a residence of underworld, yet even the two of them were creeped out by the brainwashing technique that was bestowed directly from the demon king..... And then, seeing Kousuke who was making a satisfied smile from seeing the result.....

Both of them were honestly thinking this. “Returnee group.....they are seriously, bad news”like that.

Kousuke firmly ignored the gaze of the security bureau duo that pierced the back of his head. He put away the artifact “Staking the Pride of a Villager”, and began the interrogation—or rather the inquiry.

□Now then, Kaysis. First, tell us your plan, just what are you going to do by using Berserk?□

□Welcome! This is□Gamma Pharmaceutical□desu!□

□.....No, not that, your plan——□

□Welcome. This is□Gamma Pharmaceutical□desu-□

□No, that's why your plan——□

□Welcomee! This is□Gamma Pharmaceutical□desuu!□

□.....□

Kaysis was already a splendid villager. Most likely he was a high-class villager even among all the villagers, the one without any particular meaning, the one that wasn't doing anything even in the afternoon, the jobless villager loitering around near the village entrance——Kaysis had job-changed into “the villager of the beginning”.

□.....Hey, Kousuke. Could it be, you have overdone it?□

□N, no, such thing should not be.....□

Kousuke scratched on his cheek while denying Emily's words. However, in reality they couldn't question Kaysis because he was transformed into “the villager of beginning”. Seeing no other way, Kousuke's hand entered his pocket to take out “Staking the Pride of a Villager” once more.

However, Vanessa stopped Kousuke from the side. Or rather, her shocking action stopped him from moving.

□Do it seriously.□

After saying such thing, Vanessa suddenly dropped her elbow at Kaysis's head. *boguu* A raw sound that mustn't be made by a living thing resounded. Emily raised a cute scream□Hya!?□.

□A problematic machine can be fixed by hitting it.□

□Jelgome-. Ghighis is-, Janma Khalpageudical, -, desu!□

□Wai-, wait Vanessa! Human is not machine, this person become all the more stranger see!□

Kaysis-san was moving ominously *kaku-kaku* while starting to making sound 'gyogyogyo! gyogyogyo!'. Emily was pointing her finger while making retort.

□How strange? In Armage○n, the Russian astronaut used Wrench Attack to fix the shuttle engine though..... Perhaps my angle was bad.□(TN: Armageddon movie)

□No, wai-, Vanessa. Wa——□

Kousuke tried to stop Vanessa, but before he could, Vanessa's pointlessly refined beautiful left hook captured Kaysis's temple. *ZUPAN-!* A beautiful sound also resounded from that. At the same time, Kaysis's head was snapped away to the right as though it got blown away.

□△☆□○□□× □□□□♥□□□□□□□

□Muh. Is it not a problem of angle, but power?□

Kaysis-san's head was blown away to the left this time. Vanessa's backhand that could even be said as artistic captured the right side of the head, filled with the centrifugal force of a body rotation.

However, Kaysis-san was only discharging broken words and face expression that was increasingly turning into a person in strait jacket, he wasn't returning any proper answer.

Vanessa looked dubious, even so after that she attempted various things like "The spin is not enough?", or "Should I use combo?" or "Perhaps I should use shake rather than impact" or "Neko Damashi!"...... (TN: Neko Damashi, the signature move of Nagissa from Ansatsu Kyoushitsu)

Finally Kousuke went "Stop it! Just stop it already!" and pinioned Vanessa from behind while dragging her back. With that the curtain of the short torture scene was finally closed. Chief Magdanese was sending Vanessa a gaze that was filled with a smidgen of admiration, was that originated from the mercilessness or something else?

"Aa, geez. This looks like it will be bad without healing..... First thing first, let's examine him before using the artifact one more time——"

"Nice to meet you honored guest. I am Kaysis. The president of this "Gamma Pharmaceutical". And, do you perchance have any business with me?"

"He get well somehow!? It feels a little strange though!"

Kaysis recovered his sanity (?). As expected, it seemed that something that almost broke really could be fixed by hitting it. Light of intelligence was shining from his eyes, and a dignity that was like a village chief could be felt from his tone.Although he got nosebleed that was pouring like river, his front teeth were gone, and the area around his eyes was bruised like panda.

While feeling a little irritation at the triumphant look of Vanessa beside him, Kousuke cleared his throat once and

asked about Kaysis's plan once more.

□Fumu, so about my plan. Where should I start I wonder.....□

□First tell us the outline.□

□I guess. Speaking simply, I plan to turn the people all over the world into latent berserker, where they have to drink the suppression medicine daily, and obtained profit from that. Like that my position within the organization will become firm, and with the organization power and Berserk, I will become the one leader that manipulate the world from behind.....something like that.□

The plan was told promptly, but the detail was absurdly demonical. This man didn't think of human as human, he only saw them as pawn that produced profit, this repulsive plan laid bare the nature of Kaysis Wentworks.

Emily unconsciously gulped, while Vanessa's gaze turned grave. It was only those like Kousuke and Chief Magdanese who looked unperturbed, even the smile was disappearing from inside Allen's eyes.

□Transformation into latent berserker, and then the suppression medicine, what do you mean by that? Something like capsule attached with detonator would surely be ejected out of the body eventually, what you mean is something different from that isn't it?□

□Correct. What I mean isn't physical means like that, but by using an improved drug of Berserk. Right after Berserk was created by accident, we performed repeated experiment using the data and product that were brought to us by our cooperator.□

Kaysis continued his talk after saying that. If summarized, it would be something like this.

Berserk was a drug that abnormally vitalized the cell of the consumer. That overly rapid vitalization would repeat self-destruction and restoration forcefully, creating that kind of enlargement and superhumanization ability.

But, just like how the extent of the vitalization would be in proportion of the consumed amount of the drug, the vitalization rate of Berserk could be controlled to a certain degree. It seemed that they had already gathered the data regarding the effect and time limit of Berserk transformation and the necessary dose after going through many human experiments.

Even so, no matter what they did, they couldn't go as far as controlling the vitalization and transformation right after the consummation of the drug. That was the reason they used cheap trick like using capsule attached with detonator.....

But the story would be different if they had Emily who was the drug developer.

What Kaysis and his group wished from Emily was the development of the improved drug with delayed vitalization rate—in short, a drug where after consuming it, there would be a time delay before the vitalization could reach a stage where transformation occurred. At the same time, they also wished Emily to develop not the antidote that could give complete recovery, but a suppression drug that would only suppress the vitalization as long as it was consumed continuously.

In such case, the people would have to drink the suppression drug created by □Gamma Pharmaceutical□ every

day if they didn't want to become a monster that lost all reason.

□However, how are you planning to turn the people all over the world into latent berserker? If they understand that it would affect their life, people will stop buying even the cold medicine sold in the market.□

□You're right. But, if it's mixed into something that human has to drink every day, they will not be able to avoid consuming it.□

□Every day?Don't tell me□

□Yes, it's just like what you are imagining right now. It's water.□

The cultivation of Berserk could be done as much as anyone wanted as long as they just had the data. Kaysis planned to use them to pollute the waterworks, and not just that, but dam, river, water purification plant, and so on, all the places that supplied water.

There wasn't any antidote for Berserk. Once water was polluted by it, there wouldn't be any method to purify it. There would be no way other than evaporating the polluted water, or draining it to the sea. It seemed that Kaysis was planning to pollute even the rain water and seawater with Berserk eventually.

□Such thing.....you are insane.□

□As expected, this isn't a laughing matter. Originally, erasing this kind of fellow is my role though.□

Vanessa didn't even hide her disgust and glared at Kaysis, while Allen, understanding that they had fallen behind in

front of this danger that threatened the world, he said something like that as though spitting it out.

Emily's face was pale. But, there wasn't any despair in her cat-eyes. She glared even more to Kaysis while her eyes were shining with the color of strong determination.

□I see. In such situation, even if you are exposed by the government as the mastermind, it wouldn't be any problem then. After all the government people would be in the same danger of turning berserk too. As long as they are unable to secure the formula of the suppression medicine, they won't lay their hand on you at all. After all even if they try to do anything, the world might end.□

Chief Magdanese sighed deeply with her gaze still looking severe. And then, she asked one more thing about Kaysis's remark that caught her attention.

□Tell us about the "organization" that you mentioned.□

□Information regarding the "organization" is it? Let's see..... perhaps I should say, that it's a gathering of old codgers captured in fanatical ideology and deep-rooted delusion. It has ancient history, its members are also in unknown number, and it possesses political power, economic power, and raw power en masse. Yet despite so, it's a gathering of brainless idiots that is doing nothing except secretly chasing after occult.□

Even though it was the organization that he belonged to, Kaysis was expressing a really piercing evaluation about it. When Chief Magdanese wordlessly urged him to continue, Kaysis who just for a moment returned from being a village chief into a snake-like company president then spoke the name of that organization.

□The underworld organization that has been continuously searching for genuine mystic since the far in the ancient time. Its name, is “Hydra”. If it’s you chief-sama, then you should at least know that name aren’t you?□

□Is that so.....that “Hydra”. They are a stereotypical occultist fanatic group. Supposedly they have been crushed on countless occasions, however, sometimes they would show a glimpse of their face in some kind of case, an organization that is difficult to eradicate.□

Chief Magdanese who seemed to know the name of that organization showed an expression as though she had swallowed something bitter that she rarely showed. From her words, it seemed that in the past she might have confronted them several times. It seemed that Allen also know at least the name, his expression was half-surprised and half-understanding that this name could come out here.

On the other hand, Emily and Vanessa had “?” mark floating above their head, while beside them Kousuke was looking up to the sky with□Aa~□. It was an organization name that he was awfully familiar with.

□It’s a multi-headed monster that come out in Greek mythology. No matter how many of their heads that is crushed, it will revive if there is just one head remaining..... so they came out here once more. However, you are talking really bitterly about them. Do you have dissatisfaction against your organization?□

□Yes, yes, if it’s dissatisfaction then I have it. Prattling about things like mystic or supernatural phenomenon in this modern time, they can only be called as insane. Even though they can stand in even more superior position against the world if using the power of an organization of

that scale, when it come to those old codgers, they are making light of the power of science too much. What do they mean by contradicting the ideal of the organization, huh. It's because they are obsessed with something like mystic that is unclear whether it exist or not, that the organization is still a social outcast even now.□

Kaysis talked as though he was spitting out. It seemed that Kaysis had a way of thinking that if they obtained a power that could interfere with the world using power of science, then it was fine to use that. In contrast the leadership of Hydra was searching for mystic to the end, their objective was to interfere with the world using that mystic and they wouldn't recognize any means other than that. That seemed to be their way of thinking.

Because the origin of the organization establishment was to obtain mystic into their hand, then indeed, Kaysis's way of thinking was contrary to the organization's founding ideal. Kaysis perceived the organization not as a gathering of researcher, but as mere "power", in a sense his nature was the exact opposite as the organization member—he was a realist.

□I will change the world using Berserk—if so, as expected even they surely won't be able to disregard me as a greenhorn. Fufufuh, even that guy, Jefferson Allgrey who is always looking down at me thinking he is the superior one, making fun of me, he will kneel in front of me, begging for forgiveness. I'll carve into his flesh and bones, just who is actually the superior one!That's how it should be□

Kaysis whose ambition had fallen apart dropped his shoulders in dejection.

On the other hand, Chief Magdanese reflexively stepped forward in excitement and grabbed both of Kaysis's shoulders. She then began to shake him back and forth.

□Just now, did you say Jefferson Allgrey? That real estate king and also politician?□

□Ye, yeah. That Allgrey.□

□Who else! Who else is a member of Hydra that you know about!? Tell me!□

□Go, got it. The other in the leadership is——□

The names that were spoken after Kaysis said that was an unimaginable luxury. Several of the names were people that even the security bureau were suspecting, there were also names that were under secret investigation, but even so it was tremendous for these big names of leadership of a listed up occultist fanatic group to be exposed like this.

When Kaysis finished telling the names of the leadership that he knew about, Chief Magdanese confirmed with her gaze that Allen had recorded the names before her face turned toward Kousuke.

□Mister Abyssgate. I'm grateful. These bunches are people whose real form we cannot get a hold of despite the dark rumor about them. With this perhaps we can perform their funeral.□

□Aa~, yep. I see.....□

Kousuke's reply was really evasive. Kousuke's gaze wandered around for a while before he asked Chief Magdanese timidly.

□Err, chief-san. That Mr. Allgrey or something, as expected you are going to arrest him?□

□What are you saying? Obviously we will. Even though he isn't related with the case this time, there is a mountain of cases that are thought to be related with Hydra. Each time, we only treated up the case as unresolved, or we ended up capturing the underlings, as though they are a lizard that cut off their tail to escape. And now we might be able to finish them all at once.□

□Ye, ye~ah. That's, how it is huuh~□

As expected, it seemed that Chief Magdanese sense the strangeness in Kousuke's attitude. She looked suspiciously while speaking out the question whether there was any problem.

But, at that time, a shocked voice□Eh!?□resounded from behind her. When she looked there, she saw the figure of Allen, his eyes opened wide obviously shocked, his gaze fixated on the tablet in his hand.

□? Allen?□

□A, aa~, chief. Just now I was pulling out information about Allgrey and his cohorts but.....this□

Saying that, Allen showed his tablet with a troubled expression. Chief Magdanese received it, and after her, Vanessa and Emily also turned their stare to peek at the tablet's display.

There,

□Then, you are saying that the donation like this time will continue in the future too?□

□Correct, it's just as you say. It feels like the me before this had been wandering inside nightmare all the time. I was clinging obsessively on my current position, and in collecting money and influence. But, just how much value those things actually have! It's smile. The children's smile is where exactly value can be found. The future where children can live with a smile on their face, that is exactly something with value that is worthy for me to devote my life to!□

Of all things, in the display there was the real estate king-san giving a powerful speech.

Chief Magdanese went□WHYY!?!□in a voice that had never been heard from her before, her eyes looked like they almost flew out from their socket. She was the chief of security bureau, that was why she knew painfully well about the dark rumors regarding Mr. Allgrey. Therefore, seeing his radiant smile and his speech that was overflowing with kindness and sincerity was honestly a nightmare for her instead.

The interview toward Mr. Allgrey in what seemed to be a special television programme was continuing inside the display.

□That is a wonderful thinking Mr. Allgrey. I also heard that there are a great number of people who are in agreement with your thinking, can you tell us more about that?□

□That is a true fact. They are my personal friend, my comrades. From here on, I together with my comrades are wishing to act by exerting our best, in order to make this world become better even for just a little!□

□I see. And as the symbol of that resolution, you are founding this charity organization "Staking the Pride of a Villager" isn't it?□

□Exactly. Perhaps it is a single hero who is moving this world. But, what is supporting the world is every single one of the villager. I am not a special human. But I wish to support the world as a single villager even with my meager strength!□

Hearing that emotionally moving speech, the audiences in the studio all stood up in unison and gave a thunderous applause. At the same time, a scrolling caption appeared on the screen. The names of the people supporting Mr. Allgrey were scrolling there.All the names, were the names that were spoken by Kaysis just now.

Chief Magdanese and everyone else were petrified. Among them, it was Emily who came alive before others. With a twitching expression, she asked toward Kousuke whose gaze was staring toward the day after tomorrow.

□Hey, Kousuke. The name of the charity organization is “Staking the Pride of a Villager” the news said.....□

□Is. Is that so.....□

□Hey, Kousuke. The name of Kousuke’s tool that can hypnotize other people, what is its name again?□

□.....”Staking the Pride of a Villager”, I guess.□

Right after that, Chief Magdanese threw away the tablet. Allen raised a strange voice□Howah□while performing a diving-catch.

Chief Magdanese power walked with a loud footsteps and this time she grabbed Kousuke’s shoulders.

□Explain, Mister Abyssgate. Concisely and swiftly.□

“YE, YES, MA’AM! In, in the first place, I came to this country is in order to crush those guys! After crushing them, I brainwashed them at once! They became compassionate villagers! End of report, ma’am!”

Kousuke who was being demanded to explain with bloodshot eyes and stifled voice reflexively saluted while answering toward Chief Magdanese’s overwhelming intensity. Vanessa and Allen nodded deeply, understanding how he felt.

Chief Magdanese gazed fixedly for a while at Kousuke who was drenched in cold sweats that were like waterfall, and then she sighed deeply and drew back. While she was at it, she covered her eyes with one hand and looked up to the sky.

Seeing the figure of the chief that was like that, Vanessa said a brief comment.

“As expected from Kousuke-san. It feels like the saying “Everything is Abyssgate’s fault” will spread far and wide sooner or later.” (TN: ‘Everything is Abyssgate’s fault’, in Japanese it’s translated as ‘Daitai Abyssgate no sei’, which can be abbreviated as ‘DAS’)

For some reason, Kousuke was unable to make the retort ‘You’re noisy’ to Vanessa.

Surely from here on, Mr. Allgrey and his cohorts would use their fortune for charity work without sparing anything. Naturally, because of Mr. Allgrey’s reputation as politician, at first he would also be ridiculed that this was only a bid for popularity, but it wouldn’t take that long for his fame to soar through the roof.

Sure enough, what would the society think if he was then arrested when he had saved a lot of people and obtained the

trust of the mass..... Of course, it wouldn't be a problem if there was a definite proof, but even so surely there would still be a problem. It was not difficult to imagine the heartache level of Chief Magdanese going up.

kohon- Kousuke cleared his throat. He faced back toward Kaysis who was looking on blankly and then he questioned him in order to clear away the complicated atmosphere.

□So, Kaysis. The data and drug of Berserk, are all of those in this place?□

□No. Naturally I decentralized it. If it's the list of the laboratories that is in charge of safekeeping the data and drug, it is saved in the flashdisk inside the drawer. You can confirm it there.□

Chief Magdanese somehow pulled back her mind to normal and sent her gaze to Allen. Allen who received that gaze moved to investigate the drawer. Like that, when he checked the flashdisk he discovered, certainly there was the data of the storage areas, and not only that, it was also filled with the detail of the plan steps and so on.

With this, they now understood most of what should be known. If they destroyed all the data and drug next, the threat of Berserk would vanish. Emily wouldn't be drowning in guilt for more than this, and the regret of her important people who became sacrifice would also clear up a little.

That was why, perhaps now there wasn't any need to know, about the answer to the question that Kousuke was putting off from asking, the question that until the end she was hesitating whether she should ask it or not.

However, right now the one who was here was a strong girl who by her own will had resolved to face the great evil and

the truth. She was a coward and often turned small, but even so, she was a girl who wouldn't stop advancing forward.

That was why,

□The last thing. Tell us.The one who told you the existence of Berserk.....who it is?□

□Fumu, that's——□

Emily, knew the truth.

Part 2

The time had entered the period of late night a long time ago. There wasn't any star in the sky, there was also no moonlight. The night sky was covered by cloudy weather, making gloomy atmosphere to hang in the air.

The night view of the city could be seen from the veranda of the hotel that was prepared for them by the security bureau. Regardless that it was the dead of night, what was called as the city center knew no sleep, therefore the stars on the ground illuminated the dark night radiantly, granting comfort to the spectator of the view for just a little.

□.....Emily. You cannot sleep?□

□Kousuke.....yes. Just a little.□

Emily was on a veranda, both her arms leaned on the handrail while she was staring at the night view for some reason or another. A voice called at her from the neighboring veranda.

□You aren't cold?□

Emily was wearing a night gown. Although it was created from thick fabric for use in winter, but it was only a piece of clothing. Kousuke knitted his eyebrows seeing that. Emily smiled wryly while shaking her head.

□I see. Well, certainly the air of night in winter feels pleasant.□

Saying that, Kousuke copied Emily by using both his arms to lean on the handrail of the veranda beside Emily's and he stared at the night view.

Both of them didn't say anything for a while. They were merely looking quietly at far away. Emily couldn't express into words, the reason she was unable to sleep. After all it was something obvious. Also, because right now there wasn't anything that had to be said regarding tomorrow.

That was why, Kousuke only muttered a brief sentence.

□Just a bit more. Let's do our best, together.□

□-.....yes. Yes-□

Emily casted her eyes down, as though she was reflecting upon something. But, her voice that replied to him was reverberating really well in the chilly air.

Silence visited the place once more. It was unknown how long they were like that. Suddenly, Emily asked Kousuke.

□Hey, Kousuke. When this matter is over, what will Kousuke do?□

□Hm? That's, I'll return to Japan. I said it right? I'm a student yeah? Even though this is still winter holiday, I'm skipping through winter short course here. I've got to return quickly and participate in it.□

Emily was looking blankly for a moment after hearing that reply, but right after that, she burst into laughter as though she was unable to hold it in.

□Fu, fufu.....the person that toyed with not just the underworld organization, but even with the security bureau,

need to join a short course.....kufuh, fufufufuh□

□O, oi, don't laugh. Just between you and me, even the demon king is living as a normal student, you know. It's not strange at all that I'm a student, right?□

□Bu, but. A person that introduced himself as Abyssgate something, fighting against armed men, someone like that is going through lesson normally.....ahah, no good, it's too surreal when I imagine it I cannot hold my laugh. Ahahahah□

□Gufuh. Do, don't say Abyssgate.....□

Seeing Kousuke hanging his head down while his hand was pressing on his chest, Emily's laugh was increasingly sounding more amused.

She had never laugh like this since the chain of incidents was starting.

Surely tomorrow would be the day where everything was settled. Nervousness, uneasiness, and pain that was the truth inside her heart. Actually, it was something that she was vaguely aware of. It was something she desperately averted her eyes from. The result was that all those were thrust before Emily now.

——If I am alone, could I endure it?

Thinking that, Emily shook her head inside her heart.

——Could I come this far, only with me and Vanessa?

As expected, she shook her head in her heart.

——In this time that is cruel, uneasy, painful, and difficult, even so would I be able to laugh just like this?

There was no way she would be able.

Emily glanced at the sullen Kousuke beside her, and then she smiled softly while wiping the tear gathering at the corner of her eye with her finger.

□Kousuke, thank you.□

□It's still too fast for you to say that. Say it after everything is over tomorrow.□

Kousuke's words were blunt and slightly filled with sulkiness that hadn't disappeared. But, for Emily, those words felt ticklish somehow.

Emily stared fixedly at the side profile of Kousuke who was looking at far away with his chin resting on his hand. Kousuke seemed to notice her gaze and he looked slightly uncomfortable.

Emily was thinking 'my body will get chilly soon' while she resolutely made a request to Kousuke.

□Say, Kousuke.□

□Hm?□

□You see, tomorrow, when everything is over.....I want Kousuke, to tell me about yourself.□

□About myself?□

Kousuke raised his eyebrow and turned his gaze toward Emily. Emily nodded to his gaze while her cheeks reddened slightly.

□Yes. Like, how come you are able to use that kind of mysterious power. Like, just what are the returnees. Those

kind of things, various things about Kousuke.

.....

Uh. I, I understand that it's a secret matter you know? But, I absolutely will protect the secret. I'm serious, okay? Besides, next time something happen, perhaps I will be able to become Kousuke's strength then, besides, err, besides.....

Seeing Kousuke who spontaneously fell silent, Emily added on her words with a little bit of fluster.

For Kousuke, he didn't have any particular problem teaching her about the returnees. In the first place, they had honestly talked to the media, that they had been fighting the army of an evil god at another world. It depended on the other party whether they would believe it or not.

Emily had witnessed Kousuke's power, so naturally she would believe and accept it. Therefore, it wasn't anything that particularly needed to be hidden from her.

As expected, if it was known by the whole higher-ups of the government, it would cause hindrance to their private life and it would be putting the cart before the horse, so in that case, a large scale countermeasure like pulling out the brainwashing technique of the demon king (especially his wife) would be necessary, but doing something like telling individual like Emily, or Chief Magdanese who knew about the scariness of the returnees like Kousuke and wouldn't easily act against them, there wouldn't be any problem.

Then, if it was asked the reason why Kousuke was falling silent, that was of course because he was told something like "I want to know more about you!" by a beautiful girl. While that girl's cheeks were reddening.

Sure enough, for someone with a lover, it wasn't good for him to step further than this. He was deeply lamenting of why he didn't immediately tell her about the existence of his lover. Thinking back, he wouldn't be lying if he said that there was no timing to tell the truth. But, as expected it would be bad if he told the truth now. If asked what would be bad, of course it was about the possibility that Emily's mind would turn into ash.

Kousuke instantly ended the mini Kousuke meeting inside his heart, and then he replied toward Emily who was still speaking in fluster.

□No, I don't mind, doing just that——□

□Really!?!□

□O, ou□

Emily's body leaned forward from the veranda, with her sparkling gaze capturing Kousuke. Kousuke was thinking that if Emily wanted to know about himself, then he would inform her about how he had a lover at that time, but.....

Seeing Emily whose whole body was radiating□I'm, happy!□, the mini Kousuke inside his heart was rolling around from guilt and various other emotions.

Emily noticed how because she was leaning forward, her distance with Kousuke was so close they were almost touching. She became flustered from shyness while pulling back her body.

And then, Emily was showing quite the sly cuteness from her act of sending Kousuke glances to confirm that he wasn't creeped from her getting too close like that. The song of Rolli○ Girl (from a certain smiling video) was playing out

inside Kousuke's heart. (TN: Rolling Girl. Also a certain smiling video refer to Niconico Douga. Hakumei disguised niconico as nikoniko here, which mean smilingly in Japanese)

□I'm looking forward to it Kousuke. Ah, but, that, can I, ask just one thing right now?□

□Wha, what is it?□

Emily fidgeted, her finger played around with her untied hair, twining the hair around while her cheeks reddened so much it felt like the chilly air would be warmed from it. Kousuke put up his guard, but the question Emily released still hit him like a body blow.

□You see, I'm asking this only out of curiosity, nothing else, but.....what kind of girl, that Kousuke prefer?□

Seeing that kind of transparent attitude, the mini Kousuke was shouting□What do you mean just out of curiosity!? Sly! As expected from Emily-chan! That's sly!□while tumbling down the hill road inside his heart.

The unblinking gaze from Emily caused Kousuke's gaze to wander restlessly, and then he answered honestly.

□Rabbit-eared onee-san.□

□.....Eh?□

A counterstrike at Emily. Emily's eyes turned into dot and she lost for words. The figure of herself wearing bunny girl costume seducing Kousuke with bewitching air was emerging at the back of her mind.

Emily instantly became a completely ripe tomato, so much that it almost felt like a sound of *puff* could be heard. She went 'awawa-, awawa-* in panic, looking left and right, and in the end,

□Ko, Kousuke you pervert!□

She said such thing while rushing inside her room.

□.....When everything is over, I should make a phone call to Nagumo before talking to Emily.□

Kousuke decided in his heart to consult with his friend, his senior who had gone far ahead in the road about understanding this and that of girl.

Although, him noticing that this choice of his was mistaken.....it was a story of a bit later.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Thinking back, it feels like the first smiling video Hakumei first saw was Rol○ng Girl.

I forgot what became the impetus for me to saw it, but it was impactful.

The next update is planned to be at 6 P.M. Saturday too.

YES -, ABYSSGATE -!!

bara-bara-bara-bara- The peculiar sound of rotor was reverberating.

Under the cloudy sky of early morning, the things that were spreading such noise were three large helicopters. The three were forming a triangle formation and pushed on through the cloudy sky in a straight line.

Each of those helicopters was boarded by a fully armed special forces of the security bureau, in addition Kousuke, Emily, Vanessa, and Allen who was wafting off a pathetic aura were boarding one of the helicopters.

□O, oi, Allen. Are you okay?□

Riding on the same helicopter was the commander of the special force who was also the captain of Alpha squad, Bernard Pays. He asked Allen with some hesitation. He belonged under security bureau's assault section, so he was quite acquainted with Allen who was working as analyst in the surface where they often shared information.

Even though they weren't quite friend, but their relationship with each other was at the level of close coworker at least. Therefore, when he saw Allen who was usually acting flippant with light atmosphere was now sitting on the bench

in a style as though he was a certain boxer who had burned out into pure white, he couldn't help but called out to him.

□Aa, Pays-san. Thanks for your concern. If I have to say whether I'm fine or not, I'm not fine, so it's fine.□

□No, that reply is already not fine there.□

Bernard made an expression that didn't know what to say at Allen whose face was still changed into mummy man.

□You see, Pays-san. I'm specialized in killing secretly. My job is to stealthily and quietly go 'pshuu'. Yet despite so, I was told to steal, spurred on to become bodyguard, made to beaten viciously by a demonic young man, sentenced with the caving in of my face by a beautiful girl, and on top of all that, I was told 'go fight a war against monsters' you know? Even though this is the order from the chief that I respected so much, I'll still feel tired from it. I'm just a step away from getting burned out. It's nice isn't it, for Pays-san and others. All of you received healing. As for me, my molars or inside my nose are still feeling throbbing with pain.....head-on fighting isn't my territory you know? Yet despite so, I'm being sent out in this state, I'll die for sure this time.□

'Heheh' Allen chuckled while his gaze was getting distant and his mutter getting sluggish. Bernard's cheeks couldn't stop twitching seeing such an Allen. Inside his heart he was thinking. □This is bad. This guy, he is seriously getting cornered□, like that.

Allen's figure was like a salary man who had become worn-out from continuously working in a black company, sitting melancholically on a bench of a public park while visioning an impossible dream of changing job. The final blow was dealt on Allen who was exposing such appearance.

□That's depressing, Mr. K (lol). Even though it will be the final decisive battle after this, what are you doing getting low spirits like that. I'll gouge you out you know?□

□Scary-. What do you mean gouging!? Where are you going to gouge!? Or rather, what did you add just now when you said Mr. K?□

The cold words that came from Vanessa who was sitting beside Allen had gone passed being sharp and inspired terror instead. Allen was shivering while talking back.

□Please read the mood a little. Right now is a serious time. A lot of lives are hanging on this, and we have to fight an army of berserker after this you know? Please don't make that kind of funny face and act seriously.□

□The one turning my face into funny one like this is particularly because of the fault of you guys though! Besides, I don't want to be told to act seriously by Vanessa——□

□Oi, who said you can call my name casually like that. You want me to turn your face into something that will inevitably invite roar of laughter?□

□I, I'm sorry. But, even if you aren't so angry that your tone change.....a, it hurts-. It really hurts I said! Please don't grind on my injury! Please forgive me, Paradis-san.□

When Allen casually called Vanessa's name, he was given back with indignation that surpassed the imagination. His injury was getting grinded from above the bandage which caused Allen to scream while writhing around.

Certainly, Allen was the perpetrator that scattered around Berserk in the research building. But, in the first place it was

the chief that ordered the theft, then unexpected situation happened on top of another unexpected situation, so to speak what happened was something like an accident.

Allen too pretty much felt guilt about the tragedy that occurred at the research building, and he was also feeling apologetic toward Emily, but because his habitual frivolous attitude was ingrained deeply in his self, he didn't look like he was reflecting in a glance which invited biting attitude from other no matter what he did.

A situation that could only be said as tough luck, and behavior that didn't convey the inside of his heart. If it was said that it was him sowing what he sow then that would be the end of it but.....

Starting with Bernard, the squad members boarding the same helicopter couldn't help but sending gaze of sympathy toward Allen who was still screaming while his face was getting grinded by Vanessa.

Vanessa and others were unfolding a scene that could be seen as comedic in a sense. The one who was seeing them acting like that with a faint smile on her face was Emily. But, there was a gloom in that smile.

Vanessa stole a glance at Emily while grinding on Allen. From that it could be understood that the dialogue to some extent was also to clear up Emily's feeling.

□Emily. Are you okay.....I won't ask you that. There is no way you are okay. It's just like what Vanessa said, right now is the critical moment that will be the turning point. That's why, keep standing firm. We are with you.□

□.....Yes. Thank you Kousuke. Also Vanessa too. I was saying selfish thing to come along with you all. So I won't run away

with tail between my legs in the middle.□

There wasn't any change with the gloom in her smile, but the strength dwelling in her eyes wasn't withering. Kousuke nodded at Emily before quietly peeking outside from the window.

At the outside, there was cloudy sky spreading looking as though rain might pour anytime. While thinking that the sky currently was like Emily's heart, Kousuke put his mind in order about the operation that was currently unfolding.

After destroying all the data and drug of Berserk they found in □Gamma Pharmaceutical□, Kousuke and others scrutinized the flashdisk they confiscated from Kaysis once more. Inside that flashdisk, the data that listed the multiple research facilities where Berserk's data were transferred to was saved in it.

Most of them were research facilities inside a corporation that was unrelated with typical medicine manufacture, but there were several places among them that couldn't be ignored. Those places were dam or water purification plant. Every one of those places was facility that was related to Hydra in some kind of shape, and it seemed there was also a research facility inside them.

It was a terrifying story after they knew about Kaysis's plan.

Naturally, for the security bureau it was urgent to suppress those irrigation-related facilities. Improved version of Berserk still didn't exist, but in the small chance that the existing Berserk was spilled, it would create a tragedy that would be unbearable to witness.

And so, because the number of facilities was a lot, it was insufficient with just the manpower of the security bureau,

they also cooperated with the army and currently a simultaneous suppression operation was currently unfolding toward those multiple research facilities.

□O, oi, Paradis. Don't go further than that. Even like this, he is more or less a precious fighting strength. We really aren't planning to lose, but the opponent is an army of berserker. We had prepared the best equipment, but it's still an unfavorable comparison compared to the army.□

□Muh. I can only draw back if Captain Pays told me that. Mr. K, you narrowly escaped death.□

□U, uu. Is there, any girl that will be gentle to me somewhere in this world.....□

Allen broke down crying as though he had been assaulted by a hoodlum. Gazes of sympathy were focused toward him. Bernard was sighing deeply toward that state of Allen before he moved his gaze toward Kousuke.

Inside Kaysis's flashdisk, it included the list of the many people that were transferred to the research facilities. There were many people who were unrelated with research work in it.....there was no way they wouldn't understand what was the meaning of that. Most likely, they were for human experiment, and also to be put around as *senseless fighting strength* in addition.

A group of berserker that would continue to fight without knowing pain and fear, and they would recover instantly as long as their head wasn't destroyed.....putting it bluntly, this was completely outside of the security bureau's domain. This was obviously a scene where the army should move out.

But, it was undesirable for both Chief Magdanese and also Kousuke to have Kousuke's true identity became exposed to

a group that didn't belong under security bureau. Therefore, the special forces of the army were heading to other facilities, but the facility that they were currently heading toward had to be dealt somehow with only the special force of the security bureau and Kousuke and co.

Bernard had the resolve. He wouldn't hesitate to offer his life anytime if it was for the country's safety. But, even so, he couldn't avoid from his hand getting sweaty. He was planning to be meticulous in putting countermeasure and vigilance, but depending on the situation, there was also the possibility that he would have to shoot his comrade that was turned into berserker.

No matter how he was a veteran leader of the assault section and someone that was appointed as the captain of the special force, it still couldn't be helped that he would unconsciously send gaze of expectation and prayer toward the being(Kousuke) that wielded supernatural power.

Perhaps noticing the gaze of such Bernard, Kousuke who was gazing outside through a small window suddenly returned his gaze and looked at Bernard.

□What's the matter, captain-san?□

Bernard reflexively smiled wryly seeing that light attitude where he couldn't feel any particular fervor from it.

□No, I'm thinking that you are really calm there. I think there is nothing as terrifying as you as an enemy, but when I think that you are fighting together with us as ally, there is nothing as reliable as this.□

□Well, even though you said that they are lying in wait for us, but they are just a muscle-brain group after all. I feel regretful for the people who were simply tricked and turned

into berserker, but based from the data, it seems that the majority is black people, so I don't feel that much guilt. They also have a clear weak point. Even if it's just captain-san and others, I think if you fight calmly, you will manage it somehow you know?□

□You are saying that really lightly. It's like you are a warrior that has gone through many bloodshed even more than me. Do you have experience fighting similar thing like this?□

Bernard's wry smile was increasingly getting deeper from hearing Kousuke's light tone. He suddenly asked something like that. The other squad members were directing their gaze at Kousuke with deep curiosity. It seemed that they were thinking that it might be a reference for the battle after this depending on the situation. But more than half of that interest was just out of curiosity though.

Kousuke returned a wry smile at Bernard's question. When Emily and Vanessa were also directing gaze of deep interest at Kousuke, Kousuke answered while getting a faraway look.

□Well, I actually have, if it's a battle against warriors of god. Although, those guys weren't cute bunches like berserker.□

□Ber, berserker is cute?□

□That's right. Their face was super beautiful, but their fighting ability was bad news on top of bad news. They were moving so fast they didn't even leave afterimage, flying freely in the sky, disintegrated everything while ignoring something like defensive power, they neutralized all attack using twin swords and wings, furthermore they were gushing out like cockroaches.....I made do somehow by dealing one hit kill from behind invisibility, but if I fought them right from the front, honestly, whether I can survive or

not is.....yep, thinking back, it's a miracle we could survive.□

□□□□.....□□□□

The troops including Bernard turned wordless hearing Kousuke's reminiscence that was said with a bitter smile. Inside their heart, all of them were fiercely retorting□What is that joke-like existence!? It's a joke right? Right?□, but no one said it out loud.

At the same time, a faint confidence□Compared to that, we can win can't we?□was welling up inside them. Unexpectedly, it seemed that their morale was raising from the question of Bernard who was wondering of how to encourage the troops.

□We will arrive at the point soon! Start preparing!□

The helicopter pilot gave his report. Bernard nodded to that and gave instruction to the troops. The expression of Emily and Vanessa was also containing nervousness.

The place where they would land at was a lumber storehouse that was slightly distanced from the water purification plant. The water purification plant was in a riverside that was surrounded by forest. It seemed that the research facility was jointly established with that water purification plant.

As for their plan, they would land at a lumber storehouse that was slightly far from the water purification plant, and from there they would advance through land route and suppressed the facility while the enemy wasn't aware of their presence. The biggest point was to raid them with full secrecy and made the related research facility to not realize the attack.

They would silently and swiftly suppress the area without even giving the enemy the chance to activate Berserk. That was their greatest objective ideally.

They would attempt to land at a vacant land that was a temporary storage site for lumber that was lumbered from the forest, then approached the water purification plant from an angle that was completely the opposite side. Even if they couldn't land, there would be no problem if the helicopter descended down until a height where they could drop down using rope.

But, it seemed that the matter couldn't progress that easily.....

□-, wait a second pilot-san! There are people inside the forest! There are more than ten!□

□Wha-. Don't tell me□

Kousuke threw a warning at the pilot who was making the helicopter descending for the landing. Bernard rushed toward the cockpit and Kousuke's side.

□Mister Abyssgate. You don't think those people are worker of the lumbering site?□

□It's Kousuke. Certainly there is possibility that they are lumbering worker. But, even though a helicopter is approaching, they are moving inside the forest *as though to surround the lumbering site*.....do you think that lumbering worker will surround the landing point when they see helicopter?□

□.....I see. I don't want to see that kind of woodcutter.□

Bernard's expression turned bitter from the information he was given. Obviously the enemy was on guard against an approach from the lumbering site and placed their personnel here. Inside the list, there were also people who were formerly police or member of a violent organization, Every single one of them was criminal that had dirtied their hand thickly in crime and backed into corner. They were useful resources to be ordered to act like this.

Most likely they themselves didn't even imagine that they could be changed into monster. However, they were undoubtedly lured by money and told to eliminate approaching enemy.

□Most likely they have reported our approach too.....□

□That's likely. The plan to silently suppress them is meaningless already now.□

□Aa, we can only assault them hard.□

When the grim-faced Bernard instructed the pilot, the pilot made the helicopter climbed back to head directly toward the water purification plant. The next moment, one of the troops who was looking at the situation below from a window made a report that sounded like a shout.

□Missile-! Evade!□

□-, Bastard-□

The pilot cursed while tilting the helicopter greatly to the side. Emily screamed from the radical motion while a portable surface-to-air missile was flying out from inside the forest and approached them in a straight line. The pilot's reaction was splendid, but in the end it was doubtful whether they would be able to evade or not.

The color of resolution dyed the face of Bernard and the troops, in the middle of that,

□——“Black Vortex”□

The moment Kousuke muttered those words with one of his hand on the floor, the helicopter lowered its altitude drastically with a jerk. It was unnatural as though something grasped it from below and dragged it down.

——Gravity magic “Black Vortex”

It was the gravitational field generation magic that Kousuke specialized the most at. If a gravitational field was generated at the selected spot, then he could stand on the ceiling or perform pseudo flight in the sky by “falling”. It was a technique that could be said as the basic of the basic of gravitation magic, a magic that could be used without chant right from the start by someone like Yue.

Due to the gravitational field that was suddenly generated, the helicopter received gravity that was several times the normal and it descended down drastically. In a moment, the missile was passing through above the helicopter.

□Wha, what!? Just now, what happened!?!□

The pilot raised a bewildered voice, but surely it was the group on the ground that was looking at the situation who wanted to say that. After all, the helicopter shifted with a jerk to below just before the missile hit and it was in the middle of swiveling widely. That maneuver could only be said as abnormal.

□I won't let you fire that for the second time.□

Kousuke unraveled the gravitational field and took a glance at the pilot who was recovering the helicopter control while he muttered so with his hand forming seal. He formed a seal even though it had no meaning!

Right after that, with a *poof* a clone body of Kousuke popped out outside the cockpit screen. The clone could be called out within the radius of three meter with the real body as the center, so it was possible to perform pseudo wall slip by using that.

The pilot was busy screaming from seeing a person materializing outside the window. The troops also went "It, it came outt!", they were screaming as though they had encountered a ghost. It seemed that multiple Kousuke had become a considerable trauma for them.

The existence that was barely still Kousuke silently put on a sunglasses outside the window, and then he leaped down while deploying twelve kunais around him like satellites. The next moment,

"I won't ask for forgiveness. Die while resenting me as much as you want. ——'Zekkou Senjin - Hikuusen'" (TN: Hikuusen = Flying Devouring Flash)

The twelve kunais floating around Kousuke flew out all at once. Each of them was heading to a different target like a streak of flash. It went without saying what their targets were.

Including the person who somehow recovered from the shock of witnessing the abnormal maneuver of the helicopter and now was in the middle of preparing the second shot, all the latent berserkers lurking inside the forest immediately got their head's crown pierced in unison and breathed their last.

Kousuke stood midair with black ripples spreading below him while making floating kunais flying freely. Bernard gave a lukewarm gaze at the pilot who was flustered from seeing such sight while giving him instruction to haste toward the water purification plant.

The pilot cursed "What the hell this is, shit" in small voice, however, he still controlled the helicopter without faltering as fitting for a veteran pilot.

Before long, they could see an open space. The water purification plant and a joined white building that in a glance was unclear what its purpose was, were coming into view. They could also see water supply facility at the downstream slight distance away. The whole water purification plant was surrounded by two layers of fence with barbed wire on top of them in addition. It seemed that traveling using helicopter was also taken into account from the start, they caught sight of a large open space and a heliport.

"Chih. They had called in just as expected. They are coming one after another.Doesn't seem like they are a normal security huh."

Using a binocular, Bernard saw a great number of people coming out in groups from the joint building toward the open space that was in front of the water purification plant. His face frowned. Most of the people didn't look like honest people, they were people with air that was obviously thuggish in a glance, but among them there were also the figures of slim young man, female, and also old man.

"Oi oi, you mean all those people are going to get turned into monsters? What now Captain Pays? If we descend until an altitude where you can drop down using rope, we are

going to get shot down if we are hit by a rock that is thrown by a berserker's power you know?□

□Can't be helped. We can only use sniping or grenade from slight distance away to decrease their number as much as.....□

The heliport was already crowded with latent berserkers. The pilot's had a point with his worry, so Bernard decided their tactic with a bitter expression. It was at that timing that Kousuke told them to wait.

□Captain-san. I'll go there. Please open the hatch when we arrive above them. I'll secure the landing place.□

□Don't tell me, you are going there alone? The opponent is a monster group that can only be killed by destroying their brain you know?□

□Yes. But, sniping won't work unless you go through the trouble of making headshot from a flying helicopter, while it's uncertain if grenade can destroy their brain reliably even if it can blow them away. The more time passed, the more the berserkers will come out one after another and we won't be able to take control. There is also the possibility that the crucial targets will run away during that time.□

□That's.....certainly, it's just as you say. That was why we decided to land at the lumbering site five kilometers away from here so that the enemy won't notice us.□

Bernard scratched his head roughly. They got their start spoiled right from the very beginning, and now to make up for that they would make Kousuke who originally should be an unrelated person with this case to clear up the problem. Surely this matter was something shameful for him as a member of security bureau's assault section.

Kousuke who seemed to see through that sentiment of Bernard, clapped on his shoulder thinking that it was unexpected.

□Please don't think that I'm unrelated or anything. Rather, this is *my* battle. I'll eliminate those who stand in Emily's way, protect her, and lead her to where her hand is reaching at. Rather, it's captain-san and others who are our cooperator here.□

□Mister Abyssgate.....□

□It's Kousuke. Well, that's how it is, so everyone, please give me *covering* okay? Aa, also just to make sure, I'm Kousuke.□

The words of Kousuke that were said with a fearless smile naturally caused Emily's eyes to grow moist from feeling moved, while Vanessa was making a triumphant look for some reason. And then, because the troops knew about Kousuke's monstrous power, they felt cheered up and sense of trust in their heart.

All of them saluted with a crisp expression and responded to Kousuke's instruction.

□□□□YES-, ABYSSGATE-!!□□□□

□That's why-, I told you already that I'm Kousuke-!! Is this intentional!? You are doing this intentionally!?!□

□Mister Abyssgate-! We are going to arrive above them before long! It's really okay that I don't lower the altitude isn't it!?□

□Aargh-, pilot! So you too-! The altitude is fine as it is, damn it all-!□

□Abyss! Those guys are starting to turn berserk!□

□Captaiiin! What's with that friendly call name! You want me to punish you with compulsory rope-less bungee jump!? There are about twenty berserkers there huh, son of a bitch!□

□Abyssgate-san! I'm opening the hatch! Good luck!□

□Thank you for the perfect salute! But I'll punch you later! Then, I'll go become the vanguard now!□

□Come all of you! Fix your eyes without blinking! This is the descend of Abyssgate-sama!□

□Danessa. I'll turn you into a lovely villager later you bastaaard! Prepare yourself!□

□Abys—Kousuke-. Do your best!□

□Oi oi oi oi, Emily-chan. You almost called me Abyssgate just now aren't you!? What's the meaning of this!? That's quite shocking though!?!□

Even while making fierce retorts, Kousuke leaned out his body from the opened hatch with his head turning toward Emily. Emily was averting her eyes toward the direction of the day after tomorrow. It seemed that she was plainly gotten carried away by the troops saying Abyssgate on and on.

But at the next moment, the helicopter tilted greatly. It seemed that one of the berserkers had thrown a block with a force like a cannon and the pilot took emergency evasion.

As the result,

□Aa□

Kousuke whose guard was down with his head turned toward Emily left behind that kind of stupid voice and got thrown out of the hatch. The troops went□Aa□in unison while staring at Kousuke who was getting smaller away.

□Ko, KOUSUKEEEEEEE-□

While Emily's voice was echoing, Kousuke was freefalling face-up while his shoulders skillfully dropped in dejection. To fall like this from the helicopter by incident was really a sloppy way to start a fight.

□Well, I'm this kind of character after all. Surely.□

Kousuke muttered that with a sigh, then with a twirl he rotated midair and looked down to the ground. There, berserkers who were already nearly twenty in number roared while waiting impatiently for the prey.

With those terrifying monsters below, Kousuke took out a sunglasses from his breast pocket and calmly put it on. Right after that, the corner of his lips grinned widely. That was the mark of the descent of the abyss.

□Good work with the welcome. As thanks, I'll present you with a magnificent headhunting!□

He kicked on the air. One of the berserkers waiting on the ground reflexively waved up his hand around like a child seeing the falling prey suddenly changing direction.

Lord Abyssgate shifted his landing point. It wasn't because he wanted to avoid getting surrounded by berserkers. Rather, it was the opposite. He flew toward right in the

middle of a spot with the highest concentration of berserkers without hesitation.

And then, just before the landing, *shan-* a clear sound resounded while two short swords were drawn out, his body rotated like a spinning top. Jet black sword flash that could be mistaken as spiral gale was blowing violently, caressing the thick neck of the berserkers that looked like a log.

step, while a light landing sound that was unthinkable coming from a high-altitude descent resounded, the lord stayed unmoving in a chuuni pose. He was kneeling on one knee, the two short swords were held in reverse grip, one at the front and the other one at the back.

At the next moment, four sounds *goto-* resounded behind the four berserkers surrounding the lord. Those sounds unmistakably came from the neck of the berserkers. Looking again, all the four berserkers had cleanly lost everything above their neck. The wounds might be burned or frozen, because no blood spurted out.

The terrifying monsters lost their head that was their only weak point. It was done so easily as though the berserkers were toy that had interchangeable head. *dou-* They fell down while raising such noise.

The lord stood up quietly. Of course he didn't forget to sharply push up his sunglasses with one hand while making cool pose of half his body to the back. Seeing the lord like that, the berserkers growled while throwing their killing intent.

The lord took it stride while going "fuh" before he introduced himself.

□A battle is killing each other with strength and will. You all who are lacking will, you won't be able to stop this abyss. Now, let's pull down the curtain. —Kousuke E Abyssgate, has arrived!!□

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

I caught a cold.....

When I went to buy cold medicine, my bicycle's wheel punctured.....

When I was ironing my suits, I noticed that a part was torn.....

It couldn't be helped, so I drunk the cold medicine and Nico Douga.

John Wick's Udonge is super cute.....

Shootout Dream and Battle of Koumakan are lovely.

The next update is planned at 6 P.M Saturday too.

**Wai-, You Raised Too Many
Flags!**

Part 1

The bodies of the berserkers who were surrounding from four directions were slowly collapsing like a blooming flower.

The figure that appeared from behind the tough meat wall that lost their head, was the lord whose body was wrapped in black outfit and two jet black short swords held in reverse grip. The one-lens type sunglasses was reflecting light even under the cloudy sky, it glittered with a sparkle. Surely it was an optional feature.

GAAAAAAAAAAH!!!

It was a dissonant sound of many overlapping roars. The roars of berserkers shook the air.

Lord Abyssgate who was cool at any time with his body kneeling on one knee and his short swords readied to the front and back, he wasn't perturbed by that shriek that stimulated human fear. He stood up silently while putting away one short sword to the back.

And then, he took a half-body stance toward the berserkers who were tightening their encirclement and thrust one hand forward, his palm was facing up——*kui kui* he moved his fingertip. It was as though he was telling them 'come at me'.

□Let me tell you, this lord isn't so soft that the like of mindless beasts can possibly win.□

It was as though that whisper become the signal, the berserkers roared and began charging from three directions. The vibration of their steps made it felt like the ground was shaking. Normal people would surely lose strength from their waist and felt their groin going cold from feeling that pressure. Just like Emily-chan the other day. Just like Emily-chan!

In contrast the lord——vanished.

It happened in an instant. The berserkers that came from three directions were blown away all at once. They went back the path they advanced through with a fierce momentum as though they just got hit by a dump truck. Naturally the berserkers approaching from behind also got grandly dragged into it.

At the spot where the berserkers were just at, there was the lord in an unmoving pose——three of them.

□Abyss-style Assassination Martial Art – Phantom Attack Form——"Roukyouka"□(TN: Haze Frenzy Flower)

It seemed the lord was pleased with the naming of Abyss-style. He looked pleased that he could unveil the numerous naming (centered on existing techniques, especially the martial art moves that weren't named before this) he had thought up through the whole night last night. The smile on his mouth indicated that.

By the way, what he did was only making clone bodies and simultaneously blew away the enemies that were coming from three directions using palm heel. The ability of the lord's lovely fingerless glove produced unrealistic power that could make huge body in the middle of charging forward to double back. Of course, the lord properly transmitted the

impact to the brain, so he didn't fail at dealing the fatal blow.

□aAAAAAAAAA-!!□

Three berserkers swung down their stout arms like a hammer from behind the three lords. The next moment, the clones easily vanished along with a comical sound. The attack from two berserkers ended up striking the ground in vain.

And then, the true body of the lord——

The enlarged fist the berserker was attacking with was already larger than the lord's head. That fist hid the figure of the lord and without stopping it squashed toward the ground without compromise.

That was how it looked, but there wasn't any remain of the lord in the small crater. The lord that was supposed to be the real body shouldn't be vanishing like a phantom. The berserker who lost his target moved his bloodshot eyes everywhere in search of the target.

□If you lost your reasoning power, then at least sense using instinct.□

□-□

A voice came. From below the berserker.

The berserker looked down on his own feet in shock. His figure that was peering into his own feet with his body leaning forward looked as though he was bowing. He looked really comical acting like that with his large build and the mad atmosphere he was giving off.

A short sword that stretched out from the ground attacked the berserker that was peering at his own feet. The short sword flew out as though it was growing out from the ground, it then pierced the eye of the berserker, destroyed his brain, split the skull and flew out from the back of his head.

Light left the eyes of the berserker that received a lethal attack, his body tilted unsteadily, and at the same time the other hand that was reaching out similarly like the short sword grasped at the berserker's hair and pulled into the ground.

Using that recoil, the lord flew out beside the berserker that was buried into the ground as though its upper body was prostrating. Of course, the lord flew out in a pose of a wild eagle!

□GAAAAAAAH□

The approaching berserker leaped at the lord midair. Using their charging momentum, they threw their body to the air like a cannon ball to shoot down the lord.

□How unfortunate. That's an illusion.□

The body of the berserker passed through the lord's body without hindrance. The one jumping was the clone body of the lord that didn't have substance.

Then, where was the real body?

Of course, the lord was normally right beside you with his painfully thin presence. Even now he was closely nestling beside the berserker-san. However,

□Be embraced by the dark hell fire——”Katon - Enryuuga(Annihilating all creation - The abyss’s world-destroying conflagration)”□(TN: Fire Escape - Flame Dragon Fang)

von A unique sound resounded. The true shape of that sound was at the body of the lord that was dancing midair beside the berserker, the flaming short sword that was in the lord’s hand without anyone noticing——it was the sound of “Heaven Destroying Sword of Lightning Flame” cutting through the wind.

—— Katon - Enryuuga(Annihilating all creation - The abyss’s world-destroying conflagration)

The highest class of fire element magic “Azure Sky”——that magic in a compressed state was enveloping the short sword. The sword that was clad in super hot blue fire cut and melted the target. It made unique sound *von* when it was swung. Because it was a sword that was filled with magic power, it could repel magic attack.

Yes, it was a peerless sword that melted and cut every obstacle while leaving a beautiful trail of light behind in midair——so to speak, it was a light saber!

When this ability was first unveiled, it went without saying how the creator and the lord wordlessly exchanged high-five. And then, unable to contain themselves, the two did make-believe of a certain knight. It was a little bit of black history for the two of them how they received a lukewarm gaze from the two rabbit-ears witnessing their act.

The berserker whose neck was melted and cut by the light sword rolled on the ground right after. Berserkers were attacking the landing lord one after another.

□It's hard to move with that large body right? I'll make it lighter for you——"Demolish Yoke"□

The lord made a sonorous finger snap. Right after that, the surrounding berserkers were blown away to the sky.

——Gravity magic Demolish Yoke

The magic that Miledy Raisen once used at the legendary decisive battle, a magic that forcefully liberated the target from the wedge of gravity. The berserkers who lost the shackle of gravity were thrown to the air helplessly due to a reason that couldn't be resolved using physical strength.

And then, if someone looked at far above the sky, there were two lords standing back to back in bilateral symmetry, as though looking at the mirror reflection. They both were taking stance of half their body shifted to the back, each of them were holding kunais between their five fingers and displayed a throwing stance.

□□Thy art judged by the dark god——"Juuton - Saika no Seitsui(Inescapable Judgment of Abyss)"□□(TN: Gravity Escape - Star Fall of Calamity Judgment)

What was launched was a downpour of kunai that multiplied weight until the territory of several tons.

The dozens of berserkers became helpless due to the restriction that was zero gravity in midair. The only thing that they could do was only using their hand instinctually to cover their head. Even so, perhaps they could possibly defend using those thick arms that looked like a log.

Although, in the first place, Juuton - Saika no Seitsui(Inescapable Judgment of Abyss) *wasn't a technique for piercing* the target. This was an attack that was labeled

as judgment. And then, from time to time judgment was carried on *by reaping the head*.

The result,

□At least, have a peaceful life at the next world.□

At the surrounding at the lord on the ground, a sudden squall poured on the berserkers, where their head was separated from their torso like a joke.

The cause was one thing. The rain of kunai was something to reap the head from the beginning. The super heavy kunais falling to the ground had super-fine steel string tied to each other. Yes, so to speak, the steel string was like a guillotine falling down from the sky.

White smokes were raising from here and there. The ability of Berserk was trying to keep the berserkers alive by repeating super-regeneration, but there was no way it could regenerate the whole body from the head, and it was also impossible to regenerate the brain from the torso. Before long the bodies reached their limit and withered as though in resignation.

The rising white smokes looked like the soul of the people that were liberated from Berserk transformation.

The lord standing in the middle of those white smokes shifted his sunglasses slightly and offered a silent prayer to the white smokes, and then his eyes narrowed quietly toward the remaining berserkers.

Around him were kunais that were connected with steel string floating. *step* The two clones landed down at both sides of the lord. The lord swung the short sword clad in

azure flame while making *von* sound, and then the clones were also swinging a similar sword of azure flame.

□Now then, let's end this quickly.This futile fighting.□

The lord muttered, at the same time his presence got thinner drastically. Even though he was right in front of them, the berserkers' gaze looked around in puzzlement.

Right after that, the lord rushed out.

Five minutes.

That was the time the mindless beasts who were given the name of legendary mad warrior were able to survive in front of the abyss lord.

Part 2

□.....Impossible. What the hell is that.....just what in the world is happening.....□

A man's voice that sounded shaken was resounding in a dim monitor room located in a corner of the research facility. What that person clad in a lab coat looking like a researcher was looking fixedly at with intense concentration, was the image from the security camera that was facing toward the heliport.

It had been anticipated that someday the security bureau or the army would come to assault this place, therefore, the distant place that could be landed by helicopter and the path that could be passed through by car were all monitored. Therefore, when a communication came from the lumbering site, the people here only thought□Aa, they are coming here really early huh□.

As long as they had groups of berserker, they didn't need to fear most armed group. It wasn't like they needed to hold the place and carried out do-or-die resistance. The berserker group was simply for buying time. While the attacker was spending their time dealing with the monsters, they would carry the research data and escaped using the prepared method. After that they would continue research at another research facility.

If they kept repeating that later, they wouldn't be able to be captured that easily. That was what they were thinking.

Yet despite so,

□Impossible. This is impossible-. Just what is that brat-. This is ridiculous! It's like a poorly made American comic-. Who can accept that such thing exist in reality-□

□.....Ingram.□

Beside the man, an armed man with an air that seemed used to battle punched down on the desk loudly while shouting.

The armed man——his name was Weiss Ingram. He was a guard that Kaysis put in charge of the security for this research facility. Narcotic smuggling, human trafficking, inducing war, arms trade, and so on, he was a leader of a mercenary group that would do anything as long as it produced him money.

Weiss had a large scar running from his cheek until his right ear. His face was distorting as though that scar was twitching while he gave some kind of instruction to his subordinate through wireless device. And then, his gaze turned toward the man in lab coat.

□Oi, what the hell are you doing staring idly like that. Finish your preparation to skedaddle right away. I don't wanna die fighting that kind of incomprehensible American comic bastard here. We are going to use all the remaining berserkers and "that" to buy time. We are going to leave this place in five minutes.□

□A, aa, got it. No, wait a second. You are going to use "that" too?□

□Aa? Isn't that obvious? We cannot bring that kind of thing with us anyway. We only need the data of the result of the

experiment, there won't be any problem releasing that to send it to those guys.

“That's.....certainly, you are right. Got it, I'll prepare——”

The man in lab coat was nodding while he was going to say “I'll prepare right away”, but his words stopped in the middle. Weiss turned dubious and his gaze moved to the man, where he saw the man in lab coat had his gaze fixed on the monitor.

In the monitor was reflected the picture of the helicopter landing on the heliport that had been safely secured, the troops of the security bureau's special force quickly getting down from the helicopter, and then a girl with blonde hair tied into a side-tail getting down with the help from the man who annihilated the berserker group using supernatural skill.

The man in lab coat opened his eyes wide while muttering “Why, in this place.....”. Weiss got irritated seeing the man in lab coat acting like that and called “Oi-” with a rough voice. The man in lab coat seemed to come to his senses from that, with ‘hah’ he took off his gaze from the monitor and shook his head once before saying “I'll prepare myself” while exiting the room.

Weiss's gaze returned to the monitor and he narrowed his eyes, staring at the girl who for some reason seemed to embrace the young man, or rather she somehow looked like she was clinging on the young man.

“A girl in the battlefield, huh. Well, she is wearing lab coat, might means that she is someone like that.”

Weiss pondered something before a wide grin that looked disgusting appeared on his face. He then followed after the

man in lab coat and exited the room. He did that while giving instruction to his subordinate through a wireless device.

Part 3

The research facility had white outer wall. The Alpha squad was lining up along that wall with orderly formation. Bernard who was in the lead had his gaze fixed at the door that his subordinate was trying to break.

The other squads, Beta squad and Gamma squad were trying to infiltrate from other entrances. Each of those squads was accompanied by a clone of Kousuke.

Kousuke was vigilantly sensing his surrounding at the back of that formation while being aware of Emily who kept glancing at him with a complicated look.

□.....Emily. I'm really not bothered, so Emily too don't get bothered by it. Rather than that, focus your mind for now. Even though we are protecting you, that doesn't mean it's okay for you to not be careful okay?□

□Ye, yes. I'm sorry Kousuke.□

Actually, Emily was thinking that because she almost called Kousuke as Abyssgate just before he was about to jump from the helicopter, Kousuke accidentally fell down from the helicopter. Because of that she was a little down thinking that she had held the other back right away from the beginning.

Emily apologized right away when she got down from the helicopter, but Kousuke who had offhand knowledge that it was the easiest to get aimed at the moment when a

helicopter was taking off or landing down was being busy acting vigilant at the surrounding, so he only replied "Aa, yeah, it's fine" that sounded really curt.

Of course, he was also really didn't mind, so his words sounded light coupled with that factor too, but from Emily's viewpoint she felt that Kousuke's words had different nuance. So to speak, for her it sounded like "Emily is the same with the other guys huh? Well, it doesn't really matter though".

As the result, Emily leaped at Kousuke. Kousuke was startled and he drew back, but Emily kept clinging at him while yelling things like "You are misunderstanding Kousuke! The bad one is the idiot troops of the security bureau! I just got unconsciously carried away by them, I actually wanted to call your name properly! Please, believe me Kousuke!"

In a site of a battle where a curbstomp play had just been performed, in a situation where they were surrounded by the special force troops around them, furthermore in a time where they were going to march into the enemy base after this, Emily-chan clung while imploring "Don't hate me!" unashamedly. It seemed that her nerve had unexpectedly become thick and sturdy through the case this time.

"Oi, Aby. We are going to charge in. Keep your flirting with your girlfriend for later."

Bernard warned with an exasperated voice seeing the love comedy of the two that was completely lacking in tension (seen from the side) just before they broke in.

"Oi, captain-san. The way you call me get even friendlier huh. If you want to get along with me that much, it's fine to call me Kousuke you know?"

□Is that so? Then you can also call me with my name you know, Aby.□

□.....I absolutely not going to.□

The ignoring phenomenon occurred really naturally. It wasn't like it was caused because of sarcasm, ill will, or teasing. Bernard was calling Kousuke as Aby with so much naturalness like a leaf that would fly if it was blown by the wind.

Beside Kousuke who was making a sour look, Emily who was called as "girlfriend" had red cheeks while her mouth was smiling broadly, she was also throwing a gaze that was mixed with slight jealousy to Bernard who called Kousuke with pet name Aby, even though it was Kousuke's alias. She was busy with various things.

□.....How envious. How jealous. Flirting with a cute girl in this kind of situation.....damn Abyssgate.□

□Who do you think you are addressing without any honorific just now? I'm going to get rid of you while dressing it up as accident you know?□

Allen had a handkerchief that he took out from somewhere and bit on it while going 'mukii!'. It seemed that he was considerably broken. In respond to such Allen, Vanessa was giving a warning with a voice that didn't sound like a joke.....as for her, surely she was already at a point of no return.

The troops including the captain who were emitting nervousness from preparing themselves with the possibility that they themselves might get infected with Berserk exchanged gaze at each other with wry smile seeing the exchanges of Kousuke and co.

□Captain, we can proceed.□

Bernard received the report from the troop that succeeded in unlocking the door and he used his radio. Both Beta squad and Gamma squad also returned affirmative signal for their breaking-in preparation.

Bernard started counting. Inside the tightly tensed atmosphere, the count——turned into zero.

□GO-!□

The troops were invading into the facility with fluentness like a flowing water from Bernard's signal.

Emily was desperately following at the middle of the troops while being surrounded from three directions by Kousuke, Vanessa, and also Allen.

The safety confirmation□Clear□reported back through the radio from each squad.

The corridor was dim. It seemed that the place was only installed with fluorescence lamp for emergency use. The existence of Kousuke and co was known from the battle at the helicopter. Therefore the facility personnel must had already turned off the facility's function and starting to escape.

The squad's objective ranged from capturing to erasing the essential personnel that were important even among the staffs of this facility. And then, their most important duty was to not let the water supply got polluted by Berserk no matter what happened. There wouldn't be any advantage for the enemy to spill the current version of Berserk, but the possibility of what these cornered people might do.....it couldn't be viewed optimistically.

Therefore, now that they had been detected, they had to suppress the whole facility swiftly. The troops were confirming their current position with a device in hand while advancing without hesitation inside the ominous facility without any human presence.

They could see the end of the corridor ahead. It seemed that the path became T-junction there.

It was at that time,

□Enemy-. At the front, they're armed!□

□Spread out!□

Kousuke's yell reverberated. Bernard gave instruction swiftly in a flash. The troops parted to left and right in a second and took cover behind pillar or room entrance. Kousuke also hugged Emily and dived behind a pillar.

Almost at the same time with that, *dadadadadada-* Consecutive gunshots were reverberating. Muzzle flashes blinked at the corridor ahead, at the next moment impacts ran on the wall and pillar where Kousuke and others were hiding and smashed up the surface.

It seemed that it was an ambush by *human*.

The reaction of the troops was also swift. They aimed toward the spot where muzzle flash was visible and began firing with polished accuracy.

□We cannot waste time in this kind of place! Jazz-, grenade!□

□Yes sir—!□

The troop called Jazz pointed the grenade launcher attached under his rifle muzzle and fired deep into the corridor. Right after that, heat wave blew through along with a fierce roaring sound.

□Go-, Go-, Go-!!□

Bernard's command resounded while the wave of the explosion hadn't ended yet. The troops were firing simultaneously while rushing deeper into the corridor. Their gun point was directed ahead at where the corridor was divided to left and right. In a moment they could see the figure of a man running away toward the corridor turn.

The following troops saw men collapsing on the ground, perhaps they were late to escape from the grenade explosion and crouched down. The men were groaning in pain, but right after that, they started to convulse. At that moment,

tan-tan-tan-

Gunshots echoed. The troops drilled the head of the men without hesitation.

□Clear□

□Clear□

The troops reported the confirmation of safety with calm voice. And then, as though nothing happened, the troops advanced forward once more with flowing movement toward the direction where they saw men escaping just before.

(.....As expected, the real deal special force is amazing huh.)

Kousuke reflexively sent praise with a small voice. Vanessa beside him showed her affirmation with an expression that looked slightly proud.

(Naturally. They aren't anything overwhelming like Kousuke-san, but the assault special force of security bureau is unmistakably elites. As long as their opponent isn't a mass of absurdity, they wouldn't fall behind that easily.)

As though to proof those words of Vanessa, the Alpha squad led by Bernard was exterminating the armed group lurking everywhere inside the facility to buy time, as though they were facing children. The squad kept advancing without stopping.

It seemed that the other squads were also the same from the report coming through the radio. There wasn't also any report of someone injured. Kousuke who was sharing information through his clone bodies also understood how his clone bodies didn't really need to do anything, so he once again felt for real the strength of the special force.

While they were advancing like that, Kousuke and co arrived into a spacious room. According to Kaysis's data that they had downloaded before, this room should be the main research room.

As though to show that, there were several machineries that seemed for research use, incomprehensible items left around on a desk, and several personal computers here and there.

□Captain-san.□

□Aa, I know.□

Kousuke called with a small voice, to which Bernard nodded. He already finished giving out hand signs and the troops

also aimed their gun to cover all blind spots.

“Yoo yoo, ain’t this the great elites of security bureau. Just what are you doing, standing around silently in this kind of place?”

The one who was saying such thing with joking mood was a frivolous man with a large scar on his cheek as his peculiarity, Weiss. Perhaps as the expression of his composure, he didn’t even touch the light machine gun hanging on his shoulder by a strap. Both his hands were raised up as though to show his surrender.

“.....Weiss Ingram. I never thought that you are in this kind of place.”

Allen sighed with his gun pointed. When Vanessa asked with her gaze “Who?”, Allen said that he was an inhuman mercenary who some time ago was failed to be caught by Agent L from JD Agency and then went missing after that.

Hearing that, Bernard’s motivation to leave the man alive turned zero, and then was about to give erasure order in a snap.

“O, oi oi, wait a second. If you kill me, something disastrous will——”

“Fire-!”

Weiss was about to say something, but Bernard was merciless. He signaled the men to fire without compromise. Weiss jumped to the side without delay and countless bullets passed through the spot where he was just at a few moments ago.

Weiss hid behind a desk while cursing—This is why I hate the spoiled elites—and sent instruction through his radio. The subordinates of Weiss who were hiding everywhere inside the room pulled their trigger toward the troops right away.

The troops immediately scattered to position where they could cover each other and began firing back to every directions. Kousuke was also starting his half Abyssgate transformation in the little chance some stray bullet would go to Emily while suppressing the enemy force.

—Shit-. That Kaysis bastard. The pay is not worth it at all for something like this! Oi-, old man! Not yet!? We cannot hold on any longer here!—

—

Weiss threw an angry yell while firing back with his light machine gun. Right after that, a man was crawling out on all fours from the shadow of a desk located deeper in the room. It seemed that the man was crouching because he couldn't move due to the intensity of the gunfight.

Weiss who saw that clicked his tongue and took out a smartphone from his breast pocket, and without hesitation he pushed on one of the buttons lighting the screen. When he did that, a scream immediately surged.

—My bad. Die for my sake a bit.—

The button Weiss pushed was the detonator for the —Berserk—that he made his subordinates drunk.

Naturally, Weiss's subordinates knew the true nature of the thing they were made to drink. They knew yet they drunk that kind of thing. If they were asked why, it wasn't because of loyalty but because of fear. Simply because if they didn't

drink it then they would be killed by their boss Weiss. That fear allowed them to take the drug even knowing the true identity of the drug.

Because in Weiss's mind he didn't think that he would be able to escape while leading all his subordinates, he made this inhumanly ruthless decision. He made everyone except his close aides and useful subordinates to take in the drug.

□Chih. All troops, concentrate at the berserkers! Don't get hit by any splash!□

Bernard's order was given, at the same time Kousuke began to deal with the berserkers. He didn't neglect guarding Emily, but there were Vanessa and Allen beside her. It was Danessa-san who recently only showed her unfortunate side, but her strength was an authentic one.

After all, by herself she protected Emily from the dozens of pursuer led by Kimberly while being isolated and helpless, she was a formidable fighter that could overcome even a berserker if it was one-on-one with leeway to spare.

As for Allen, it went without saying. he was a murder specialist that could take on at the same time several berserkers that were the primary source of infection who got dashed with the undiluted solution of □Berserk□. Even now he wasn't letting any enemy getting nearby by means of martial arts that looked like Gun-Kata using two handguns resembling a certain demon king.

But, even so, in this kind of situation where they were surrounded by berserkers from all directions, and it was at a range this close, it couldn't help that the attention would be directed to that way.....

□Ah□

Emily unconsciously raised her voice. Ahead of her gaze there was Weiss who was trying to get out of the room quickly where right now he was opening the door, and a man in lab coat who got his collar grabbed by Weiss before he got thrown into the place behind the door.

Kousuke lopped off the head of a berserker, and then he was about to set forth to capture Weiss—just before he could do that,

□Then, sayonara everyone. Please enjoy your welcoming party until the end no matter what.□

Saying that, Weiss pushed the smartphone button and the solid door closed loudly.

It was unclear just what his reason of pushing the button was. But that reason was immediately turned clear.

□Guruururururu□

A low growling voice resounded between the gunshots.

□Captain-san! The door deeper inside!□

□-, oi oi, what's that.....□

Kousuke was pointing ahead. There, the door that was at the wall on the opposite side of the door Weiss and others went through was being opened before they knew it. And then, Bernard stiffened reflexively when he saw the thing coming out from there.

The thing coming out from there, was a large body that might reach two meters in length—a beast. Its appearance looked like a cat. It had lean limbs and a tail swaying relaxedly. However, it had a large body that couldn't be

found anywhere on earth. Its eyes were bloodshot, and saliva was dripping down from its mouth.

From behind that beast, there were also things that weren't cat, but they were also enlarged beasts that looked hungry without any sanity. There were dogs, mice, and also monkeys. Every one of them was literally a monster.

□I see. There is no reason to not use Berserk on animal. And this place is a research facility. It will be stranger instead if there is no animal as guinea pig.....□

Bernard muttered that with a disgusted expression. He then gave instruction to his subordinates and they rearranged their formation. But, at the same time there were angry yells resounding from the radio. It came from Beta squad and Gamma squad. It seemed that at their side they also encountered berserk animals.

Thanks to Kousuke's clone, currently there wasn't any troop who became unable to fight, but they didn't seem to be in the situation where they could link up with each other soon.

□It can't be helped. We don't know how many of these things there are, but I'll clear——□

□No, Aby. You go chase Ingram and others together with Doctor Grant.□

Kousuke who was in Abyssgate transformation once more was about to take on the berserk animals——the Berserk Beasts. But Bernard stopped him.

Kousuke reflexively turned an expression of disbelief□Are you sane?□to Bernard. Bernard gave a glance to such Kousuke before throwing a flashbang and tear-gas grenade. If they were animal, then even if they were turned mad, they

might falter a bit in front of objects that intensely stimulated their sight and smell. That was Bernard's thinking but.....

Unexpectedly, it seemed that his thinking was right on the mark, The Berserk Beasts didn't falter, but they leaped back greatly.

Bernard was including that useful information into the tactic inside his head while he spoke to Kousuke using the time he bought.

□Both Ingram and that man he took away are both preys that cannot be allowed to escape. We don't know what kind of escape method they has prepared, on top of that we cannot let they buy any time. Besides, there won't be any meaning of you taking the girl here if they get away isn't it?□

Bernard said that with a smile. His gaze turned toward Emily who was desperately looking at the situation around even while he was turning small with both her hands holding her head.

It was exactly as Bernard said. The reason they picked this place from among the places that should be suppressed was for Emily's sake. Emily herself knew that she was asking for something selfish, even so she earnestly requested and arrived here. It wasn't for the sake of the world or even for the sake of the security bureau. It was for the sake of Emily that he came here. It was none other than Kousuke who declared that.

Kousuke looked at Bernard once again. The berserkers around had mostly been dealt by the troops, even so if they had to face the Berserk Beasts then it would be a struggle between life and death for them.

But, the gaze that Bernard returned to Kousuke contained not even a shred of hesitation or fear. He would give his all for the sake of doing what must be done. There was only the resolve as a professional in his gaze.

□I'll send my clones here quickly when they finish taking care the guys at the other places. Don't be reckless and focus on buying time.□

□That's really reassuring. If it's just buying time it will be too simple that I might let my guard down unconsciously.□

Bernard smiled fearlessly. Kousuke also returned back a fearless smile while he helped Emily stood up.

□Bernard. You are a good guy.□

□You notice it this late? You are unexpectedly slow huh, Aby.□

Saying that, Kousuke and Bernard thrust their fist at each other. For some reason Vanessa's eyes were sparkling at the exchange of manly smile between the two, but they ignored it for now.

Kousuke pulled at Emily's hand and broke into a run right away. Vanessa and Allen were also following behind.

At the same time, the Berserk Beasts might instinctually hate letting their prey got away more than feeling disgusted toward the tear gas. They all rushed off toward the four.

□Don't let them hinder Aby and others-!□

The troops laid out a barrage following Bernard's order. The berserk beasts were blown away to the side and made to be unable to stop the charge of Kousuke and co.

Using that opening, Kousuke was able to reach the door where Weiss went into. Kousuke opened the door while he looked at Bernard and the troops who were facing the berserk beasts who had changed target.

Seeing Kousuke and others stopped moving and looking here, Bernard yelled angrily.

□Don't mind us, just go quickly-! Heh, no need to worry, we are going to catch up with you guys soon.□

□Wai-, stupid-! Just why did you say that just now!?□

The speech of Bernard that was said with a fearless smile caused Kousuke to make a retort. Just how could Bernard say that kind of lovely speech in this critical hour? There was no way Bernard who wasn't an otaku was running a joke here, which made that speech sounded excessively ominous.

But, in a perfect form Bernard added more lovely flag as though he was being possessed in this critical hour.

□Aby! Let's get some beer when this case is over!□

□Stop it already! In the battlefield,□When I go home~□type of speech is something that mustn't be said the most!□

Of course, Kousuke's words were ignored so naturally it was unnatural like usual.

□Doctor Grant! There is one thing I want to say to you along with my subordinates if we can meet again later! Will you hear it then!?□

□Eh? Ye, yes! It's a promise!□

□That's why stop ittt! Emily too don't reply back! It's seriously not funny at allll!□

'As expected, perhaps it was better that I remain here.' Kousuke thought so, but right after that, one of the berserk beasts approached Kousuke and co. But because Allen pulled in the other three into the door's other side while saying□Please hurry!□, the beast didn't manage to get near.

The solid door was closed, and in the end the sight of Bernard giving them a thumb up with a nice smile was seared into their brain.

The door was dented then from the tackle of the berserk beast, after that the sound of gunshot resounded *gan gan gan*.

□Now, let' stop standing idly here and proceed!□

Vanessa and Emily stood up from Allen's words. Kousuke also stood up with a speechless expression.

Like that, Kousuke and co started running deeper into the corridor. Vanessa suddenly whispered.

□What a sorrowful affair.□

□You are annoying!□

Kousuke's retort exploded toward that extremely imprudent line. *bachikon* Vanessa's head was struck with such sound while Emily and Allen were bewildered at that incomprehensible act of the two. Kousuke then prayed.

□Bernard. I'll send help there as soon as possible so seriously, don't die.□

For some reason, the figure of Bernard giving a thumb up with a nice smile couldn't vanish from Kousuke's mind.

The Snapping Abyss Lord

Kousuke and co dashed through the dim corridor that was only illuminated by emergency lamps.

They couldn't see the figure of Weiss and the man in lab coat they were pursuing, but there was no hesitation in the steps of Kousuke who was in the lead. He was advancing while his gaze was focusing to the ground of this complicated passage that seemed like an underground labyrinth. There wasn't any map for this place even in Kaysis's data.

Kousuke was following the trail and presence of the escaping Weiss using the skill of "assassin" vocation, [+Tracking]. He didn't miss even the faint trace that was even vaguer than mist which a normal person wouldn't be able to perceive. Putting aside Vanessa who was ecstatic, even Allen's face was twitching for who knew how many times already from seeing that figure chasing after the prey accurately.

○○○○○○○○○○○-○○

□Don't mind them. Run!□

Berserkers appeared from the corner of the passage. The two berserkers were charging at them right from the front, causing the ground to vibrate. Allen and Vanessa spontaneously began to stop their feet to intercept, but

Kousuke accelerated faster instead and raised his voice. The two of them reflexively obeyed him.

Kousuke tensed his legs and put strength into them. He soundlessly accelerated and approached the wall. Emily and others followed behind thinking that he was going to pass through from the side, but they soon knew that wasn't his intention.

Kousuke put his foot on the wall and ran on its surface while his body was turning sideways. When he climbed until the ceiling where his body became upside down, he kept running on the ceiling without pause. —Skill "Shadow Dance". It was Kousuke's favorite skill.

□Hah□

Kousuke sprinted on the ceiling. The movement of the two berserkers who was about to tackle halted for a moment seeing the impossible position of their target. Kousuke rushed into between the two.

Still being upside down, a short sword flashed in a rotation like a whirling wind. A beam of light the color of blue sky gently caressed the necks of the berserkers, melting and cutting without reservation. Shockwave flew from the fingerless glove too as though it was only done as an extra, blowing away the berserkers to the wall.

Kousuke landed lightly and then he resumed running in the lead as though nothing happened.

The body of the berserkers convulsed in vain on the wall, without any splash or without being any obstacle at all.

Even before reaching this far, there were berserkers and berserk beasts attacking them incessantly. Most likely they

were prepared by Weiss to hinder them, but they only came sporadically and couldn't hope to stop Kousuke on his track.

Before long Kousuke and others ran into a steel door at the end of the passage. The width of the passage was quite wide, but there were large boxes and machine parts cluttering the floor that if multiple people wanted to pass through they would need to line up in a single line.

□Vanessa-□

□Roger.□

When Kousuke called, Vanessa moved instantly in understanding. She hugged Emily who was at her side and hid behind a large machine part. Allen also took cover smoothly after her.

A beat.

DA DA DA DA DA DA DA DA DA- Thunderous roar echoed. A machine gun in full auto spouted fire and a great number of bullets scattered the packages filling the corridor. Kousuke smoothly evaded the flying bullets and threw a kunai.

□Kousuke-san. Your Vanessa is desiring to see the scene of cutting bullets with katana.□

Vanessa-san who was loyal to her own desire even while getting exposed to gunshot. Emily who was being embraced inside Vanessa's embrace was dealing the slaps of straight man repeatedly *pechi pechi* even while turning small.

□No, putting aside getting out from line of fire, but a stunt like cutting apart bullets from full-auto shooting with unparalleled accuracy is beyond me okay?□

Vanessa's eyes turned round while she went "Ee....." hearing what Kousuke said. It seemed that the Kousuke inside Vanessa had been turned into someone who could do anything.

Vanessa turned a gaze that seemed to want to say "You're kidding, you say that, but the truth is?". Kousuke smiled wryly to that.

"Something like cutting all bullets fired in full-auto without even missing one, that kind of stunt is only possible for the demon king or the demon king's wife the swordswoman-sama. As for me, I'm going with petty surprise attack just fine."

Kousuke shrugged his shoulders, and then at the next moment, his figure vanished. In exchange, there was a kunai at the spot where Kousuke had been at until now. That was the kunai that Kousuke threw just before.

Natural, for the kunai to be there meant,

"Guah!?"

"Shit-. Since whe——"

"Gafuh!?"

Kousuke was in the middle of the enemies.

It was one of the abilities possessed by the kunai. Space substitution. The subordinates of Weiss were panicked at the sudden appearance of Kousuke at the wall where the kunai had stabbed. They aimed their gun muzzle without delay, but at that time they could do nothing but having a tearful separation, between their head and body.

A single attack of heat and slash given them an unreal death. Their torso and head rolled like broken toy without even any time to transform into berserker and they departed for their journey to the other world.

Even so, different from a berserker's last moment who would have their body dried up completely and broke down to a degree they couldn't keep their original shape, now the space was filled with human corpses rolling around everywhere. That factor was enough for Emily who wasn't used to death to turn pale and bile to rise up in her throat.

□Emily, right now think only about what's in front of——□

□I, I'm fine, Kousuke. Let's go!□

Her smiling face was twitching and pale, but Emily stopped Kousuke's words with a strong voice. And then, she stared at the solid-looking steel door in front of her eyes, as though she understood something.

□Kousuke. Ahead of this is.....□

□So you realize. Yeah, that's right. They are at the other side of this door. It looks like they are flustered, but they still aren't escaping. Looks like we made it in time.□

□I see.....□

Emily took a deep, deep deep breath. And then, she closed her eyes just a little. By doing that, scenes revolved behind her eyelids like a revolving lantern. The days she spent at Down classroom. The smile of Hendricks and Lizzie who looked after her, the quarrel between Rod and Dennis in place of greeting, Jessica's mischievous smile, the joyful and fun joke exchange between Sam and Milo.

They were Emily's beloved big brothers and sisters. They weren't here anymore. She could never meet them again, her precious family.

Emily opened her eyes quietly.

□Kousuke, please.□

□Ou□

Her words were few, but the response she got was strong. Kousuke's short sword left azure trail behind and pierced the steel door. It was as though a knife stabbing through butter, the short sword smoothly pierced without meeting resistance. The place pierced by that super-high temperature had the surrounding area melting in the blink of eye.

plop, plop The steel door was turned red hot and melted down. The sight behind the door was starting to turn visible bit by bit from there.

It seemed that it was an underground parking lot at the other side of the steel door. There were several passenger cars and freight cars, there were also particular vehicles like forklift and so on.

Beside one of those cars, at the side of a medium-size pick-up truck, there was the figure of two people. They were at the side of the truck load that seemed to be filled with luggage, but it appeared they were astonished with the steel door melting. They were standing still without a twitch.

plop, plop The door was vanishing, The door separating Emily and the man was vanishing.

Their knees were starting to be visible. One set was Weiss that they saw before this, while the slack of the other man was something really familiar for Emily. That slacks was dark brown and Jessica and Lizzie always said that it was too plain. Surely if the slack was seen from nearby, there would be a small fray that could be found around the right knee.

The belt was starting to get visible. That belt was slightly thinning recently and the holes were shifted. Everyone was worried if the wearer of that belt was eating properly because he often went on a trip.

The necktie was visible. It was a bright navy blue necktie with sharp stripes on it. To tell the truth, it was a present from Emily to him for his birthday. The expense choked out her pocket money while she chose the necktie with the help of Lizzie and Jessica.

□Aa.....□

Emily unconsciously leaked out her voice. That voice came from her fleeting hope—that “It could be a mistake by some chance”, that hope which she herself would laugh at, it was now crushed to bits.

Kousuke swung his arm. The steel door was blown away without leaving any trace.

There was no more thing that stood in their way.

The remains of the steel door illuminated the surrounding bright red even though they were rapidly cooling down. Emily slowly walked forward while the remains were scattering. At her right side was the protector from the Far East who was wielding the mystic, at her left side was the heroic protector who would stand up even against her motherland if it was necessary, and behind her was the

protector who shouldn't exist that symbolized the necessary evil. She entered while taking them along.

The fluttering lab coat, that was Emily's pride. The proof of her pride of the things she had piled up and of the place to belong that was given to her by him. But right now, that pride felt really heavy, really empty.

Beside Weiss who was cursing "This is too fast, this damned monster" while holding his head, there was the man who was still petrified in astonishment. Emily looked like she was going to burst crying anytime, however her expression was filled with the resolve that she absolutely wouldn't cry. It was with that expression that she opened her mouth to that man.

"Why did, you do it.....teacher?"

There was no way the man couldn't understand the meaning of that question.

The first voice Emily spoke out, it made him, Emily's teacher that was like a substitute of her father—Professor Reginald Down to come back to his senses.

"Emily....."

"Why did you do it, teacher?"

Hearing her name called by that voice that she thought wouldn't be able to hear for the second time, it caused Emily's heart to be shaken whether she wanted it or not. The words that she repeated had no intonation, perhaps because she was forcefully holding down her emotion.

".....Emily, I——"

Professor Down's words got caught up in his throat once more. He bit his lip hard, as though he was in pain, or as though he was holding back something. Kousuke and Vanessa watched over the scene.

Silence ruled over the place. In the middle of that, Weiss suddenly glanced at his wristwatch. At that moment, Allen who had never taken off his gaze from Weiss reacted.

He exchanged glance with Kousuke for an instant. That was him signaling to let Emily kept talking while he would capture Weiss ahead. There wasn't any reason to let an enemy at large, so Kousuke also showed an agreement with his gaze.

Like that, Kousuke and Allen were about to leap out, but just before they could,

□Whooops, don't move you two. If not I'm going to make this beloved papa of that missy get riddled with hole yeah.□

Weiss who anticipated that quickly move and circled his arm around Down's neck and pinioned him from behind. He was hiding behind Down and turned him into a shield while his gun muzzle stuck out on Down's side.

Weiss hindered Emily's talk with his gun muzzle not wavering. Vanessa gazed at him with a suspicious gaze.

□What are you planning?□

□What, nothing. *Even though he is threatened*, but as expected, with the girl who is like his daughter in front of him, perhaps this guy might do something stupid. That's what I think, you know?□

□Threaten?Are you saying that Professor Down is here because he is being threatened?□

□Hm~~, it's a bit of faulty expression to say threaten I guess. It's that, something like unwillingly complying with forced request for cooperation.□

It seemed that Weiss wanted to say that Down was here unwillingly. Down's face grimaced from the sensation of gun being pressed hard on him. Weiss grinned smugly while he jerked his chin toward Emily.

□Genius missy. This substitute father of yours is really gallant see. He will lick even other people's shoes with the term that they won't lay your hand on you. Even I got moved into tears by that devotion and thought that maybe I'll overlook you missy, but it's a different story if you come here by yourself.□

□Wa, wait, that's not what we agreed on. You said that Emily won't——□

Down showed his panic hearing Weiss being talkative. Just from looking at that, it really seemed as though Down was obeying without any choice because Emily was used to threaten him.

Weiss sent a vulgar gaze at Emily as though he was going to ridicule Emily's agitation——

□Teacher, please answer. Why, did you come to do something like this?□

□.....□

What was there, was an Emily who wasn't shaken even for a bit, her straightforward gaze was unchanging while her

expression looked as though she was desperately stifling her overflowing emotion. Rather, her expression was showing as though something was dirtied from how Down was still displaying that kind of farce at this point of time. Be that as it may, a strong will could be seen from her that made it clear that she had no plan of going along with that kind of farce.

Kousuke and Allen spontaneously made a small smile seeing how Emily acted. Vanessa too, even though she was gazing at Emily with concern, but her expression was proud toward Emily who was showing her “strength”.

□What’s this, I thought you are going to get shaken at least a little. Well, I didn’t expect that much from this anyway. It’s fine because the sure thing will be from here on.□

Weiss easily separated from Down and he shrugged his shoulders, and then he cleared away in one go the cover enveloping the large box that was put on the back of the pick-up truck.

□-, you-□

□Ooh, so you are shaken by this. I’m glad I brought it here for just in case.□

Emily glared at Weiss with a furious look. Kousuke and others also weren’t an exception. That special case with transparent surface was filled with children who hadn’t even reach five years old. They looked really scared, three children were snuggling with each other at a corner of the cramped case, their body huddled down while trembling fiercely.

Weiss pushed his finger on the smartphone on his hand while his vulgar grin deepened.

□The American comic bastard over there, also the agents, and even Emily, don't move okay? If my finger slipped because of the spur of the moment, this brats will end up going with cheery monster debut yeah?□

Because Weiss knew about Kousuke's ability, he didn't take his gaze off from Kousuke even for a moment despite his frivolous attitude. Most likely, the moment Kousuke's presence vanished even for an instant in this situation, he would move his finger without hesitation and activated the detonator switch for the Berserk that was consumed by the children.

.....And so, Kousuke was normally vanishing just like usual.

□You scum. Just the fact that you are living is a crime.□

Vanessa who guessed what Kousuke was doing cursed to buy time. Weiss's expression turned amused instead at the abuse from an opponent in a situation where he was overwhelmingly superior and he shrugged. Of course, he didn't take off his gaze from Kousuke.....he didn't take off his gaze.....

□It's better for you all dogs of the government to increase your cursing variation a bit more. I already got too used at what you guys will say, recently it was boring for me. Well, no matter. Come on, first of all, you guys toss the dangerous items to the floor.□

His gaze toward Kousuke wasn't taken o.....wasn't tak.....it was taken off.

Weiss's gaze smoothly flowed toward Vanessa who was talking at him. He did that really naturally, without any doubt, as though it was only the norm. He slowly lowered

down his gun and he made a satisfied smile toward *Allen and Vanessa*.

□Not using skill is also advantageous sometimes.....it's not like, I'm crying here.□

□Wha-, guwah!?!□

Kousuke-san who was normally at your side, weeping like usual, was here. He ignored Weiss who jumped in shock, held his wrist and made him dropped the smartphone, and then held him down to his knees.

□Guh, god damn it-. This American comic bastard! Just why the hell something like you comes out here huh!□

□It's not like I don't understand your feeling, but be quiet for a bit. Right now is Emily's time.□

When Kousuke increased the pressure at Weiss's joint, Weiss leaked out a small anguished voice□Ngh□before he shut his mouth.

Down backed away from Kousuke who suddenly appeared at his side where Emily's gaze then pierced through him.

But, right after when they thought that Weiss's farce was over and they could start talking,

goun-goun-goun-

A suspicious voice that sounded like it was resounding from the bottom of earth resounded on the eardrum of Kousuke and co. It was the sound of some kind of machine activating. And it also sounded really loud. Kousuke and co ran their gaze suspiciously on the floor.

And then, their gaze caught a crack running through the floor. No, it wasn't a crack, but a circle line with its center split by a vertical line.

□Is that, elevator?□

Vanessa muttered. It was just as she said, there was an underground space further underneath this underground parking lot cum cargo storeroom. The diameter of the circle shaped elevator was around seven, eight meter. It was a large elevator for transporting large machinery and material.

It was climbing up. Kousuke and others had bad premonition welling up inside them fiercely. This time a muffled laughter resounded in their ears.

□Ku-, kuku-, fuhah. It finally arrived. It thought a lot of time to lure it until the elevator, but it's barely safe. I thought just what will happen when the distractions got easily broken through and we were caught up with, but it's worth it making up that kind of farce.□

Weiss said that kind of thing while getting pushed on the floor by Kousuke. They were about to question what he meant by that, but before they could, the elevator's door opened. The floor split to left and right, and a hole was opened wide on the floor——

Countless something instantly flew out from there.

□-, Get down-□

Kousuke yelled while taking position in front of Emily right away. And then, he mowed down those things attacking them with a flash of his short sword. Vanessa and Allen also quickly got down and they succeeded to evade the first attack somehow.

Those things intercepted and severed by Kousuke made raw sound *bicha* and fell on the floor. The fallen things convulsed with watery sound, while the sources of the things that lost its tips were pulling back into the elevator.

□Te, tentacle?□

□Looks like it. Those guys, just what in the world they are calling to here?□

The things that Emily mentioned while her face went pale were indeed tentacles. They were skin-colored, fleshy tentacles that even looked like human guts. Those things flew out simultaneously from the elevator.

□Old man. It's plan B! Run until the meeting point somehow!□

□-, Go, got it!□

The moment Kousuke left him, Weiss sprang up to his feet and jumped to the side. He barely avoided those things that also came attacking at him. And then he took out an attaché case from the pickup truck's driver seat that had its door opened all this time. At the same time he started up the engine.

But, he didn't enter the truck, but started running in full speed while still holding the attaché case.

On the other hand, Down also seemed to know what was coming from the underground, he rolled under the truck the moment the elevator's door opened and like that he came out at the other side and hid there, so he was safe. And then, just like Weiss, he took into his hands a shoulder bag and a rectangle case. He then started running toward a door at the opposite side of where Weiss was going.

Naturally, Kousuke and others aimed their kunai and gun to stop Weiss, but a lot of tentacles flew out before they could and hindered them.

On top of that,

□Ah, Kousuke-. Those children-□

□That bastard-. So this is his aim from the start-□

The tentacles attacked the pickup truck as though they were reacting to the engine sound. Even though each of the tentacles was only as big as an arm of a child, they instantly toppled the truck sideways without any difficulty. Naturally, the case holding the children was thrown out from the truck. The children who were jostled inside the case screamed.

The tentacles reacted to that scream and entangled around the case. It seemed that it was a tough case, so the case wasn't crushed or squashed, but the case was dragged toward the elevator.

□Vanessa, Allen. Take care of Emily!□

□Acknowledged!□

□Aah, geez. This is completely out of my field you knoww□

They followed Kousuke's instruction and went to Emily's side to protect her, then they led her away to take distance from the elevator. Most of the rushing out tentacles was cut apart by Kousuke, even so, as expected from the two, their skill allowed them to accurately blow away the remaining tentacles using bullet.

Kousuke judged that it would be fine to leave them to fend for themselves for the moment and he was going to rescue

the children.

However,

□No way I'll let you do that so simply yeah!□

□You-, this shitty bastard!□

Weiss fired his machine gun from the other side of the door. He was aiming at Emily. As expected, a feat of shooting down bullet using bullet could only be done by a certain demon king. It was impossible for Vanessa and Allen.

Therefore, Kousuke couldn't help but defending against that using his kunai to deploy out a barrier. Although it was only for a little while, but Kousuke was still being held in place,

□Yoo, American comic bastard! If you are a hero, then don't abandon those pitiful children just like a hero yeah.□

Weiss's disgusting laugh echoed, at the next moment—it flew out.

Like a spear that was thrown by an expert, countless tentacles stretched out and stabbed on the ceiling and wall. And then, by using expansion and contraction, and recoil, something that could be described as a lump of meat appeared from the bottom of earth.

It was weird and repulsive, like minced meats that were haphazardly kneaded to each other, with tentacles haphazardly growing a lot from there. That figure stirred up instinctive revulsion from anyone seeing it.

It wriggled with flabby motion and crawled up like a muddy stream, It scattered around flesh and liquid while covering

over the nearest prey. —Yes, toward the case where the children were inside.

□That case is a solid one, so it will be able to hold for a bit even if it was swallowed by that ruined experiment. Do your best and go all out to rescue those children. We won't mind it okay?□

A ruined experiment—just as those words stated, the meat lump was a product that was created from a process of an experiment. The reason this thing ended up as this ugly meat lump was only one, it was because of a demonic deed that was done for the sake of knowing the limit of Berserk's ability.

Berserk would repeatedly caused regeneration by forcefully invigorating the cells until past the limit of the flesh. Then, what would happen if Berserk was continuously administered while also continuously giving healthy and young flesh to the subject? The subject would fuse its former flesh with another flesh in the form of it getting swallowed inside regeneration. Such thing was repeated.

Like that, what resulted was the worst monster that didn't even retain its shape as a living thing—a Berserk Chimera. It was already incomprehensible just what was the former organisms that entered into the fusion.

It took time to lure this thing from the underground's deepest experiment room until here using any kind of bait. But, Weiss believed that it would be impossible to hold back this existence that was wielding supernatural without using the Berserk Chimera. This was his genuine trump card. That farce and all his talkativeness were for buying time to guide this Berserk Chimera.

Weiss immediately vanished behind the door at the same time with his spoken out parting remark. After the berserk chimera took the children's case, it continued to attack Kousuke and others without pause using his tentacles like a storm.

Kousuke defended against all those while gritting his teeth hard. Behind him, Emily called at him with a trembling voice.

□Kousuke, those children.....what to do! They have to be saved!□

□.....□

There was no reply. Normally, Kousuke should reply right away with words that were overflowing with confidence, but now he didn't reply right away. A bad premonition welled up inside her. By any chance, perhaps even with Kousuke here, those children were beyond salvation already. Was this the end, just like what Weiss said.....

□Kousu——□

Emily slowly peeked at Kousuke's side profile with an expression that almost cried. She instantly swallowed back her words unconsciously.

Kousuke was always like whistling wind, or making a troubled smile on his face. Sometimes he showed a serious face, a resolved face, a nostalgic face. Emily had seen all those faces until now, but she had never seen Kousuke's current face.

There was nothing in it, an expression of "nothingness".

Honestly, she shuddered. The eyes without any emotion in it, staring straight at the berserk chimera, and the expression where all emotion had slipped off cleanly from it, it was as though the person there wasn't Kousuke.

□I somehow, understand. Even though I don't know how your former appearance looked like, I understand somehow.It's scary isn't it? It's painful isn't it? You were brought to this kind of place, and ended up like that.....□

Those words lacked intonation. There, not just Emily, Vanessa and Allen also noticed.

Kousuke, had "snapped". It wasn't at the level of the anger he showed when Emily was cornered by the security bureau. At that time there was still some saving grace. The Grant family was in good health and they were already rescued, Chief Magdanese and her group were also people with conviction, and the incident at the research building had a strong aspect as being an accident.

That was why, even though Kousuke was angry at that time, he wasn't totally angry. But, right now was different. What was in front of Kousuke was an inhuman act. An avatar of malice and greed. He understood. Even though he didn't know the detail, but he understood, just what was the material used to make the meat lump before his eyes. He understood, just who was crying and screaming at that time.

That was why, the feeling that Kousuke held——was rage.

□Allen.□

□Ye, yes-□

Allen who was suddenly addressed twitched in reaction. Allen was sweating coldly from the terror that was silently,

but surely eroding him. Kousuke commanded at such Allen still with a voice that was lacking intonation.

□Chase after “that”. Stop him in place, until I catch up after I rescue those children.□

□Ye, YES SIR-!!□

Kousuke stabbed his short sword into the ground and made a path of flame ran on the ground. A path that was protected by a flame wall ran straight until the door where Weiss entered. Allen dashed through it.

□Emily.□

□Hy, hyes-□

□Chase after the professor. Vanessa.□

□Yes, Kousuke-san.□

□Protect Emily.□

□Acknowledged.□

Flame ran, toward the door Down went through. Emily was hesitating, but Vanessa held her hand and pulled her. Even so, Emily was worried about the children and also about Kousuke. When she looked back, there, Kousuke was putting on his sunglasses while opening his mouth.

□Don’t worry Emily. I’ll save those children. I’ll destroy this pitiful monster. I’ll make “that” regret that he was born. I’ll leave only Down to Emily, but I also won’t let anyone other than those guys to get away. That’s why, go.□

□Ye, yes, I understand.Kousuke, please, save those children!□

□Yeah, leave it to me.□

Emily started running, led by Vanessa. The berserk chimera instinctually shirked away from the flame wall, even so it still tried to capture the preys by stretching its tentacles in roundabout way through the ceiling, but all its efforts were pushed back by the barrier from the kunai and it couldn't approach the preys.

Emily and others chased after their respective target and their figure vanished from the room. Detecting that, Kousuke, no, the abyss lord declared calmly without even taking a cool pose.

□This rage, surely belongs to all of you who are toyed by others as they pleased. In return, I'll dispel your chagrin for you. That's why, please, sleep peacefully.□

The abyss lord who was driven by rage, began his battle for the sake of salvation.

I Wanted, to Have a Date.....

He was running without making any sound, while paying the greatest caution to the surrounding, yet his running speed was still top speed. The agent of a nonexistent organization——Allen, was chasing after the escaping Weiss with an astounding speed.

It seemed that Weiss was heading toward the installation of this facility's power generator, Allen could see various pipes and electronics, big and small through the corridor.

But, at that time, Allen's gaze suddenly caught something that he ought to be careful against. It was a very fine wire that was set up on the corridor inconspicuously. A simple trap.

Allen's face didn't change, his running speed didn't decrease, he went to the wall and jumped. And then, by kicking on the wall he climbed until near the ceiling, his hands caught one of the pipes and he flew over the wire like a pendulum.

That jump looked excessive just for jumping over a single wire, but actually that wire was a bluff, there was an infrared-type trap set up ahead of that wire, so Allen's action

was correct looking at the result. It was an instantaneous judgment based from Allen's experience of many years.

□This will be easier if I can run on the ceiling like him though!!□

□Chih. You bastard are also monstrous enough to be able to react to that-□

Weiss who was hiding behind a cover aimed at the moment Allen landed and fired. However, Allen also read that ahead, he got down looking as though he was clinging on the floor the moment he landed, so the bullet futilely passed through above his head.

Still lying down on the floor, Allen pulled his gun trigger without any time lag. His bullet counterattacked Weiss. Weiss leaked out □Uoh-!□voice, even so he managed to dodge by hiding his body with the agility that was in the level of a cockroach.

□Eat this too!□

□Are you idiot, doing that in this kind of place!?!□

Weiss threw a hand grenade while roaring angrily. It was a cramped place like this, furthermore the place was packed full with pipes that were unknown what their function were. 'Just what the hell he is thinking throwing explosive here!' Allen sprang to his feet even while cursing and he aimed in kneeling posture using both his hands.

Like that, the bullet he fired accurately shot through the midair grenade, and it exploded right in the middle between Weiss and Allen. Allen rolled to the passage's wall at the same time with his firing and then he covered his whole body with his coat that possessed the function of bullet-

proof, knife-proof, and impact resistance. Even so he gritted his teeth from the impact that made him felt enough pain while trying to snipe Weiss, at that time,

□Ih!?!□

□Light is with you, I guess?□

Allen's cheeks twitched from looking at "that" rolling below him. Right after that, *kat-* intense light surged out.

Weiss who in a sense believed at Allen's skill had predicted that Allen would shoot down the hand grenade, so he also threw a flashbang at almost the same time.

With this, he ran out of grenade and flashbang. The double layered trap and the hand grenade was a preparation to steal Allen's sight in this moment.

At the same time when the light was starting to settle down, Weiss sent machine gun bullets at the spot where Allen was. His tactics was flowing smoothly without any hesitation and mercy, brought about by his overwhelming battle experience. He became the target of JD Agency because he was using this skill of his to accomplish immorality and turned the table at the many polices and agents coming to capture him.

He was even able to escape once from an agent of that JD Agency, his skill was something authentic in contrast with his frivolous attitude.

Although, if it was asked whether that skill could work that easily against the man who was named to work directly beside the chief of the state security bureau even from among the JD Agency,

tan- tan-

□Tsua!? Son of a bitch-□

Two gunshots echoed, at the same time Weiss's machinegun was blown away. It was merely luck that his fingers didn't get blown up too.

Weiss immediately drew out his handgun to fire back. But, he whispered□That just ain't possible□with a displeased expression seeing what appeared at the space where the flash had settled down.

□It's the standard for a spy to have seven gadgets right? My organization is a nonexistent one, but the guys affiliated with it are all comparatively a believer of romance you know?□

Allen said so with his hand holding that——a coat that hardened like shield and blocked the bullets. He waved it lightly. Inside his heart he was going□That was dangerous just now!□while sweating coldly, but he was hiding it with his usual foolish smile.

□Spare me from a real ○07. Don't tell me, that the developer of that thing is named Q or something, that's not it yeah?□

□.....No comment.□

□So it's really Q huh!? Your organization is screwing around too much!□

□No, no comment.□

Both of them were acting the funny man and the straight man like television performers while at the same time they pulled their gun trigger. They were trying to take each

other's life smoothly while talking jokingly. It was a black communication between a veteran mercenary and a first-class assassin.

As expected it seemed they had predicted each other's movement, the bullets grazed the cheek of the two who were in a stance of half-body. (TN: This half-body stance is like karate stance, where you directed one side of your body toward diagonally behind, so to make your body a smaller target)

Allen made his coat as substitute for a shield and charged forward in a dash. The passage wasn't that wide, so when the shield of the hardened coat that was spread widely launched a shield bash, it was impossible to dodge.

Weiss got a future vision where he got pushed down—and he instead stepped forward. If here he showed his back, he would undoubtedly get shot on the back and died. He judged that his path of survival only existed at the front.

Weiss slid the moment just before he came into contact with Allen. Perhaps he was trying to slip through between Allen's legs, but there was no way Allen would allow that and he swung down the shield—right before that, Weiss fired repeatedly toward the ceiling.

□-□

The fired bullets hit a pipe at the ceiling and it came back toward the ground by a complicated ricochet. Allen immediately lifted his coat as shield and blocked the ricochet. At that moment, Weiss was sliding on the floor while passing through.....during that time he unsheathed a knife to mow Allen's foot.

Allen blocked that knife using his shoe that was inserted with a metal plate, he discarded his coat and at the same time used one hand as fulcrum and kicked with a reversed foot. The shoe of that reversed foot had a mechanical knife flying out from its tip.

Weiss blocked that using his gun barrel while retreating from the kick's range using the momentum of his sliding. He rotated once and then aimed toward Allen from a kneeling stance. Allen also aimed his gun from a kneeling stance too.

□Just die quickly, dog of the state.□

□Please die quickly, mercenary.□

A beat.

tan- tan- tan-

Bullets showered to each other from point-blank range. Although, the firing line of Allen's gun was slightly shifted by Weiss's knife, while Weiss's gun also had its firing line shifted by a retractable baton that Allen took out unnoticed. It finished with only their cheek grazed.

jako- Their bullet ran out at the same time with that sound. Weiss pretended to retract the knife in his left hand and in the middle he threw that knife to his right hand. His left hand caught Allen's baton without pause, while the knife landed on the right hand's grip as though it was absorbed to there and approached to carve Allen's throat.

Allen easily abandoned the baton and stepped in so low he looked like he was crawling on the ground. He dodged Weiss's murderous blade while he grasped his collar. And then he turned around. He threw up Weiss with his waist's motion.

Weiss that was flung away with a so called shoulder throw then had his back struck the floor. "Gahah" Air was driven out from his lung.

"Yep, the end."

"Well, not yet actually."

Allen pulled out his spare gun and he pressed the gun muzzle on Weiss's forehead. At the same time, Weiss also talked lightly even with his face grimacing and he pressed a button on his wristwatch.

The next instant, a thunderous roar and an explosion blast blew violently from behind Allen. Allen's gun muzzle shifted slightly due to that and because Weiss's head swung aside, the bullet veered away.

Weiss jumped to his feet and dashed fiercely toward the nearest door. Allen immediately fired, but Weiss stepped on Allen's coat while passing through and sent it flying to block the bullet. Even so he couldn't avoid all the bullets and he got his shoulder shot, but he didn't pay it any attention and opened the door with a tackle and jumped inside.

"Good grief, what obstinacy. I can understand how J can let him get away."

Allen made a bitter expression at his failure of letting Weiss slipped away while he immediately move to chase behind.

He clung on the door and his face slowly peeked in. Right after that, storm of bullets rained down like a hail. It seemed that Weiss had a spare machinegun. Most likely Weiss was someone wary, so he had put weapons here and there through his escape route.

Allen took out the magazine from his gun and confirmed his remaining bullet. He only had few bullets left. There was one more magazine on his waist holster.

□Haa, I used up too much on the berserkers at the first half of this mission.□

Allen smiled bitterly while exchanging his magazine with the new one and put away the half-used magazine. And then, he pulled out a pin from his wristwatch and dropped it on the floor. Immediately, small legs like insect flew out from the pin.

Allen rotated the rotatable bezel of the watch halfway round. Right after that, the windbreak part of the watch turned into a display that projected the image on the floor level.

□This is the prided article of a real life Q. Just watch it thoroughly to your heart's content.□

The small metallic bug moved its legs with rattling sound and advanced toward the location of Weiss who was shooting his machinegun while talking provocatively. Allen was watching his watch's display while controlling the small insect using the bezel's rotation.

Like that the feet of Weiss were visible inside the display. Allen grinned widely, but as expected the one over there was Weiss whose obstinacy was in the level of a cockroach. Just before Allen could press the button, Weiss suddenly noticed below him. He discovered the metallic thing with strange legs crawling below him and his cheeks twitched grandly.

The next moment, *DOOON-* an explosive sound echoed and the gunshot stopped.

Allen rushed into the room with gun readied and his guard up. It was a large room. It was an atrium with height until around two floors, and there was also the second floor with wire-net type floor. It was a room that had a lot of power generator machines put there.

When Allen intruded deeper, he could see a crushed machine and a pipe that snapped in the middle and spouted out white smoke. Allen was instantly alerted in wonder if it was a poisonous gas, but there wasn't any warning from the air composition that was displayed in his watch.

Guessing that it was just vapor, Allen circled around the white smoke while he aimed his gun in a snap toward a cover that had human presence.

□Yoo, doggy. That thing, ain't it a foul?□

□That is a power I have exactly because I'm a dog of the country. That's not wrong isn't it?□

□Don't screw with me. This is why.....I hate, the elite young master.□

Weiss talked frivolously. Allen talked frivolously back with his gun aimed at Weiss once more. But, although there wasn't any carelessness in Allen's eyes, but there also wasn't any great cautiousness in it. That was understandable. Weiss had his side largely gouged, he was already fatally wounded. Allen guessed that he would only have a few more minutes to live.

Weiss vomited out a glob of blood while sitting limply leaning on the wall. He took out a cigarette with a trembling hand. Allen was about to pull the trigger without caring about it but,

□Hey, doggy. You want.....Hydra's, information right?□

□.....No, not really?□

□Is that so? The case, this time, is from that bastard Kaysis's arbitrary.....action. Hydra, has their own, different.....plan. There won't be any harm.....in knowing it right?□

Indeed, □Berserk Case□was something Kaysis done on his own authority in order to triumph against Hydra's leadership. And then, Kaysis's data didn't include the big plan of Hydra that would be carried out soon. If Hydra had a different plan in progress, than it was something that the security bureau ought to know.

Therefore, Allen's finger slackened slightly from pulling the trigger. Weiss grinned smugly while his hand carried the cigarette toward his blood soaked lips. His figure enjoying the cigarette smoke didn't look like someone who would die with certainty.

□Why are you going to talk?□

□Just, for harassment. Because they gave me.....this job that's not worth it, yeah.□

Allen showed a slight hesitation, and a beat later, he urged Weiss to continue with his gaze.

The light in Weiss's eyes were dimming already, his voice was small. His voice was whispering in a subdued tone, making it really hard to be heard in this room where there was the echoing sound of vapor jetting out. Without any other choice, Allen got closer to Weiss.

Of course, Allen anticipated that this might be a trap and the moment he got closer, Weiss would pull out a knife or a

gun. Even so Allen had confidence in his reflex and he judged that he would undoubtedly be the faster one in this situation, so he got closer while putting up the maximum caution.

□So.....after this, Hydra.....□

□Please give it your all if you are going to die anyway. I cannot hear anything here.□

□This guy, how harsh..... But see, if you, get this close..... that's enough yeah?□

Weiss's both hands sprang up right after that. He caught both wrists of Allen instantly with a speed that was unthinkable coming from a half-dead man. Although, Allen was calm. He was late slightly in his reaction because he was mostly being cautious against gun or knife, but it wasn't any problem at all just getting caught like this.

Allen made the knife inside his shoe to jump out and he kicked on Weiss's stomach. Weiss's vomited out blood with his body lifted in the air.

But, here an unexpected situation occurred. Weiss should have no more physical strength with his dying body and he should be blown away from Allen's finishing blow, but instead his grip strength was increasing further. He didn't let go of Allen's hands like a magnet.

□-, so this is what they called the great strength when at the death's door!□

□Hihih, this is a desperate grab for fellow traveler to hell.□

Allen kicked repeatedly. He broke Weiss's ribcage, his mechanical knife hacked Weiss's stomach into shreds, and

furthermore he also stabbed Weiss's heart. But, Weiss didn't die. The pressure on his captured wrists, was increasing!

□Don't tell me-, the cigarette just now-□

□Spot on-! I'm not gonna let you aim at the head y'knoww□

With both his hands caught, Allen had no way to destroy the head. Being too close like this sealed his legs from destroying the head.

Allen twirled his gun using his fingertip like a sleight of hand. His pinky held the trigger and he aimed at Weiss's head with the gun in a reversed position, but Weiss's arm strength that was increasing further didn't allow Allen to aim accurately. Allen was continuously landing strong knife-attached kicks, but the created wounds were smoking white and gradually began to regenerate.

□Hahah, I'm easy to get lonely see. At least accompany me a little at my journey to that world 'kayy□

□You-. Release me already-□

Weiss laughed ghastly while getting drenched in blood. The cigarette that was crammed with□Berserk□had its content soaked with the drug. Weiss was pretending to smoke while actually he was biting off the cigarette and swallowed it. That was why Weiss was transforming bit by bit.

Because his transformation was slow, there was a merit that he didn't change into a berserker right away and could still think, at the same time there was also a demerit that it would be the end if his head was shot in halfway stage before he completely transformed into a berserker.

That was why Weiss was sealing Allen's both hands.

As expected, Allen was losing patience while he unleashed kicks like a storm at Weiss that was starting to rapidly change before his eyes. However, Weiss's regeneration ability was also gathering speed and the first stab wound was already completely healed.

□Guh-□

□Then, let's meet at the other side yeah, doggy.□

Weiss's insane words stabbed at Allen who groaned from feeling both his arms gripped so hard they were on the verge of snapping from the pressure. Right after that, a roar rose from Weiss. His muscles enlarged and his wound closed with a tremendous speed.

□DON'T UNDERESTIMATE MEEEEEE-□

Allen pulled up both his arms together with a loud yell that was rarely coming from him while he struck Weiss's stomach with a fierce kick. Weiss's body was lifted up before it fell down right away, but before that Allen made his body slid to the floor and he put Weiss's body on his lifted leg. And then he pulled both his hands while his leg struck up with all his strength.

The body of Weiss that was in the middle of transformation got turned over with an overhead throw. He was sent flying face up to the opposite side. Even so Weiss's hands didn't let go of Allen, but Weiss that was turned over was on Allen's line of fire.

Allen twirled his gun once more with just his fingertip and he pulled the trigger repeatedly. He didn't manage to aim at the head, but it was enough to strike at the shoulder. Perhaps the bullet hit a good spot, because one of Allen's hands was released.

Allen quickly got up and aimed at the other hand that was growing like a log holding his hand, and he fired. The moment his hand was released, he rolled away to take distance while firing toward Weiss's head.

But, here there was further unexpected situation occurring.

□Wha!? He dodged!?!□

□AAAAAAAAAAAAAH!!□

Yes, he dodged. A berserker dodged. It detected the approaching bullet and leaped aside.

A berserker was a lump of instinct. It would at least cover its weakness the head with its arms, but fundamentally a berserker would only charge forward like a boar. It could do nothing but charging forward relying on its body and super regeneration. Until now, there wasn't a single berserker that had ever taken "evasive action".

□Chih, a troublesome guy even after becoming a berserker huuh!□

Allen took out a throwing knife and threw it toward Weiss's eye. Allen thought to fire at the head the moment Weiss dodged. But, as expected, this berserker——Berserker Weiss didn't seem like a normal one.

The throwing knife was struck down this time without dodging. Furthermore, it didn't keep charging without pause, but it dripped its waist deeply like a beast while groaning□uUUUUU-□and glared at Allen.

Yes, as though it was observing Allen's move.

□Wa, wa wa wait.....this is different from what I heard! A berserker that can “fight” is not a joke-□

Allen was complaining greatly. He fired at the same time. The moment Allen aimed his gun, the berserker charged forward with a terrific step in. Although, that charge wasn't a bull rush like every berserker before this, but a counter rush that was accompanied with the evasion of the bullet by lowering its stance instantly.

□Seriously spare me-□

This time Allen jumped to the side. Berserker Weiss rushed through the place he was at just now and created a crater on the concrete floor.

Allen jumped to the side while doing handstand with one hand and fired further. The bullet approached the head with terrifying accuracy, but Berserker Weiss lifted its hand as expected as though it had predicted it from the start, and the bullet was blocked by that hand.

Berserker Weiss raised a war cry while grabbing the nearby broken pipe. It tore it off with brute strength and threw it toward Allen.

□HiIH□

Allen screamed pathetically while clinging to the floor and rolled away. He somehow managed to dodge. However, the fact that the berserker was using tool caused Allen's expression to shudder with fear.

But, at that time, a light machine gun on the floor was reflected at the corner of Allen's sight. Most likely it was the weapon that Weiss used before and it got sent flying to there due to the insect explosive. Allen leaped so close to

the floor as though he was hugging the ground and he pulled the trigger toward Berserker Weiss that was bending down in preparation for a charge.

dadadadadada- A rhythmical sound resounded and a swarm of bullets assaulted Berserker Weiss.

□GAaH□

□He dodged as expected! Aa, geez-□

Berserker Weiss dashed to the side at the same time when Allen pulled the trigger. And then, it sometimes used obstacles for cover while running in circle around Allen.

gachin- That sound echoed, showing that the light machinegun ran out of bullet. Allen's face paled.

With timing as though it had aimed for the moment the bullet ran out, Berserker Weiss turned into offensive. Its step-in made *DON-* sound as though a cannon had been fired and it approached Allen.

□Shi, shit-□

Allen took out a small cylinder from his belt's buckle and fired it at the pillar of the second floor. A wire stretched out and its tip then clung tightly and got fixed on the pillar. Allen pushed his belt's buckler at the same time and the wire got reeled in quickly, pulling Allen to the air.

Below him, Berserker Weiss passed through just within a hair's breadth, while smashing some kind of machinery into pieces overenthusiastically.

□This isn't a joke. Just what part of it is a lump of instinct! A berserker that is this used to battle is just.....□

Allen was drenched in cold sweat while taking refuge in the air and suddenly a conjecture welled up inside from his own words. The berserkers that he faced until now were basically just civilian or fellows that more or less were used to some scuffle. That was why charging like a bull was only natural for them if they followed their instinct.

But, if, it was a first class fighter whose body moved in subconscious level to predict the chance to attack and took the optimum evasive action when in battle, what would happen if that kind of person was turned into a berserker? A person with combat skill in the level that it was engraved into their subconscious, would they become a monster that only charged forward like civilian in the end?

By any chance, the answer to that might be this Berserker Weiss before his eyes. A skilled mercenary that could battle a top-ranking agent equally was transformed into a berserker resulted into this. Of course, it was nothing more than a conjecture, perhaps there was another factor contributing to this.

□Hahah, perhaps this will be seriously bad if this is turned into weapon.□

Allen reflexively muttered such thing, but his face tensed right away. Berserker Weiss was tearing apart the fixing implement of a machine that was almost as big as a car so that it could lift it up.

It was obvious what was its reason of doing that.

□Crap crap crap crap-□

Allen manipulated his buckle to cut the wire and he fell on the ground. After that, the car-sized machine came flying at the same time. The pillar Allen fixed his wire at was

pulverized with a thunderous sound and then the second floor's path was also destroyed by the machine.

Allen landed with ukemi technique, but naturally Berserker Weiss didn't overlook that opening. The rock-like fist was already approaching by the time Allen was recovering his stance.

□Gahah□

Allen could only guard by crossing his arms while taking a back-step with all his strength to lower the impact as much as possible. He was blown away horizontally above the ground and his back crashed on a machine behind him. He couldn't even scream with how intense the impact was and like that his body slipped down slowly to sit on the floor.

'Kahah' Blood was mixed in the breath that he finally could spit out. It seemed that his internal organ was injured. Both his arms limply hung down with their direction facing to a strange angle.

But, even so he was alive. What's more he was conscious and he was able to watch the Berserker Weiss slowly approaching him. Surely that was thanks to his miraculous impact neutralization and ukemi technique.

□Aa.....gehoh. This is really, not a laughing matter. Haven't I, buy enough time already? Ayssgate-sa~n, it's fine if you rush here.....gohoh, anytime noww□

Allen smiled bitterly at his body that couldn't even twitch from the impact while calling for help with a listless voice. But, even Allen understood. This was checkmate.

Berserker Weiss had arrived until right before him. Perhaps it was just his imagination, but it somehow looked like the

berserker was sneering at him.

Allen was always side-by-side with death in his duty. Therefore he didn't feel fear. However, if he had a regret then that would be.....

□Before the end, just once. I wanted to have a date.....with super beautiful woman or girl.□

‘Even though I’m also an agent, but why is Jame○ Bond that popular while I’m not? Regret.....’ Allen whispered.

Berserker Weiss’s fist was lifted up. And then just before it was swung down,

□FIREE-□

A command. A storm of bullets assaulted Berserker Weiss. It was a concentrated fire from four directions above. Berserker Weiss couldn't endure and threw its body between the machineries in evasion.

□Chih. It wasn't finished off from the first attack. Its instinct is really something. Oi, Allen, what's with that berserker?□

The one saying that while jumping down from the second floor using other machine as foothold was,

□Be, Bernard-san!□

□Ou, you really got done in huh, Allen. You don't get splashed by any liquid right?□

Yes, the one firing from the second floor was the person who had displayed an outrageous skill of raising death flags in high speed, that Bernard!

It appeared that he had struggled through that deathly battlefield and came here as reinforcement. Allen who was saved in a hair's breadth like a heroine in some tale felt an emotion welling up inside his heart. Driven by that feeling he spoke to Bernard who was making a fearless smile.

□Anyway, I request a change.□

□How regretful. He is infected with Berserk already.□

click Bernard's gun muzzle locked on at Allen's forehead. Allen made justification□I'm lying, lying! You aren't a beautiful girl, but I'm really happy that you come to save me!□in panic.

Bernard made an exasperated face at the agent whose talkativeness didn't decrease even when wounded all over like this while helping him to stand up.

□Err, you saved me Bernard-san. But, that guy, he is really a bit of bad news.□

□No, it will be fine.□

Allen suggested caution against the out of norm Berserker Weiss, but Bernard was indifferent. Bernard opened his mouth with a wry smile toward Allen who looked dubious.

□We are here. So there is no way he isn't here too right?□

□A. Aa, that's right. Hahah, really I'm saved.....□

Right after that, *GOBA-aAAA-* Berserker Weiss flew out from the cover along with a terrific impact sound. However, it flew out not its own action, with a black whirling sphere settled on a hand palm, that palm was thrust forward in a

palm attack stance by Kousuke——no, Lord Abyssgate, which blown away the berserker.

□I received the information from my real body. It looks like you have acted really inhumanly. ——Don't think that you can die easily.□

The lord that was walking out calmly had his eyes filled with rage, his hands unsheathing two short swords. One sword was clad in azure flame, and the other sword was clad in glimmers that looked like diamond dust. Melting and severing sword of super heat “Enryuuga”, and the ice sword of absolute zero that formed its counterpart, “Tourneyuga”. (TN: Enryuuga = Flame Dragon Fang, Touryuuga = Frozen Dragon Fang)

Berserker Weiss made a war cry while standing up, then it threw pipes and machine parts toward the lord.

The lord stepped in. Right after that, he jumped and rotated midair while stepping lightly on the pipe. And then, without stopping he stepped on the machine parts and splinters flying at him one after another and charged toward Berserker Weiss in a straight line.

Berserker might felt a threat because it then tried to dodge to the side. But,

□Where are you going?□

Such sentence reached the berserker. From right beside at the position where it was going to dodge to. At the same time, the figure of the lord approaching from in front of it flickered and vanished. The lord had already switched with an illusion in the middle of jumping by using skill “Leaf Dance”.

Berserker Weiss wasted no time to swing its fist. The arm that was thick like a log charged like a cannon to flatten the enemy. And then, something flew in the air. An arm severed from the elbow was rotating midair.

Berserker Weiss that didn't feel pain launched a deadly attack with its other arm without delay, but the figure of the target had already gone. And then, the berserker fell on its knee with a jerk. Because one of its legs was cut flying encased in ice.

The lord slipped to the blind spot behind the Berserker Weiss at the same time after he cut the arm. And then he swung "Tourneyuga" while passing through. The blade of ice that was formed to an extreme thinness had a slimness of a single molecule already. And then the chill coating the blade froze the target instantly.

□AAAAAAAAAA-□

□Who said that you can howl?□

Berserker Weiss launched a backhand blow even while on its knee, but its body was slowly tilting in contrast with its will. What was flying midair was the arm that was launching the backhand blow. What was rolling on the ground was its other leg.

Berserker Weiss that lost its four limbs was starting to regenerate its hands and feet by activating its super regeneration. But, the two short swords were swung again right after the limbs were starting to grow and sent them flying.

After that it was a routine work. The regenerating part was chopped off before it could be restored to normal and the berserker couldn't escape its state of limbs shortage. It tried

to take some distance by prancing up its upper body, even so it was pressured down by a whirling black sphere and it couldn't hope to move because of the suppression of the super gravity.

□You can regenerate however much you want? Fine then. I'll keep you company until you die in that case. Regenerate as much as you like, squirm as much as you like. Until that time when the end arrive.□

The lord's arms went hazy. Each time the limbs of Berserker Weiss danced midair. In the first place, the amount of □Berserk□that was crammed into the cigarette didn't amount that much.

Berserker Weiss writhed, the state of its instinct was different from other berserkers, and before long something other than madness was starting to enter its eyes, welcoming that time. The speed of its regeneration dropped down drastically and the vigor of the rising white smoke was decreasing.

The limit of the regeneration had come.

Its flesh body was gradually shrinking. Due to that, the withered Weiss who was on the verge of death recovered back his awareness.

□Son of a bitch-. Damn it, if you ain't gonna, accompanying me then just diee□

Weiss didn't stop his cursing and frivolous talk even at this kind of time. In his eyes there was a disgusting color, that he wouldn't grant them the reaction they wanted from him no matter how much he got tortured.

After all he would die in less than a few seconds. In that case he would rather spit out words of curse even if just by one more. Weiss opened his mouth with that kind of intention, but the lord firmly grasped his head. And then, he took out a five yen coin crystal that was tied with string.

□Just an instant is enough to grant you regret and despair.□

□What are, you planning——hih, ah, aAAAAAAAAAAAAAH□

A shriek that was unbearable to listen at was reverberating. That was undoubtedly a voice of regret and despair. Weiss was screaming while his body was completely withering and rotted away.

□Sca, scaryy. Aby, just what did you do?□

□Hahah. I don't want to know though.....□

Bernard accompanied with his subordinates arrived while lending Allen his shoulder and he asked. His expression along with his subordinates were all twitching extremely. Allen was going 'no no' in refusal to hear, but he couldn't move properly and on top of that both of his arms were broken, so he couldn't even block his ears.

The lord spoke with an expression that seemed sickened toward Bernard and others.

□I just showed him a nightmare. A nightmare where he is eaten alive by the dead. For now, I set it so his mind experienced it for a hundred times in a moment.□

□□.....□□

It would be better if he didn't ask. Bernard and others were wordlessly holding the same thought inside their heart.

Then, the lord suddenly raised his head. Bernard and others asked the lord what happened with their gaze, to which the lord spoke.

□It seems it's necessary for me to head for my real body's reinforcement. Bernard. I'll leave the rest to you.□

□Roger. I don't know what is going on, but leave this place to me. I won't let even a single one of the remaining staff here to get away.□

The lord nodded at Bernard's words before his figure became smoke *bofun-* and vanished.

Right after that, an intense shaking attacked the facility. It was clear that the vibration came from a distant place.

□He is really going at it flashily huh, that Abys. The vibration just now was intense.□

□I think Bernard-san who is calling him with pet name is also amazing you know?□

Bernard was staring in puzzlement at Allen's words before he pulled himself together and began giving order to his subordinates.

It's Me You Know, A○derson-kun-

The meat lump squirming before the eyes——Berserk Chimera didn't try to chase after Allen who chased after Weiss or Emily and Vanessa who chased after Down.

The Katon flame wall blocking the tentacles' path had already vanished. If it was berserker that was faithful to their instinct, it would at least try to stretch its tentacles to chase, but this berserker didn't even do that and stopped trying. Surely, most likely, that was because it was cautious against the human in black clothes standing in its way.

□Now then, I don't know just how deep you have carried the case of the children, so I won't give any mercy no matter what were you formerly.□

Kousuke unsheathed two short swords. *shaan* A clear voice echoed and the unsheathed swords were held in reverse grip, at the same time Kousuke's body sunk really low to the floor. So to speak it was a stance of a crouching start.

In an instant, the berserk chimera launched countless tentacles. Those tentacles that were fired with speed that resembled even bullet became like a wall that attacked Kousuke.

And then, a hard sound that was really unthinkable to be created by lump of flesh resounded, stabbing on the metal floor.

Yes, they stabbed at a floor where there wasn't anyone.

□Chih. As I thought, even the weakness's position is haphazard.□

A sound of someone clicking their tongue and a curse resounded. That voice came from behind the berserk chimera. There was the figure of unmoving Kousuke there in with his arms crossed. Looking carefully, the top of the berserk chimera's head was entirely cut off, a beat later, that meat lump fell on a distant spot along with a graphic sound *docha-*.

At that instant, Kousuke rushed with a momentum as though he liberated the power he saved up, slipped through the barrage of tentacles, and then he split the upper head of the berserk chimera.

Although, it didn't look like the berserk chimera received any pain, it was spouting out white smoke while the top of its head regenerated in what should be called an instant. At the same time, it created new tentacles and launched them to Kousuke.

(I cannot see the position of its weakness the brain. In the first place there is no guarantee that it only has one brain. It's not like I don't have a method to blow it up altogether, but then the children inside will die with that. And then, that super regeneration is a hindrance for me to scrap off its body.....this is difficult.)

Kousuke cut apart the swarm of tentacles, dodged with acrobatic movement, or handled the attack by using the

tentacles as stepping stone. He grumbled inside his heart while analyzing the enemy while a wry smile suddenly emerged on his lips.

To say in addition, it was also forbidden for him to get touched by the liquid that was scattered when the tentacle was grazed. No matter even if it was Kousuke, he wouldn't be able to suppress the transformation of his body if he got splashed by "Berserk".

Then, at that time the senses of Kousuke who was pondering detected an assault from behind him. When Kousuke immediately twisted his body midair, just as he thought, there were countless tentacles the size of a human arm flying toward him from behind.

"Oi oi, so it can also grow from the part that I cut off. Just what kind of organism this thing has taken that it can do something like that."

What attacked Kousuke from behind was the meat lump that Kousuke cut flying before this. It was squirming separated from the main body and grew out slender tentacles.

There were tentacles and flesh he had cut apart lying all over the place. As expected, Kousuke's expression couldn't stop from twitching.

The moment Kousuke muttered "This is bad", a barrage of tentacles approached from all directions, in addition there was also the meat lump clinging on the ceiling unnoticed attacking like a shower, leaving no place to escape. Their number already surpassed three digits.

Normally it would be a hopeless scene. If the one who was here was the troops of the special squad, they would

undoubtedly sigh and even made a bitter smile at the same time with their resignation.

But, of course, for the right-hand man of the demon king, something at this level, no, no matter what kind of situation it was, it was an impossible story for him to carry an emotion of resignation.

□——"Juton – Todokienu Kuroki Sei'iki"□(TN: Gravity Escape – Unreachable Black Sanctuary)

Immediately after, four whirling black spheres as big as a pinball expanded around Kousuke. At the same time, all the approaching tentacles crashed to the ground as though they were struck down.

□Abyss-style Assassination Martial Arts – Sword Form——"Senretsu Kokujou Yaiba"□(TN: Flash Rend Black Fortress Blade)

Furthermore, Kousuke lifted both his arms and he rotated his two short swords like a pinwheel using the motion of his fingertips and his wrists reversal. The tentacles attacking from overhead were shaved off and blown away as though they were hit by an excavator.

Even the tentacles that circled around the shield of slashes and attacked, they were repelled back by the kunais that unnoticed were flying around Kousuke like satellites, furthermore those kunais were rotating in high speed. Not a single tentacle reached Kousuke.

□Burning all these.....will put the children in danger I guess. Then, let's smash them apart after freezing them——Rage, silver wind. The breath of eternal world of ice and snow. Hinder the path of the traveler and seize at the cold arm.

Thy art the prisoner of the white ice coffin——”Tougoku no Hana”□(TN: Flower of Frozen Prison)

Kousuke lightly made a sound *ton* with his step. Immediately after that, a sound *bikibiki* echoed and the floor was dyed white. Mist was generated. With Kousuke as the center, the white wave was spreading as though it was eroding the world. The tentacles and liquid scattered everywhere were frozen altogether.

And then, it didn’t end with that, the meat lump that was dyed pure white and hardened was then enveloped by a prison of ice right after that, like a blooming flower.

A cluster of ice flower was blooming proudly everywhere.

The white erosion also reached the berserk chimera through the floor. Perhaps sensing the danger, the berserk chimera stabbed its tentacles to the ceiling and made its body leaped midair. It already had any composure to launch a random barrage of tentacles to Kousuke.

Even the tentacles needed for attacking were all touched by the chill that froze them. The berserk chimera obeyed its instinct and severed all of its tentacles by itself. The countless tentacles that bloomed into ice flower instantly were falling to the floor.

□There is no way I’ll let you get away don’t you think?□

Kousuke used the falling ice flowers as stepping stones and jumped toward the berserk chimera. He used the tentacles he cut down and the tentacles approaching wildly as further stepping stones while he somersaulted, then using that momentum he threw his short sword.

The short sword cut straight through the air like a single streak of flash. It stabbed the berserk chimera that had no leeway to evade.

GI, GI, GIIIIII

A bizarre voice reverberated. Kousuke guessed that it was the scream of the berserk chimera that let alone mouth, it was doubtful that it even had vocal cords. Inside the space where the scream that sounded like the scratching of metal was echoing, the area that was centered around the stabbing short sword was playing dissonant sound *bikibiki* of the berserk chimera getting frozen.

□I don't freeze you until the inside. I'll shave and smash you from your outer layer.□

If its separated part could still move after getting cut off, if it could regenerate no matter how much it got slashed, then he would restrain it using ice coffin, and then froze all of the parts he scraped off and then pulverized them. It was a method that paid attention to the safety of the captured children as much as possible while rescuing them with certainty.

Before long, the tentacles that stabbed into the ceiling and supported its mass were frozen, and they became unable to endure their own weight and snapped. The berserk chimera fell to the floor and its body's outer part was smashed apart from the impact of crashing down.

Squirming meat lump could be seen from inside the smashed meat lump. It was trying to regenerate. But, the stabbing short sword didn't allow that. The mist was coming down faster than the regeneration could start and froze them.

When Kousuke snapped his fingers, the frozen outer layer broke apart once more, and frozen meat lumps were scattered in pieces of small block shape.

□If I continue to smash it like this until those children become visible——□

‘I should be able to save them.’

Yes, Kousuke was about to say that, but right after that, his cheeks cramped from the squirming presence at his surrounding. When he quickly looked around, *piki-, paki-* he could see cracks entering the ice flowers.

□O, oi oi. This is a joke right?□

Kousuke unconsciously let out those words. That was understandable. After all, the countless meat lumps locked inside the ice flower were squirming and bloating from inside.

baki- Hearing such sound, Kousuke returned his gaze back at the berserk chimera, and there the same sight of it bloating from inside entered his eyes.

Kousuke opened his eyes wide. No matter how he looked, the meat lumps at his surrounding and also the berserk chimera were increasing in volume. When a human was transformed into berserker, their super regeneration was caused by the repetition of breaking down and regeneration, it could be said to be similar with the phenomenon of muscle swelling up.

But, even that had limit. It wasn't like a berserker would transform into giant endlessly. It was impossible for them to multiply new flesh from a small fragment of flesh. It wasn't an ability that a human was equipped with.

□No, wait. In the first place, this thing is *stretching out* tentacles.....□

Kousuke suddenly noticed. This thing was stretching out tentacles endlessly—that was an impossible trait for all creatures that he knew about. Even though there were creatures that had tentacles, there shouldn't be any creature that was able to grow several hundreds of it or more.

But, in reality the berserk chimera before his eyes was propagating itself with a force that could even destroy the ice coffin from inside using pressure——

□Propagation.....haha, come to think of it, there is this organism called planarian huh. Even if they are cut, they will regenerate the same specimen isn't it?□

That was correct. Certainly the berserk chimera had taken in a lot of organisms. Not to mention animal and insect, it had also taken in plant and so on. Of course, it had also taken in a few human adult and child. And then a lot of planarian was added into that flesh.

Super regeneration wouldn't occur if there wasn't the flesh that became the base. Then, if that flesh was able to multiply automatically, wouldn't infinite regeneration become possible with that? This was the result of such experiment that was carried out with an idea that had gone past madness into exasperation.

The berserk chimera had not even a fragment of the souls of the animals and humans that became its base. What it had was a more primitive instinct. ——Only the instinct to eat and survive, that was all.

Kousuke shuddered while returning from his own thought back into reality, and right after that all the ice flowers were

smashed.

□These guys here created something like this, just how are they planning to stop this thing when the time comes?□

What was truly frightening was the deed of man. The spirit of inquiry and tenacity, madness that pushed on ahead until the end of the road without considering the future or other people. Just like the magicians of the former world of another world's mad god—Ehitorujue that invited the destruction of themselves.

It would endanger the children if he burned this thing to ash. It was useless to freeze and smash it. If he slashed it then it would regenerate and multiply endlessly just as much as he slashed. Exterminating it using great firepower would endanger the children. If he was touched then it was game over.

However,

□Good grief. Just when I thought that I finally went home from a fantasy world, this side is also fantastical like this. It seems that I, no, we are deeply loved by the extraordinary huh.□

The expression of Kousuke who was shrugging with an air of “dear me” contained no despair. He also didn't despair to the possibility that he might not be able to save the children.

Why?

It was obvious.

□So you returned, me.□

□Yeah, I have returned, me.□

□I too, me.□

□Bernard.....it was seriously just barely for him. That guy is really loved by the death god that it's a wonder he is able to survive until now y'know. But it looks like he is also loved as much by the god of fortune though.□

The berserk chimera had swelled up until twice, no, triple its former size while making a bizarre scream. And then the innumerable number of meat lumps that had already transformed into tiny berserk chimeras. Clones appeared at both sides and behind Kousuke while all those were surrounding them.

These were the clones that accompanied Bernard's group and the other squads.

The clone that reinforced Bernard had a faraway look. Its information was also shared with Kousuke's real body, so he also got a faraway look from the scene□you are already fantasy□where Bernard was continuously collecting death flags per second, though he was also continuously escaping from the hand of the god of death due to strong fortunes that came at him per second too.

GIIIIIIIIIIIH!!

A wave of flesh attacked at the same time with the shriek. Yes, it was a wave. The small chimeras were also adding on it, turning the attack into a greatly spreading wave that looked like a thick membrane. It spread out everywhere toward Kousuke and clones.

□Now then, the clones had also come back except of the one guarding Grant family, so let's settle this quickly.Haa, I

actually don't want to use this thoughh. I rea~lly don't want to use this thoughh. But there is no time, and it's for the sake of the children. It can't be helped, huh.□

Kousuke that leaped on the roof of a large truck looked at his three clones that were at the three corners of the room. They were showing a wry smile, or possible a melancholic expression. He then took out something from his breast pocket.

That was a crimson jewel.

The shining jewel the size of a pinky had a metallic vine coiling around it, and it was linked with a thin chain. Kousuke wore that on his neck and then he gripped the crimson jewel tightly.

Perhaps the berserk chimera had its survival instinct stimulated by Kousuke's freezing magic, because ahead of his gaze there was its figure already swelling up until near the ceiling without stopping its regeneration and propagation. The case holding the children seemed tough, but surely it would reach its endurance limit soon. There could be no more postponement, they needed to be rescued even for a second faster.

Then, there was no way he could hesitate.

No matter how much Kousuke himself shirked from it. No matter how much compensation he would need to pay for it.

He liberated it.

That taboo power! It once caused even the demon king to raise an anguished voice, the true and tremendous power!

□Endure this, my willpower! Here we go! ——”Limit Break-“!!!□

Right after that, a crimson magic power burst out from Kousuke. The intense magic power spiraled and blew up violently as though it pierced the ceiling. Magic power and storm howled thunderously. Kousuke’s figure was enveloped by the radiance of the demon king and became indistinct.

The berserker chimera pulled back the tentacles that it was going to stretch out. It was as though it was getting frightened of the existence before its eyes.

Ki, GiiIIH The berserk chimera cried. A voice resounded toward it from inside the crimson tornado.

□O pitiful existence. Your time of liberation has come.□

That voice sounded as though it reverberated from the whole space. The crimson torrent was starting to converge, then a shadow of human appeared from inside the dazzling radiance.

The black silhouette took a step forward from the large truck. Naturally, it didn’t fall down or anything. A ripple appeared midair and the shadow advanced on it.

□This abyss lord, will save thee.□

The raging magic power torrent dispersed in a flash. In exchange the crimson radiance was increasing in might and enveloped the shadow. The shadow swung one hand widely and turned his body magnificently. The shadow lowered one leg slightly, and his other hand moved toward his chest. His sunglasses glittered with a flash despite the impossible angle.

Shadow.

Yes,

□My name is Kousuke E Abyssgate-! The noble of the abyss, and the right hand of the demon king! The next patriarch of the head reaper rabbit (planned)-! I am the one that bring salvation and the end for thee! Now, welcome it with the shriek of heavy thunder!□

It was the abyss lord who was highly spirited more than usual!

The berserk chimera went, ‘anyway, tentacles first!’, it attacked following its instinct.

□EE—XCELLEENT-! No matter what is going on, it’s a good thing to not hesitate.□(TN: The ‘excellent’ is said in broken English, ‘eeekusereentoo’)

The lord who finally used Western language called a clone to appear in front of him. The clone destructed the tentacles using “Enryuuga”. Behind the clone that became a shield slashing down the tentacles, the lord pushed up his sunglasses sharply while continuing his words.

□Although, whether it will work or not is a different matter. Fix your eyes. At the true form of the endless abyss!□

Right after that, multiple presences were born. Further four clones were created *from the clone* that became the lord’s shield.

Not only that. Beside the original three clones that were evacuating to the room’s corners, four clones materialized at each of their sides.

Those four clones leaped toward the chimeras, at the same time, each clones created four clones midair. Those four clones created four more clones further. And from those four additional clones came further four clones. Four clones, to four clones, to four clones, to four clones-

——Abyss Lord’s Exclusive Limit Break Artifact “Last Zell(just don’t use it at me okay?) Ver.2.1”

The last derivative skill of “Assassin” vocation, “Abyss Lord”, originally it raised the foundation ability of the user, breaking the limit along with the passage of time. The crimson jewel that was bestowed from the demon king blew away this passage of time and forcefully multiplied the user’s ability by five times.

And then, regarding this Abyss Lord’s activation state——Kousuke divided it into five stages that he called as “Depth I” until “Depth V”——he would be able to create one more clone when he entered the state of Depth III, and when he entered the last Depth, the clones that originally could only be created by the main body of the abyss lord could then be created by the clones themselves too.

It would take a considerable time for Kousuke to reach this final Depth V, but Last Zell cleared away that limitation.

However, naturally there was compensation for it,

□□□□□□□□□□The abyss is without end——□□□□□□□□□□

The lord was multiplied to sixty four people almost within an instant. They charged from four directions, while saying something.

The tentacles stretched out from the small chimeras that were scattered everywhere inside the large underground

parking area, and the tentacles that were launched from the main body, their number was already enough to form a cage of piercing spears that left no place to escape. Even if some of them got mowed down by the short sword shining with azure flame, it was a herculean task to handle all of them.

Half of the sixty-four lords were cut down within an instant. However,

There is no end to the darkness of the hell

At the next moment, more than 160 lords manifested. Using their skill and body, they became the shield for the clones behind them and cut open a path of survival.

There is no hope to capture the abyss——

The small chimeras widened the membrane of flesh in the attempt to swallow the lords. The attack with vast surface was already an area attack. The lords used other clones as stepping stones, or they threw the other to escape from the range of the membrane. The rest enveloped their body with Katon and launched kamikaze attack at the small chimeras.

There is no meaning in touching the abyss——

No matter how many of them were pierced, no matter how many of them were splashed with liquid, in the first place the clones weren't made of flesh despite having a solid body. There was no way the clones could be altered, the small chimeras were helpless against the overly extravagant suicide bombing skill.

It's a pipe dream to destroy the
abyss——

The number of the lords that disappeared from suicide bombing already surpassed a hundred easily, however, by the time a beat or two beat passed, three hundred lords began attacking in waves.

Despair to the resentful——

They were pierced and vanished. Twice the number came back in their place.

They were pulverized and vanished. Twice the number came back in their place.

They were smashed and vanished. Twice the number came back in their place!

Hope for those who searched——

The small chimeras were reduced to ash in succession one by one with certainty by unceasing attacks that had no hesitation of making sacrifice. The berserk chimera was surrounded by more than three hundred lords and got its body thoroughly scraped off from the outside.

O you that stand in our way, engrave into that
body

GIIIIII-, the berserk chimera shrieked as though to drive away the terror it felt. It shrank its body for a moment, and right after that, it launched tentacles to every direction. What was different about it, was that all its tentacles that previously were as thick as a child's arm, were now reduced to the size of a finger.

It might sense the danger of being obliterated. It might be doing this to fulfill its survival instinct. It seemed to optimize its attack method toward the enemy.

The thin and sharp thrusts were appropriate to be called as an intense rain. They were assaulting straight ahead, from the ceiling, or circled from the floor. The flesh thrusts that might reach several thousand were a symbol of despair.

More than a hundred lords were terminated by that.

□□□□□□□□□□Moan from the endless nightmare□□□□□□□□□□

And so, it was opposed by a thousand lords.

They wielded a short sword of azure flame. Be that as it may, the weapon they utilized was their own body. Like a nightmare without end, each vanishing was filled with manifestation, and each time the number was increasing in an infinite hell. Even with Last Zell put into operation, it didn't change that he was in "Abyss Lord activated state", his spec that was continuously increasing finally outdone the propagation and regeneration speed of berserk chimera.

□□□□□□□□□□We art, the incarnation of the abyss. The dream of darkness, the black ephemeral, everything—□□□□□□□□□□

This was exactly, the right hand of the demon king.

This was exactly, the true form of the one that was said by his comrades as "actually the one who was nonchalantly in the level of humanity's strongest".

This was exactly, what accomplished that grand feat of inflicting a scratch at that demon king.

More than a thousand abyss lords launching unceasingly multiplying chuuni speech and gestu—not that, waves of attack without end!

□Lukewarm-. Do you think you can bring me down with something of that level! If you wish to drive away the abyss, then you need to bring at least a gatling railgun!□

The name of him who spoke of such absurdity, let's say it, one more time.

□Now-, this is the closing of the curtain! You can boast to king Yama in that world-. You can say, that the one who granted me my end is that person! Yes, it's by this me, Abisuuge—to-!□

The lord yelled his own name a bit like a native speaker (?), or rather his pronunciation sounded like his tongue got rolled up. The lord then crossed his arms with the short sword still in a reverse grip, his body bent forward with tension.

The small chimeras were already annihilated. The regeneration and propagation of the berserk chimera also couldn't catch up anymore, its body had been reduced until the size of a big truck.

Like that, one of the clones scraped off the flesh even while its body was pierced by tentacles. At that scraped place, a solid glitter could be seen faintly. Without any doubt, that was the case where the children were locked into.

□Gather-, my compatriots-. This is the time for salvation!□

The lord's order thundered. Several dozen clones lined up instantly in front of the lord and took the same stance.

The lords grinned broadly with fearlessness, and his eyes opened widely in a snap (Warning: It was done behind the sunglasses, so other people couldn't see it).

□Mine abyss, can you see through it? —Abyss-style Martial Art - Attack Form Secret Finishing Move□Kokusou - Arashi Kage Ryuuha(Surging fang, shadow claw, know the nightmare of the dark abyss)□-!!□(TN: Black Phantom - Storm Shadow Flow Rending)

The abyss lords sprinted. They became a single vertical row and charged the berserk chimera.

The berserk chimera tried to launch its tentacles, it tried to leap to become a cannonball with its meat lump, but the clones at the front row handled it, and even if they couldn't handle it and vanished, the next lords would eliminate it.

And then, the clones that arrived at the berserk chimera in the blink of eye used their body to whittle the flesh wall and got annihilated. The following clones each recklessly hurled themselves to the berserk chimera and opened up a hole with certainty in one point of the flesh body!

It was a storm-like assault without any pause by the black shadows. That waves of attack that could be mistaken as a single great lance, it looked like, yes.....

Jet Strea○ Attack!

At the next moment, a sound *boba-* came into hearing, and the flesh at the other side of the berserk chimera was blown away. At the same time, a lord flew out from there. A beat later, a case that was wrapped around with steel string flew out.

The lord rotated midair and swung his short sword at the case that was flying following him. The case was instantly split apart into pieces, and three screaming children flew out from there.

It seemed that they didn't faint even now after getting swallowed by the berserk chimera. Normally anyone would lose consciousness from excessive fear but..... What could be done now was only praying so they wouldn't get traumatized with this.

The lord along with his clones caught the children that were thrown out midair and landed lightly.

□Boy, it's safe already.□

□E, eh?□

The boy that was let down was looking around with greatly restless eyes due to his great confusion. And then, the boy witnessed the unrealistic scene of countless humans with the same appearance surrounding the berserk chimera and he exposed his shock with□EeEEEEH!?!□.

The boy and girl that were let down by the clones beside him were also similarly flustered while in the verge of tears.

□Hmm. I guess this is a bit too intense for children. But, I ask you to be relieved. This nightmare is over already. I'm ending it!□

The lords spread out. At the center was the berserk chimera.

While the eyes of the boys and girl turned into dot, the lords simultaneously touched one hand on their sunglasses (of course, the stylish pushing up motion couldn't be forgotten),

they averted half their body slightly behind, and then their other hand pointed quietly toward the berserk chimera.

□□□□□□□□□□The sky of hell, the world of fabrication, the revolving black sun——□□□□□□□□□□

That was a chanting. The only magic that the lord learned, the magic of destruction that once tear down the logic of the world.

□□□□□□□□□□The night sky collapse, the star of calamity shine darkly. What is released is a fragment of abyss——□□□□□□□□□□

A finishing move among finishing move that couldn't even be invoked by the lord if he wasn't in a state of Depth V.

□□□□□□□□□□Converge, disintegrate, swallow without pause, smash without stopping——□□□□□□□□□□

Sparks surged. It was a phenomenon of electrical discharge that looked like black lightning. It was generated with the berserk chimera as the center.

The berserk chimera launched its tentacles looking somewhat desperate, but the clones blocked them in front of the chanting lords and cut them down altogether.

□□□□□□□□□□That is a world of interstice without light. The embrace of demise. The birth of new providence——□□□□□□□□□□

And so, that thing propagating into the world, it destroyed even the Holy Precincts——the attack of the protector that brought about the dawn.

The main body of the lord made a beautiful turn that was without any meaning, and then along with a really magnificent pose, he spun the last sentence, and let it resound to the world.

□Be swallowed by the infinitude darkness and perish——Gravity magic ultimate secret art
□Kokutenkyuu(black whirling darkness of abyss)□□(TN: Black Heaven Suffering)

At the center of the surging black sparks, a small black sphere manifested.

The sphere was whirling in disorder, right after that, it swelled up to a size with diameter of a meter and began to suck anything and everything at the surrounding with a fierce might. No, perhaps it should be said that rather than sucking, it was already twisting off the space altogether while compressing it to the center part.

——Gravity magic “Black Heaven Suffering”

It was the gravity magic’s secret art that the liberator Miledy Raisen once used in order to save the world.

Compared to what she used, this magic here was a shoddy one where its immaturity was standing out. But, even so, here in this place it possessed enough strength to destroy this monster that could possibly regenerate and propagate if there was even just a fragment of its cell remaining——it was truly a legendary magic.

GIIH, GIIIIIIH!!

Perhaps that should be called as its shriek of death agony. The berserk chimera was pulled in as though the meat lump

was crumbling from the edge, expelled toward a world of super compression and destruction.

A beat.

The large truck that was entangled by stretched out tentacles so the berserk chimera wouldn't get pulled in, it was sucked in without any resistance and crushed by the pressure. In the end the berserk chimera became completely terminated.

The black celestial sphere shrunk before vanishing as though it melted into space. At the same time, the many clones also dispersed, as though to say that they had finished their role.

The end was very silent.

□.....Onii-chan, who, are you?□

The boys and girl forgot their trembling, their crying, and also their huddling at each other. Their heart was stolen by a piece of legend before their eyes. One of them asked with a small voice toward the lord while still feeling astonished.

The lord looked back over his shoulder. The gaze of the little children turned toward him.

The lord went□fuh□toward them, and then he answered while sharply pushing up his sunglasses.

□Oneself? I am.....just a hero, that you can find anywhere.□

Thinking that it would be inappropriate to say things like “demon king” or “abyss” toward the cornered children, the lord answered after showing a thinking gesture for a while.

Hearing that, for a moment the children looked puzzled and they looked at each other's face.

But, the next moment, they showed a smile that was like a blooming flower. It was the greatest sparkling bright smile, one that children would show toward a hero just like in a movie. It was a smile that was overflowing with conviction, that hero certainly existed, with admiration, and with hope filling their heart—it was the greatest reward there was for a hero.

The lord that received that—crumbled down right after.

□O, Onii-chan!?!□

□Hero-san!□

□Ninja-lookalike something-san!□

The children rushed in panic toward the lord that abruptly fell on all four with his head hanging down. And then, their face approached looking worried and they heard that whisper.

□Hahah fuhih, I messed up saying “oneself”. Even I don't understand what I'm saying.....it hurts, my heart hurts~□

The children lifted their face and exchanged gaze once more. Even though they had no words, but what they wanted to say was conveyed to each other clearly.

That was,

——Just what is hero?

Berserk, Was in Your Heart Right From the Start

go-go-go That sound that sounded like earth rumbling, and impact sound *DON-* that resounded until the bottom of stomach could be heard.

And then the one who screamed cutely□Hyaah□to that while hopping *pyon* was Emily who was chasing after Professor Down.

Vanessa who was running beside Emily wasn't perturbed at all. Perhaps also because it was just the two of them right now, Vanessa was currently in the cool beauty Vanessa-san mode like when they met for the first time. Seeing Vanessa like that, Emily looked down feeling a little embarrassed.

□An expression of shyness——priceless.□

□Aa, yep. Even when you are in work mode, but the inside is still Danessa.□

While the sound of *gan-gan-* from the shoes hitting the metal floor was resounding, Emily made a dry smile at Vanessa who was saying that kind of thing with a crisp expression.

□At any rate, Kousuke-san is really going at it flashily.□

□You're right. That must be just how absurd that berserker is.□

□A lump of meat——just what in the world, that.....□

Emily spoke her deduction to Vanessa's whisper. That was the same with the answer that Kousuke reached personally. It was a deduction that showed the depth of human's sin.

The berserker chimera that possessed the ability of regeneration and propagation that human in general couldn't possibly stand a chance against, when Vanessa heard the true identity of it, her expression moved slightly. That wasn't because she was worried for Kousuke, but it was something that was directed to Emily who could talk about her deduction so calmly.

□I understand now that it has absurd abilities but.....Doctor Grant, you don't look like you are particularly worried.□

Emily felt the glance of Vanessa toward her, however, Emily replied without averting her gaze from straight ahead.

□I'm worried. No matter how strong Kousuke is, there are many ways things can possibly go wrong. He might get injured, and it was the first time I saw Kousuke that angry, so I'm also feeling uneasy that he might do something reckless.□

□Is, that so?□

Even so Emily looked relatively calm. Vanessa tilted her head at that. Seeing Vanessa like that, Emily smiled wryly while continuing to speak□But□.

□Even so, that person.....is my hero after all.□

That was why, she believed. That no matter what kind of difficulty he encountered, no matter what kind of irrationality he was exposed to, no matter what kind of pinch he fell into, at the end he would surely overcome it all and fulfilled his promise. He would save the children, liberate that pitiful existence from the wedge of this world, sent flying that mercenary who was rotten to the core, and then rushed to her side. Yes, she believed.

□That's why, I, I have to do what I ought to do. I have come here by acting selfishly. I cannot afford to be flustered or anything. Looking back will be an insult to Kousuke who believed in me and sent me ahead.□

□.....□

Vanessa kept sending sidelong glances at Emily. And then, she nodded□yep yep□as though she understood something.

□Doctor Grant.□

□What?□

Emily stared straight ahead and advanced without hesitation. A smile emerged on Vanessa's lips while she spoke.

□You are a good woman. Surely Kousuke-san too will accept you. Leave the hotel reservation to me.□

□Bufuh!? Wha, what are you meowtering out!? Really, what are you meowtering, Danessa!□

Emily slid down due to the flow of the talk that suddenly went toward a vulgar direction. She almost kissed the floor lightly. She stood up in a hurry and started running once

more, then with a reddening face she glared piercingly at Danessa. She prepared the firing of her cat punch.

Although, the Vanessa in question was making a puzzled expression instead. That irritated Emily excessively.

□Doctor Grant. In movie or film, at the last scene the main character will kiss or bed the heroine. In the case this time too, it will be the best if it's concluded with Kousuke-san and Doctor Grant acting a passionate bed scene. Leave about the scene recording to this me, Vanessa.□

□Be be be be be, bed scene!? Idiot-. Danessa you idiot-! There is no way we will do something like that! No, I'm not saying that we will never do it but.....that, I only thought a little about it, like 'I too someday will~', but if I'm asked by Kousuke it's not like I'll refuse.....wait that's wro——ng-! That's not it! Or rather, what's with you! What do you mean recording huh! Just what kind of position!□

□Any kind of event need to have memento about it left behind. So please feel relieved. I'll also participate at the middle. A sticky and wet, passionate threeso——□

□Don't say anymore than that-!□

Emily howled. Her straight-man skill was already reached the maximum number. At the same time a cat punch was let flew. That punch which was unleashed under the straight-man skill splendidly bored on Danessa's cheek.

□? Why, was I punched?□

□This person is hopeless already. I have to ask Kousuke, to turn you into a splendid villager.□

Surely Vanessa was gifted with the skill Serious Breaker. Emily who was feeling disheartened resolved herself to use the final option.

Like that they advanced forward, passed through several doors, and before long the two of them came out into a passage with a waterway in it. It seemed they had passed underground from the research facility and came out to the water purification facility.

They passed a place that had several things that seemed to be pipe and tank lined up, then the two of them put their hand on the door in front of them. Vanessa made Emily to back away while she entered inside the room.

That room seemed to be a room where under the floor was wholly dedicated to be a water tank. Half of the room was used to placed machineries, while at the other side of the fence became a watering place.

Perhaps this was a place to temporarily store the water that was flowing from the waterway. It seemed that it was being opened right now, so under the floor was fierce water current that was flowing toward somewhere.

It was a vertically long room, so they could see a stair that continued to upper floor, a passage, and then a door. The door of the second floor was located at the southern end of the room, and there was a bridge-style passage that connected both doors.

Emily and Vanessa sent their gaze toward the door of that second floor——

□Ah, teache——□

□Doctor Grant-□

There was a flapping lab coat. It was clear whose coat it was. Emily was trying to call out because Down's figure had vanished to the other side of the door. However, Vanessa pulled Emily closer to her cautiously.

Right after that, *gan-* a loud voice entered their ears. Something fell behind Emily and Vanessa, in front of the door they had just gone through. When they looked back in surprise, there was a large rectangle case the size of a Boston bag there. It was the other thing that Down carried along with a leather bag when he escaped. It seemed that he threw it at the timing when Emily and Vanessa entered the room.

The sound *batan-* of the door at the second floor closing resounded.

At that moment,

□□□□KIIIIIIIIII-□□□□

Such cries struck the two's eardrums, at the same time, the case bloated up from inside and it was destroyed. It seemed that it wasn't made from a material that was really tough in the first place, the cracks spread in the blink of eye and the clasp snapped.

Instantly, something leaped out and attacked Emily and Vanessa. Vanessa covered Emily behind her while she fired.

However, that creature's speed wasn't normal, also its movement was strangely irregular, and so the bullet Vanessa fired missed.

That creature kicked on the floor and leaped toward the face right away, however Vanessa only narrowed her eyes quietly

without even any agitation. Her long leg kicked up vertically to deal with it.

go- The thing was kicked up together with the vivid sound of bone breaking, it then twirled midair while it then crashed on the floor some distance away.

□That is.....a monkey.□

□Seems like it. It looks like an adult, but seeing that case's size, it seems that before this it was an infant monkey.□

A bullet struck the infant monkey in a flash when it slowly stood up. The moment it raised its face, a splendid headshot finished the berserker animal—Berserker Monkey, and like that it crumbled down and white smoke rose from its corpse.

However, they couldn't let their guard down. The reason was the existences that spread out to surround the two of them—the Berserker Monkeys still numbered four in total.

□Strange.□

□.....Indeed. Doctor Grant. Please back down slowly until the wall. Toward that gap between the machine and the pillar.□

Vanessa guessed the meaning of Emily's mutter and she increased her cautiousness to maximum while slowly backing away as though to make herself to be a shield.

Yes, they had the leeway to back away. The berserkers that should rush ahead following their instinct were taking a fixed distance from Vanessa and Emily, as though they were observing the situation, or they were being careful.

Actually these Berserker Monkeys had wariness toward danger instilled inside them using a method like the Pavlov dog experiment. It was an experiment to make berserkers that would only rush forward foolhardily would cope to a certain degree toward firearms. Seeing gun muzzle and hearing gunshot, those conditions along with the awareness that “something painful would come flying” at the same time were planted into them.

It could be seen whether the experiment failed or not from this. The four berserker monkeys were surrounding Vanessa and Emily, their wariness was plain to see, however they also didn't retreat due to their instinctual belligerence or their desire to eat.

Vanessa made Emily to withdraw to the gap between a machine and a pillar before she pulled the trigger as though to say that she didn't give a damn to that wariness.

However, the berserker monkeys who tried all they could to not stand in front of the gun muzzle were already out of the firing line by the time the trigger was pulled.

□So this mean that even without antidote, the progress of converting the drug into weapon is advancing steadily isn't it.□

Even an expert marksman like Vanessa couldn't hit the target easily in front of the berserker monkeys that were taking evasive action with all their strength by using their beastly agility.

gachin- Such sound rang out and the gun's chamber was fixed in place still in a slid-out position. It ran out of bullet.

As though aiming for that moment, the berserker monkeys went out in attack simultaneously.

Vanessa was in danger——was how it seemed but,

□An agent of the security bureau isn't so soft that they can be taken off guard by the likes of monkey.□

That muttered words were the truth. Vanessa's hand thrust out smoothly toward one of the assaulting monkeys, and the moment that hand made contact, the monkey was blown away to another direction.

And then Vanessa stepped forward without pause and threw the empty gun magazine he had taken out. A berserker monkey rapidly approaching from the left was checked with that before Vanessa crouched down swiftly and launched a fierce upper roundhouse kick.

By crouching down, the berserker monkey that approached from the right lost sight of its target and it sailed over above Vanessa's head, the monkey that leaped from the front received a fierce roundhouse kick that sprang from a blind spot and got blown away.

The left berserker monkey that got checked by the empty magazine came flying with time difference. Vanessa had recovered her posture by that time and she thrust out her arm once more.

The berserker monkey opened its mouth with a shriek *kiiii-*, however, at the next moment, the moment felt a faint touch on its arm but at the same time its field of vision reversed up-down and it fell into panic. When it noticed, it received a severe impact on its back and it was staring at the ceiling.

And then, a gun muzzle cut into its field of vision. The sense of danger instilled into it ordered to evade but——too slow.

pan- A light sound rang, and with it a wind hole opened in the berserker monkey's forehead.

The berserker monkey that was the first to be blown away to another direction was going along the ceiling and assaulted from overhead.

But, as expected it couldn't reach. A hand that thrust out with a flowing motion softly touched the berserker monkey's head as though in a caress, and the next moment it was forced into a backflip with fierce momentum. Even the physical ability of monkey was in vain and the berserker monkey got crashed on the ground. It then met the same fate with the previous monkey.

Without even any time to wake up, a shot to the head splattered its brain.

The last monkey moved as though it crawled on the ground to bite at Vanessa's leg. In a moment, a knee fell down. Perhaps because of its instinct, the berserker monkey leaped to the side right away but its wrist was grasped.

Its wrist was twisted and its joint was instantly locked. For a berserker that didn't feel pain, it was possible for it to shake off the hold without balking at getting a broken bone, but even so for a few moments it couldn't avoid to move following the limit of its body mobility. And then, the berserk monkey's vector of inertia and center of gravity were directed at that instant and it quickly got pressed down with its face pressing on the floor.

A knee fell on its back to stop it from moving. Because the right point was pressed, it had no room to use its physical strength. And then, it wasn't given the chance to even struggle. *gorit-* The gun muzzle pressed on the back of its head fired its bullet with no hesitation.

□With this it's all of them.□

Vanessa's sharp gaze ran through the surrounding.

What she used was technique of jujitsu and aikido. Vanessa's body was that of a female. No matter how much she tried to deny, it was a fact that her pure physical strength was inferior to male. That was why she polished numerous techniques based on 'soft and fair goes far'.

What about powerful offensive ability? A single bullet would serve for that purpose. No matter how muscular the opponent was, even if it was against a monster, she could knock them down unquestionably if only one of her hand could touch them, and then for the rest she just needed to pull the trigger.

This was the strength of Vanessa who was said to be at the top level in close-quarter combat among the agents that belonged under the security bureau. Even though recently she was called as Danessa a lot, but her strength was the real thing.

—That was exactly the reason, he created this moment because he didn't underestimate the people of the security bureau by any means. The moment when Vanessa was away from the protection target.

□Agent, protect her if you can.□

□-, Doctor Grant!□

Unnoticed, Down's face peeked out from the door at the second floor with a gun muzzle aiming. —Toward none other than Emily.

Vanessa leaped in front of Emily as though she was flying. It was at the same time when Down fired.

A dry bursting sound rang consecutively. Vanessa's body jerked. Fresh blood scattered in a splat and dirtied Emily's cheek.

□Kahah, gaa, a□

□Vanessa-□

Vanessa crashed on the ground and rolled several times. She then tried to stand up right away, yet the impact clogging her lungs made her unable to breath well, and she could only crouch from the intense pain cruising through her whole body where she was unable to move.

Emily whose facial expression changed rushed to her. She made Vanessa to face up and embraced her inside her arms. Blood could be seen flowing from her shoulder, arm, and thigh, but Emily couldn't see any blood from the torso that got shot the first. Even while panicking, Emily took off the suit's jacket and took a look. There she saw four bullets squashed inside a bulletproof vest that blocked those bullets.

It seemed that the bulletproof jacket barely saved her life. Although, putting aside the gunshot wound in her arm and shoulder, the bleeding at her thigh was at the level that couldn't be left alone. Most likely an important artery was grazed there.

□As I thought, I'm no good in something like this. Just what do I need to do to get a headshot I wonder?□

Footsteps rang while Down advanced on the upper passage of the second floor. He stopped at the middle and aimed his

gun while staring at the defeated berserker monkeys. There wasn't any particular strong feeling that could be felt from his words and voice, whether from shooting a person or aiming a gun at Emily. Emily bit her lip strongly from that.

But, right now wasn't the time to complain. Emily took out a container that looked like an experiment vial from her breast pocket. She opened the lid and made Vanessa drank half while she poured the remaining bit by bit at the wounds.

Immediately the blood that was flowing out like river was clearly lessening. Vanessa's pained breathing was also recovering its regularity slightly.

□.....My god. Emily. Emily, by any chance, you have improved Berserk in this short time? Or else, is that a product of an idea that you don't tell to anyone even to me? As expected, you are really outrageous.□

Down's eyes were shining ominously at the unknown medicine that was displaying recovery ability that was impossible for the existing medicine.

Although, his deduction was completely off the mark.

What Emily used was a healing medicine of another world that Kousuke handed to her in preparation of the worst case. As expected, its effect couldn't give a complete recovery until the bullets remaining inside the body were taken out, but it was able to at least stop the bleeding completely, softened the pain, and healed to a certain degree.

Vanessa didn't look like she could move properly, even so she conveyed that she was okay with her gaze. Emily sighed in relieve.

And then, her gaze struck at Down who was looking down at them from the second floor. It was a calm gaze, however a rage that couldn't be hidden was dwelling there.

□Teacher. You shot at me there. Without any hesitation.□

□.....That's right. However, I want you to not misunderstand. I wasn't trying to kill you there. For a researcher like me to stop that security bureau's agent, I have no other what than that.□

Down who thought that he wouldn't be able to shake off the pursuit from the beginning implemented a strategy that used berserker monkeys to separate Emily from the troublesome bodyguard, and then he shot at Emily so Vanessa would cover her without any leeway to dodge or counterattack.

In other words, because he had no confidence that he would be able to snipe Vanessa, he did it in a way so Vanessa herself would be the one that entered his line of fire.

Although, that didn't change that Emily was in his line of fire. If Vanessa didn't make it in time then there was no proof that Emily would be safe.

□But, it's fine in its own way even if I got shot. Isn't that right?□

□.....I didn't want you to die is a fact.□

It seemed that it would be fine if she was just alive. But even that was suspicious if it was true or not in this situation.

□Teacher, please tell me your motive. I came here in order to listen to that. Surely, it will be meaningless, and nothing that I have lost will come back, but.....even so, I want to

listen to your true feeling. Teacher-, this five years that you spend with me, with all of us, is there any meaning in it? Do we mean anything to you? The thing that you want to obtain even by betraying all of us, just what in the world is it?

That question was said calmly, but it sounded as though she was going to vomit blood.

Weren't they a family? Wasn't he saved her when she was cornered? Didn't he love her? The five years they had spent together since that day, when she was welcomed as family, were all that a lie? Was it something so light, that he could easily betray and abandon them?

Down looked down. Her gaze toward Emily was calm, but there was darkness somewhere in it. He kept aiming his gun without letting his guard down. And then, he answered.

What I want to obtain, is it? Indeed, it's a meaningless question. But, if you want to know that then I'll tell you. You see, Emily, I merely want to leave behind my name in history.

Leave behind name, in history?

That's right. Some people has their name entered into the textbook to be read by the future generation, I want to become that kind of human. I want to stay behind in the memory of the people forevermore as a historically great character. Do you understand?

For, for something like that.....

As I thought, you don't understand.

Perhaps, there was some kind of reason that left him with no choice but to do something like that. Perhaps there was no

other way for him to abandon them for the sake of something important that he couldn't let go no matter what. Those kinds of fleeting thought were now splattered with mud and thrown away by Emily.

Emily trembled, perhaps from anger, or perhaps from frustration. Down made a troubled smile.

□ Surely you don't understand. The fear of being a human that doesn't matter whether they exist or not, or the emptiness of being forgotten, or the hopelessness to vanish without leaving behind any proof of leaving. □

□ Such thing-, that kind of thing-. There is no way that teacher is, a person who doesn't matter whether you exist or not! Just who in the world can forget you!? Me!? My seniors!? Lizzi-nee!? Everyone of Down classroom, they are going to forget you!? There is no way such thing will happen! Aren't we who have received your teaching-, the proof of your life!? □

A scream that sounded like a pleading reverberated. But, even those words only made Down gave a troubled smile, he then shook his head slowly.

□ It's not something like that Emily. It's not that kind of a small story. I said it right? I want to leave my name in history. It's no good with only the personal memory of you all. Something like that, cannot erase this terror, this despair, this emptiness inside me. □

□ You are..... □

Her words, her feeling, they didn't go through. Emily understood that from seeing Down's eyes.

Just what in the world was driving him until like this? Emily couldn't understand that.

The person called Reginald Down was born in an average family, he graduated the university with excellent result, he entered the path of researcher, encountered his wife, became a lecturer, his wife died from a sickness, he welcomed distressed students, and sent out a lot of excellent disciples to the outside world. Emily heard such story from Down.

Was there any factor somewhere in that life that drove him to madness?

□You cannot understand? I guess that's how it is for you. Even if other people can understand, but Emily, you surely cannot understand it.□

□Why, do you say that?□

□Because, you are a genius.□

□Eh?□

Emily Grant was a genius. That was why it was impossible for her to understand Reginald Down for eternity.

Emily was dumbfounded hearing that statement of Down. She felt as though her whole self was denied. Emily who was lonely because she was a genius, the one who taught her that such thing was irrelevant was none other than Down. But now he discarded Emily because she was a genius.

□You won't understand the feeling of a mediocre person who saw off the back of a genius. That what someone can achieve, it's decided by the ability that person is provided with from the start.□

□But, but teacher, you are an excellent educator even throughout the university, even the other professors respected teacher——□

□That's because I'm a mediocre person. Because I'm mediocre, I understand just what it is that someone doesn't understand. I understand what need to be done so they can understand. I have been kept searching, that's why I understand what other people search. I understand what makes anyone happy, and what I need to do to push the back of other. That's because all of those were also paths that I myself had gone through. That's all.□

Down sighed deeply and he looked at somewhere far away with empty eyes while continuing his words that sounded like he was talking to himself.

□No matter how many efforts I piled up, the geniuses are clearing over all those efforts easily. When I thought of one idea, they will already create a hundred ideas and produced result. Just how much emptiness I felt each time that happened, is surely something that they don't understand.□

Surely what was reflected inside his eyes, were the figure of his students who were already graduated and got recognized in society.

Emily didn't understand. Every time teacher saw the seniors that came out in television or magazine, he would make a proud expression. He would be happy as though it was about himself. Were all of those just acting?

Was he actually boiling with emotion of hatred and jealousy, that he should be the one that got praised, that he should be the one that was granted with glory?

“Even so, they would speak that I am their teacher, and that somehow consoled my heart. Having all of them, including you Emily and everyone in Down classroom, adoring me as “the educator Reginald Down”, it supported me. It gave me acceptance and a small satisfaction, that it’s enough with this.”

His affection was the real thing. His feeling of wanting to become other’s strength was true. Even if he couldn’t stand at the front stage, but Down was able to maintain his self by doing that. The trust and gratitude of his students somehow diverted Down from his dirty vanity that should be called as a deep-rooted delusion.

“Then, why?”

“Isn’t that obvious? That was because Berserk was created.”

A hitch leaked out from Emily’s mouth.

“Berserk, was?”

“Yes, Berserk. Emily, you are without a doubt a genius. That is a miraculous drug. It change human, into something that is not human, aa, that’s right. It’s a miracle! Just how much application can be found from it if it’s continued to be researched! The result is clear! It will be a revolution of the world!”

“Te, teacher.....”

Down put one hand on his temple in excitement and laughed loudly. That figure was truly abnormal. The figure of the kind and gentle Down inside Emily’s memory was vanishing.

□There is no doubt! This is a great exploit that will leave the name in history! All those results left behind by all my students until now are just like trash in front of Berserk! You will become a historical character! And I am the father of that! I will leave my name as the father of revolution! Do you understand!? —No, surely you don't understand. That's why, in front of this miracle you were able to say a bullshit like □This is dangerous so let's destroy it □-□

□-□

pan- With a dry sound, the floor nearby Emily burst open. The excited Down unconsciously shot. Down went 'hah' at the bursting sound he made and he readjusted his breathing and then he made a gentle smile with a disgusting easiness.

□I got flustered at that time. No matter how much I explained to you about the "possibility" of Berserk, you won't change your decision to destroy it. If I tried too hard at persuading you, I'll lose your trust and my standing as "father". There also wasn't any leeway timewise. After all I didn't know when you will erase the data.□

□That was why, you took it out?□

□That's right. There is my disciple at the leadership of Gamma Pharmaceutical, and I relied on him. But never in my wildest dream I thought that it would be an underworld organization that has this kind of facility though. I thought it was the will of heaven. Finally, the time to be rewarded has come even to this me who continued to only perform service for other people.□

But, it couldn't go that easily. No matter how much he researched the stolen data and drug, he was unable to create the antidote. The research about Berserk's use as weapon was producing data and application method to some

degree, but the plan of Kaysis and others to scatter Berserk themselves before selling the antidote was quickly coming to an impasse.

They also could only do extremely simple thing with the application too, he was unable at all to create something that would shake the world as a “miraculous drug”.

No matter what he was lacking the decisive something to create those.

Yes, he lacked the existence of Emily Grant who was the creator.

□The first incident, those police officers, and then agent Warren too, they were all people under Kaysis. Isn't that right? Everything was all to corner me and direct me so I could only rely on teacher. In order to make me research and develop Berserk by my own will.□

□Exactly. It was going well until the middle but..... Really, they were all doing needless things. Whether it's the security bureau, and also Rod and Dennis too.□

pakit- There was the sound of something snapped. It came from inside Emily's chest. It was the sound of something important, something really important snapping and then broke.

Scenes were resurrected in her mind. The nightmare that she absolutely couldn't forget.

——Milo-oniichan died. He was ran over by a berserker, as though he got hit by a truck.

——Sam-oniichan died. He was reduced into a berserker in the end.

—Jessica-oneechan died. Her neck was snapped by the gentle Sam-oniichan.

—Dennis-oniichan died. In order to avoid getting transformed into berserker, he shot his own head.

—Rod-oniichan died. While he was apologizing ‘sorry’.

And then,

—Hendricks-oniichan died. In order to protect Emily and everyone else.

She thought of him as her real older brother. He was slow in some area, but he was sincere, and gentle, a person that was like a pleasant breeze. There wasn’t anyone that could ease the heart by being at their side like him.

—Lizzie-nee died. In order to hide Emily. She made herself as a bait.

She was someone Emily idolized. Sometimes she wasn’t honest, but there wasn’t any other woman that was gentle and lovely like her. She saw a dream. The scene of Hendricks and Lizzie who she liked very much getting wedded with each other, smiling with happiness.

She believed.

That everyone in Down classroom would someday be able to witness such lovely sight.

All of those—

□So it was I, that pulled the trigger.□

□Hm?□

Emily averted her gaze from Down who tilted his head and she slowly stood up. Vanessa called at Emily with a small voice that was still pained, but Emily only smiled fleetingly and averted her eyes from her.

“Do, Doctor, Grant-. You, cannot. That’s-”

“I’m sorry, Vanessa.”

Vanessa couldn’t hope for a complete recovery with bullets still remaining inside her body. Her internal organs that received four shots, although the bleeding could be stopped, but her broken bones still weren’t healed. Therefore, it was the best she could do to reach out her hand that was trembling from enduring the intense pain. Yet she failed to grasp, at Emily’s hand.

“Can you not move, Emily?”

Down aimed the gun muzzle at the standing up Emily once more.

“If possible, I don’t want to kill you. Even what happened at Hendricks and others was just an unfortunate accident, it wasn’t something that I wished for. That’s why, you obediently——”

“I, pulled your trigger.”

Emily mutters cut off Down’s words. Her figure with her head hanging down looked really sorrowful. Her worn-out lab coat seemed to be the representation of her heart.

Down seemed like he didn’t understand the meaning of Emily’s words and he tilted his head once more. Emily continued her heavy and dark words toward him.

“You, weren’t simply a virtuous person. Inside your heart, there was madness nesting there all this time. A conceit that is far, far stronger than other people, a heart that is wishing for praise, were gnawing inside you.”

“.....”

“Everyone suppressed those down. The many seniors, everyone of Down classroom, your family. Despite so, I broke that. The trigger that you wanted to pull but you managed to hold back from, I pulled it—I awakened, the berserk that was inside you right from the beginning.”

“So, there was Berserk in me right from the start. Now you really said it, Emily.”

It was unclear, just how the expression of Emily who raised her face slowly should be described as. She looked troubled, she looked as though she would cry anytime now, or she looked like she was resolved of something—it was a strangely transparent expression.

“I was the one that pulled the trigger that awakened the monster, that’s why—that’s why, I will be the one that pull the trigger too for ending it.”

“.....You will, shoot me?”

There was a small handgun in the hand that Emily lifted. It was Vanessa’s spare gun. It seemed that Emily pulled it out when she was standing up. From behind her, Vanessa yelled “You must not, Doctor Grant!” with a hoarse voice.

“Emily. You will shoot, me who you saw as father? This me who rescued you?”

“Yes. I’ll shoot. I, will end you.”

□For revenge?□

□No. It's for your own sake. And then, for my sake. Surely.□

□.....I see.□

The two who once called each other as father and daughter, were now aiming gun at each other.

There wasn't any undulation of great emotion that could be seen from their crossing gazes. But, surely they were holding emotions that couldn't be expressed with words like an explosive that was in the verge of exploding. Perhaps it wasn't just Emily who was like that, but Down too.

□Then it can't be helped. Sayonara, Emily.□

□Yes, sayonara. Teacher.□

The triggers, were pulled. Dry bursting sound thundered.

At the same time, a shadow sprang out to the air. *kin-* A metallic sound resounded.

The bullet was bisected into two. The split up bullet greatly diverted from the target and pierced the wall behind.

□Ko, Kousuke?□

A shadow landed down lightly. That was without a doubt, the catching up Kousuke.

***Kaclick*, Like That**

AN: This is the second posting for today.

I also post a chapter before this, so for you who don't read the previous chapter yet please pay attention.

Part 1

With a short sword in hand, Kousuke stood between Emily and Down.

Kousuke was staring at Emily right from the *front*.

Yes, Kousuke split apart the fired bullet in midair, was to protect Down behind him. What he cut was Emily's bullet.

□Ko, Kousuke.....why-□

Emily questioned with the gun still raised in her trembling hand.

Kousuke slowly walked forward without any words, he didn't even glance at Down behind him. And then, when he arrived until in front of Emily who was shaking her head left and right, he put his hand softly on the gun barrel and gently lowered it down.

□Stop it, Emily. This is not your role.□

A calm voice and a composed gaze enveloped Emily.

But, Kousuke felt a slight resistance at his hand that was put on the gun barrel. Emily was rejecting it. He could see a tragic resolve inside the eyes of Emily who was shaking her head left and right.

Kousuke didn't know. About the words exchanged between Emily and Down.

Even so he was able to guess. Just with what kind of feeling Emily pulled the trigger. Just with what kind of feeling, she directed a killing intent at the man who she thought as a teacher and also a substitute of father.

Surely she felt hatred. Surely she also felt resentment. But, her act didn't come only from being captured by those kinds of negative emotions and ended in madness.

Inside her eyes there was a sense of purpose. Or possibly a sense of duty. And then a sense of responsibility.

Kousuke smiled wryly in his heart, thinking that it was like Emily. Even so his hand didn't let go from Emily's gun that refused to be lowered.

□Kousuke-, this is something that I started, that's why-. That's why-□

□Is that really so? I don't think so though. Well, even so if that's what Emily yourself think, then I won't really deny it. However, the end of this path is no good. It's not a destination where Emily should go.□

He wouldn't let her go through the path of murder. Kousuke responded with a feeling that was equally strong with the feeling Emily held.

Even so, Emily was about to object further, but Kousuke added his words.

□Because, that's something that run counter to the wish of Emily's big brothers and sisters right?□

□-□

Yes, no one was demanding this kind of conclusion from Emily. Even though Kousuke had never met them, even though he had never exchanged words with them, but just from hearing Emily's story, it was something obvious to Kousuke.

There was no way they who risked their life to protect their important little sister would wish for this.

□Emily's dream, is to save those who are suffering sickness right?□

She wished to heal her grandmother. Emily's step that was starting from such wish, surely it was them who were rooting for it more than anyone.

□They should believe, more than anyone. Emily's hand, it isn't something to hurt others. It's something to heal, to save others.□

That was why, not a single one of them blamed Emily for creating the drug of madness. They didn't escape by saying that it was unrelated with them. They understood that it was an outrageous situation, yet they didn't leave Emily's side by any means.

That was why,

□My bad, but I'm not going to allow this yeah? I absolutely won't allow only this. No matter how strong Emily's will is, I'll stop you with my all. Endo Kousuke, the right-hand man of the demon king and also your protector, this me will stop you with my whole body and soul. Emily Grant has reached this far by doing her best to save others. Something like the closing of curtain by such a girl murdering someone who was family, I won't let that happen.□

□Kou, suke.....□

Strength left Emily's hand. *gatan* A sound rang. The handgun that slipped unhindered from Emily's hand, it fell on the floor.

Surely there wasn't any way to express the overflowing emotion inside her. All the words that existed in this world were too inadequate for that. She wondered, just how many times this body, this heart had been protected. When she needed it, a help would be given to her then without fail, by Emily Grant's hero.

Softly, Emily's head leaned on Kousuke's chest. *drop, drop* The falling tears on the floor were surely the result of her emotion that couldn't be worded appearing in a definite shape.

Kousuke gently put his hand on the head of Emily who was burying her face on his chest while trembling. He exchanged gaze with Vanessa who was relieved while still lying down on the floor and they nodded at each other.

□.....So even that berserker cannot stop you. I'm keenly feeling the irrationality of your existence thoroughly.□

Down said that with an astonished expression. He wasn't running away or shooting while Kousuke and Emily were talking. Kousuke turned a suspicious gaze at Down who was like that.

□You aren't running away?□

□Will you let me run away?□

Down replied so while smiling bitterly. There wasn't any hostility, or fluster and desperation that were particular for a

cornered person that could be seen from him. Kousuke's gaze narrowed in wonder of what this person was thinking. And what bothered him above all, was the reason why Down *didn't shoot*.

At that time, Kousuke only cut Emily's bullet. He used gravity magic to suck in the bullet toward his blade and slashed the bullet that shifted slightly. Naturally, he planned to use his kunai to repel the bullet that he thought would approach from behind him but.....

In the first place, Down didn't pull his trigger at that time. Down had no intention of killing Emily.

□Just what in the world you are planning?□

□Of course, I'm thinking about myself. I have been thinking only about myself since I stole Berserk.□

Kousuke thought that perhaps, by any chance Down actually hesitated to shoot because of his affection toward Emily, but it seemed that wasn't it. Down's calm and composed gaze and voice seemed even more eerie.

□.....I don't know what you are thinking, but for now, surrender.□

□Oho, you won't kill me?□

□I just don't want Emily to lose more person close to her.Even if that person is only "formerly" close to her, or even if that person is an unforgivable traitor.□

If Kousuke had to say more, he also had the calculation of wanting to hand over the case's ringleader to Chief Magdanese. Kousuke thought that it would be also necessary for Emily's life from here on that there was the

result of “the culprit was captured” regarding the “Berserk Case” that shaken the world.

Kousuke’s words caused Emily to raise her face from his chest and she looked at Down. Her gaze was certainly wishing not for Down’s death, but for him to be judged by the administration of justice.

Down listened at Kousuke’s words, and then he saw Emily’s gaze before he sighed deeply.

“Haa, really, nothing has gone well at all. Perhaps this is also because I’m mediocre.”

Saying that, Down took one, two steps back. Kousuke leaped out without any question. He would hold him down and then robbed him of his consciousness. With the danger of Berserk, it was a great concern even to just speak at him.

When Kousuke stepped at the second floor’s passage, it was at the same time when Down fell into the water reservoir from his back. Emily reflexively yelled “Teacher-”.

Kousuke jumped in to overtake Down and caught him midair. But, when he tried to hover midair, his body lurched forward with a jerk. Kousuke launched a steel string from his sleeve in panic to seize the handrail of the passage and he dangled down.

Kousuke’s movement was lacking in luster. Originally he should be able to make Down unconscious before he could jump down, but he was unable to do that was because of the effect of the previous battle.

The rapid Limit Break by using Last Zell. Naturally, he was unable to escape from the side effect. Currently Kousuke was in the middle of a remarkable weakening. He was unable to

create clone, and his physical ability decreased by sixty percent. He was being assaulted by fatigue that made him wanted to just fall asleep right now. Honestly, he already felt his consciousness getting farther when he used gravity magic to suck in the bullet.

□You plan to suicide huh!□

□That's right. Though actually I wanted Emily to kill me. After all, I understand that I won't be able to escape. If that's not the case, do you think I will talk that long even understanding that a monster like you is here?□

Down spoke about his own end really easily while dangling in midair seized by Kousuke.

□Although, as expected I didn't think that berserker will be defeated this quickly though.□

□Teacher-, what are you doing!? Didn't you want to leave your name in history!?!□

Emily's words caused Down to answer with a mysterious expression that was a mixture of resignation and madness.

□That's right. I'll leave my name in history. If I cannot escape anymore, then I'll leave my name as the tragic father who tried to stop the girl that scattered disaster in this world!□

With those words, Kousuke finally guessed the thinking of what Down was trying to do. And then, he said□This stupid bastard-□while trying to throw Down on the floor.

But, before he could,

□If even that cannot come true then! Aa, fine then. I will become that very disaster itself! I'll leave my name in

history not with a great achievement, but with a great sin!□

Saying that, he exploded the moment Kousuke threw him.

doon- The moment that muffled sound rang, Down's stomach exploded. Naturally, his blood and flesh scattered. Emily became unable to move due to the abnormal situation that was too gruesome.

Kousuke desperately maintained his creaking body and his distant consciousness. He activated gravity magic while leaping toward Emily right away.

Even gravity magic that was unable to completely display its effect was able to at least knock off the approaching blood and flesh.

But, for the current Kousuke that was his limit. Down that changed his route using the impact fell into the water reservoir along with his scattered blood and flesh.

A grand spray of water rose, creating a fierce ripple at the water reservoir. At the same time, the clear and transparent water was dyed red as though ink was spilled into it.

□.....□

□Damn it-, he got us-□

Emily was dumbfounded without any words while staring at the water reservoir that was dyed red while Kousuke laid bare his irritation.

□Kousuke-san-, this is!□

The lying down Vanessa threw a radio at Kousuke. Kousuke guessed what she meant and received the radio before

speaking into it.

□Bernard! Can you hear me!?□

□Mu, Aby. What's the matter?□

□Berserk spilled into the waterway! The water gate is opened and it's flowing to somewhere! Anywhere is fine, just stop the flow before it can go through the water supply facility!□

□-. Wait a second! ——Control room-. Seal all the waterways!□

Bernard who received the contact gave instruction to his subordinates that suppressed the control room.

Just as Kousuke said, Down didn't just blow himself up. "Scattering disaster"——just as those words meant, he wasn't trying to transform himself into a berserker, but he exploded himself to scatter the Berserk that was stored inside his stomach and spilled it into the waterway.

Most likely this aberrant plan was hatched because of the irregularity that was Kousuke. This was Down's final attack from thinking of the possibility that anything he did would be prevented.

No matter what place it was, no matter what reason it was for, a person who staked their life on the line was terrifying. Kousuke who got outwitted painfully realized that once more while he gritted his teeth.

Then, it was at that time a voice that sounded like a shriek rang from the radio.

□Captain-, the control doesn't work! Both the clean water facility or the water supply facility, all of them won't move from the opened gate state! The control is completely on the fritz!□

□What did you say-. What's the meaning of this!?□

□Those guys, perhaps they are inserting virus to the computer-. If I have time then I think it's possible to recover the control though.□

□How long that will take?□

□.....Ten minutes. No, if I have just eight minutes, I'll somehow.....□

□Tsk, get on it right away.□

□Yes Sir-□

Silence ruled over the place for a while. At this rate, the irrigation that was polluted by Berserk would flow into a city. Even before that, it would pass through several towns. If that happened, the wave of berserker would be spreading as though eroding the country from the edge.

Most likely it wouldn't take five minutes until the polluted water passed through the water supply facility. The time limit until the overwhelming tragedy, was just five minutes.

□Kousuke.....□

□Kousuke-san.....□

Emily who was staring at the water reservoir in a daze and Vanessa who had a grim expression were calling at Kousuke.

Kousuke thought of something with a grim expression, then he suddenly smiled bitterly and strength left his shoulders. And then, he ran his gaze toward Emily and Vanessa while taking the radio into his hand.

□Bernard. I'll do something about it. Well, it will become flashy, so don't let anyone get near the water supply facility.□

□! Aby. Got it. I'll leave it to you-. Please, save this country!□

Bernard's trust and slight entreaty reached Kousuke through his voice from the radio.

The same thing was also dwelling inside the gaze of Vanessa and Emily.

Kousuke kept smiling bitterly while opening his mouth to those two.

□Actually, I didn't want to rely on him. At the very end it become a pathetic story like this but.....I'll ask a bit, for help from his majesty the demon king.□

Emily and Vanessa looked puzzled. Kousuke's bitter smile deepened at that.

Part 2

Kousuke and others came out to the rooftop of the clean water facility while lending a shoulder to Vanessa.

There was a water supply facility downstream, and even further downstream they could see a town.

□Kousuke, what are you going to do?□

Kousuke said□I'll do this□to Emily's question and he took out his smartphone. And then, he called. After a few times of the call tone, there was the sullen voice of the speaker at the other side coming out from the phone.

□.....What is it, Endo——□

□Nagumo! My bad but there is no time! Don't ask anything and blow up the water supply that is near my position!□

□.....□

The call partner was his majesty the demon king who was currently spending an enjoyable time of making dinner with his beloved daughter. His majesty the demon king who was wearing the frilly pink apron that was created by Myuu for him, spending an enjoyable, enjoyable time while Yue and others were holding down their laughter!

Normally, if someone was suddenly phoned, and then requested to destroy a public facility without even getting told the reason, that person would either doubt the sanity of

the other party, or they would cut off the phone without delay thinking that it was a joke before returning back to the happy family time.

But, the other party here wasn't normal. Rather, this person was the synonym of abnormal irrationality.

Therefore,

□'Kay. Don't move from where you are.□

□-. I'm in your debt, Nagumo!□

A presence of wry smile was transmitted from the other side of the phone.

At the same time,

□E, err, Kousuke? Who are you talking to? Or rather, what are you doing? Or rather, there are various things I want to ask but, anyway, can I ask? —What is, that?□

□Kousuke-san.....I cannot believe it but.....□

Emily was looking up to the sky with a completely cramping expression while asking Kousuke, while Vanessa was also similarly staring at a spot in the sky with a flustered expression that was rarely seen from her.

Kousuke shrugged his shoulders at them who were like that and said.

□There won't be airborne infection from Berserk. Even if it is in liquid state, but it will become invalid if it is vaporized. Then, I'll blow it up altogether with an overwhelming heat. —Well, that kind of thing can only be done by the demon king though.□

It was right after he said that.

Far high in the sky, a dot of light was starting to shine brilliantly as though a second sun was born. It could be seen clearly even through the cloud. It then looked like as though it swelled up instantly before at the next moment, a pillar of light descended from the sky.

The cloudy sky was blown away, an enormous hole was created at the sea of clouds in the sky, the atmosphere was burned down. That pillar which pierced the water supply facility along with a thunderous roar instantly destroyed the facility with a brilliant light, melted the ground, and created an outrageous crater at the blink of eye.

The light flooded the world.

The world that was gloomy from the cloudy sky was being dyed pure white. The heat wave and shockwave was spreading like a ripple and turned the surrounding of the facility into a circle-shaped empty land.

——Sunlight convergence laser Burst Hyperion

The demon king detected the location of the water supply facility using “Compass of Crossing Guidance” with Kousuke as the reference point, and then he teleported the Burst Hyperion at the satellite orbit above the facility using a space substitution artifact.

Next the demon king pushed the button *kaclick*, like that. Just with that the laser cannon that converged sunlight annihilated anything and everything.

It was truly the heaven’s judgment. The manifestation of myth.

Though the person who pulled the trigger, was currently wearing a frilly pink apron at home.

□.....□

□.....□

The face of Emily and Vanessa turned into something that really couldn't be shown to other people. Their eyes opened wide with their mouth gaping open unmoving. Drool was trickling from the corner of their mouth and not a single word leaked out.

While they were in the middle of being like that, the water supply facility was eradicated entirely. Next the light pillar that changed even the topography was getting thinner bit by bit, and before long it vanished as though melting into the air.

Color returned to the world and the sound of waterfall flowing into the deep crater resounded.

□How is it, Endo? Is it okay like that?□

□Yeah, thanks, Nagumo. Sorry that I suddenly made an outrageous request.□

□I understand that you are trying to not rely on me. And now someone like you came to rely on me without even saying the reason. You must have a reason that is that important right? Well, I'll trust you on that. That's why, I ain't need your apology.□

□Hahah. As I thought, the demon king is just too doting on his relatives yeah. That's why I cannot rely on you too much.□

Kousuke scratched his cheek awkwardly while making a wry smile. And then, he reported that he meant to return to Japan in a few days and he would speak about the circumstance when he went back and he cut off the phone.

Kousuke let out a long exhale.

Putting aside if it was related to a request from Hajime, Kousuke had promised to himself that he wouldn't rely on Hajime for anything in a matter that he poked his nose into by his own collision. But now he relied on him in the end. His shoulders dropped in dejection while he patted down his chest in relieve that they had avoided a great disaster (excluding the crater).

And then, his gaze slowly turned toward Emily and Vanessa who was still petrified wordlessly.

□Aa, Emily, Vanessa——□

□Hyuuwa!?□

□Afuh□

The moment he called at them, Emily jumped in surprise while raising her voice as though she was liberated from a binding curse before she became unable to stand up from shock and fell down. At the same time, Vanessa who was borrowing Emily's shoulder also fell down and her butt impacted the ground.

Kousuke thought that their reaction was understandable while he was about to lend a hand at the fallen two—and he stiffened.

choro choro choro~

Slipping through the sound of the waterfall, there was sound of water from right nearby.

The source was of course, the Emily-chan who kept lying down on her butt while shivering all over. It seemed that her bladder loosened up completely from witnessing the situation that surpassed human knowledge. 'Come to think of it, she gulped down a lot of coffee before riding the helicopter because she was nervous huuh', Kousuke recalled.

□.....Kousuke-san. It feels like I'm going to leak out too. Is it fine?□

□There is no way it's fine.□

Vanessa who noticed Emily's disgraceful behavior made a wry smile while talking at Kousuke. There Emily finally seemed to recover her sanity. Naturally, she also noticed her current situation——

□HiIIIIIIH. SToOOOOOP-. Or rather, DON'T LoOOOOOOK-, DON'T LOOK AT THIS KIND OF ME, KOUSUKEEEE-□

Emily was on the verge of tears while tightening her bladder. She was desperately hiding with her lab coat while her hands held her head down and she turned small.

While Emily's shriek was echoing,

□Oi, Aby! What was that just now!? Something came out there you know!? From the sky! Something came out!□

This time Bernard's voice was transmitted from the radio. It seemed that Bernard and others also witnessed the light of Burst Hyperion.

□DON'T LOOOOOK-! PLEASE, STOPPPPPP!□

□Oi, Aby! Respond! Explanation please!□

□Kousuke-san, instead of “pi—”, the bleeding is not stopping. My wound seemed to open because of falling just now. Please help.□

Emily who screamed while turning small. Bernard who yelled together with his subordinates from the radio asking for explanation. Vanessa who was at the verge of death.

Kousuke sighed again in a different kind this time while,

□Now then, what to do about the clean-up I wonder.....□

He looked up to the sky in this scene that was chaotic even when everything was over.

Epilogue First Part

AN: Even though this is the epilogue, there are the first and second parts.....

I'm sorry. I couldn't finish it.

But I'll upload the second part within this day!

TN: The segment above was a note from the author, not from the translator. Sorry, but please wait for two or three days for the next chapter.

Part 1

A sound of deep sigh leaked out in a room that boasted of its excellent soundproofing. The wooden desk and leather chair that were overflowing with high class aura were originally to add at the dignity of the owner, but right now the owner of the sigh was enveloped in a tired atmosphere that made such thing to be meaningless.

□Aa~, chief? Are you okay?□

The room owner—the state security bureau’s chief Sharon Magdanese was addressed by Allen while he was smiling wryly.

Chief Magdanese was putting both her elbows on the desk with both her hands joined and supported the forehead of her hanging down head. She lifted her face slightly and replied with a slightly exasperated expression.

□Isn’t that my line instead? Allen, are you really okay?□

□Ahaha, I’m really fine. I more or less received “healing”, so my health is not as bad as my appearance.□

□.....A “healing” that cure both arms that had the bones pulverized in less than a day until they become usable, is it. Haa~~~□

She once more sighed not just deeply, but dee~ply. Allen’s wry smile deepened in proportion of that.

Chief Magdanese felt the gaze of Allen that seemed to say that he understood her feeling, while her face turned toward the large display hanging on the wall with an expression that didn't even try to hide her sullenness.

What that display projected was the manifestation of mystic. An unimaginably abnormal spectacle.

She wondered just how wonderful it would be if the image was just a scene that was cut from a movie.

□The devilish hand of the demon king that is fired from the sky.....I wonder, since when this world is eroded by the fantasy?□

□Oh maaan, chief. That's a really poetic expression there. It's just like Aby-san——buberah!?!□

Chief Magdanese's paper weight bullet burst out. Allen pleaded□I'm, an injured person! An injured person! Be gentler to me please!□with teary eyes.

Chief Magdanese easily ignored that and her eyes fell toward the display on her hand. She read up the analysis result that was written there with a powerless voice.

□A satellite that is able to fire a laser of converged sunlight.....the point is, that it was just a simple thing that merely focused heat. It more or less theoretically possible to be constructed using the present-day science, it said.□

□However, it's impossible to make it in the size of the silhouette that we captured for an instant. If we try to make it then the result will be in a really big scale. What's more this one was able to not only blast away a whole facility, its power was even able to change the topography. Considering it, such thing is——□

□It's impossible for such thing to not be noticed by our nation.....no, by all the nations on earth when it was in the satellite orbit. In addition, for it to fly to the position for a pinpoint sniping at that timing, that is even more impossible.□

gii The high class chair raised an unpleasant sound. That must be because it was pressed with weight from an unnatural stance added with the body's stirring. Chief Magdanese noticed how she had tensed unconsciously and took a breath.

It wasn't unreasonable. The image of the light of sky that was captured by the aircraft monitoring the operation area. It was launched suddenly from the satellite orbit by an orbital weapon that appeared without any advance notice, and as soon as it blew up the surface, it then abruptly vanished without any trace.

If that was the joker of the unfathomable power that was possessed by Abyssgate, then Chief Magdanese would instead feel her stomachache softened because she could believe that she had confirmed the bottom of his strength.

But, that was a weapon. Certainly it was overflowing with mystical aspect like how it was ignoring technological problem or how elusive it was. But, even so, that thing was without a doubt a weapon that was created by human hand.

It wasn't something unfathomable and unique that could be recognized to be owned just by a person, but a weapon that *could be used by anyone if they wanted to*.

That fact, even while it possessed fantasy aspect in it, but the cold reality that was contained within that fact was causing Chief Magdanese's blood to run cold. She felt a

blunt terror that was far closer to herself more than when she witnessed the mystery of Lord Abyssgate.

□.....His majesty the demon king, is it. I knew that around him there must be people with the same power assembling but.....□

□To think that Aby-san is really just someone in underling position. Hahah, there is nothing to do but laughing here. Even though I cannot see the future where we will be able to stand a chance against even just him alone, there is still a demon king-sama waiting behind him who can go *kaboom* just with a phone call, what the hell.□

□If we believe his talk as it is, it's the best he can do to scratch the demon king even fighting with his whole body and soul. Furthermore, he also said that it's unclear whether he can even match the wives or not.□

□Chief. The instant I saw that light in the sky, I understood just why the person who exterminate a demon king in a tale is called as a hero. Indeed, that person must be a hero. For that person to be able to challenge something like that□

‘Certainly that’s so’, Chief Magdanese nodded deeply. At the very least, she who shouldered a part of the national defense really couldn’t fan up any thinking of trying to stand against that.

Chief Magdanese sighed out deeply for who knew how many times already while she suddenly took out a USB memory from her breast pocket. She toyed with that using her fingers while leaning on her elbow.

□What’s the matter, chief?□

□.....No, nothing really. It's just, I'm thinking, that perhaps this thing is a Pandora box.□

□Aah. Certainly, that's a perfectly fitting phrase. By the way, is Aby faction the calamity? Or else the hope?□

Chief Magdanese floated a vague smile as her answer to Allen's question. Even Allen didn't understand what she really meant.

However, the one thing that was definite, was that the inside of that USB memory—the research data of Berserk, if they tried to use that for evil, then a calamity would descend without a doubt. That didn't merely refer to the fact that berserkers would be created once again, but in the meaning that they would enrage the bearer of mystery by doing that and turned them into enemy.

□Oh man~. Even so, if it's known by Aby-san that the security bureau is hiding Berserk, it will absolutely be a bad news won't it? All the data and drug from every facility were completely destroyed, and in some places they were destroyed along with the facility.....that is a bomb in a sense you know? I think it's better to destroy it right away though.....□

Allen didn't even hide his disgusted expression and said such thing at Chief Magdanese who was still toying the USB memory with her fingertips.

After that infiltration into the clean water facility, Kousuke who was greatly exhausted took a rest at a facility the security bureau prepared but,after a rest for half-day, he temporarily disappeared accompanied by Emily and Vanessa. They borrowed without permission the pilot and the helicopter that were with them at the mission.

The security bureau fell into uproar from that, but because they guessed the reason that Kousuke vanished, they waited until they were contacted.

As the result, it became an uproar how all the Berserk that was recovered from the facilities that were stormed by other special forces (including the army's special forces) were wholly destroyed by someone unknown. Like that, it became clear what Kousuke and co were doing.

The feat of complete destruction of the data and drug by easily breaking through the strict security of the army caused the members of the security bureau to make a dry laugh altogether.

After that, after they were taking independent action for a while, there was a contact that came through Vanessa in order to confirm whether the Berserk that was recovered by the army had really been destroyed with nothing left. Chief Magdanese offered her full cooperation and she exchanged various information with Vanessa.

If it was known that Chief Magdanese was in fact shrewdly collecting the research data of Berserk that remained from the university's research building.....

Allen couldn't stop his trembling.

Chief Magdanese made an exasperated expression at such Allen.

□Please don't say anything thoughtless. I'm not hiding this or anything.□

□Eh? But, the fact is chief is carrying that right now though.□

□Look here, after Paradis and Doctor Grant escaped from the research building, just who do you think cleaned up there?□

□That's of course, us the security bureau.....there was also the matter about Hughes-san and others there.□

□Yes, that's right. And then, Doctor Grant and Vanessa who barely escaped from the research building with their life didn't have the time to bring the research data with them. They and also Abyssgate understand that.□

In other words, it was clear as day that the security bureau who went there for cleaning up would recover the extremely dangerous drug and data.

Although, even Allen understood that much. In short, Allen was thinking that exactly because everyone understood that, Kousuke and co should be thinking that the Berserk possessed by the security bureau was destroyed already, but contrary to that they were still possessing the data. Wouldn't that be bad for them, he wondered.

Chief Magdanese who guessed Allen's unexpressed fear shook her head and answered.

□There is no way that person will swallow what I say as it is. I destroyed the data, ok thanks, you think it will be like that?□

□That, well..... Then, chief will destroy it. But, then why are you still carrying it like that?□

□For caution's sake, I want to destroy it in front of his eyes, so that he won't be able to just vanish then if I destroy it at a distant place from him.□

From Chief Magdanese's viewpoint, she was thinking that Kousuke might just return home to his country without even

showing his figure anymore in front of them. If it was with his profoundly mysterious power, then doing something like sneaking into the security bureau without anyone noticing and destroyed the data before disappearing should be a piece of cake.

But, Chief Magdanese wanted to talk with Kousuke eye-to-eye no matter what. It would be unbearable if she let Kousuke went home when their relationship with Kousuke who was able to do that much and the demon king faction behind him was still vague like now. Chief Magdanese who had self-awareness that she was already really old didn't want to have her stomachache got worse than this.

And so, even if with roundabout mean, a conversation was indispensable. She hadn't destroyed the USB memory yet and walked around carrying it was also a move for that, she wanted to destroy it in front of Kousuke's eyes to help in building a relationship of trust between them.

Surely, perhaps, there wouldn't be that much effect that could be expected from doing that, but it was Chief Magdanese's principle to not make light of even the small move.

Allen nodded with a look of 'I see'. Chief Magdanese sent a sidelong glance at Allen with her fingertips holding the USB memory before she suddenly threw her gaze at empty air and opened her mouth.

□That's how it is, so if you want to destroy it then do as you please, Abyssgate.□

□Eh? Chief?□

pachin- The chief put the USB memory on the desk with a sound like a shogi player putting the piece on the board.

Allen's eyes turned into dot. For a moment he thought "Is she finally turn senile?", but he got a gaze of absolute zero turned at him instantly so he straightened his posture in panic.

Right after that,

".....How surprising. To think that you are able to feel my presence."

"Oou!? Aby-san!?"

Allen jumped to his feet reflexively from hearing the voice that resounded from the room's corner.

When Allen turned his gaze in fluster, there he saw the figure of Kousuke leaning on the wall with his arms folded. His expression was displaying a clear emotion of admiration.

"A, Aby-san, since when you are there? Or rather, how did you enter....."

"I have been shadowing right behind you all that time you know? I entered this room together with you."

"I, I didn't notice at all....."

Kousuke turned his gaze at Chief Magdanese while putting aside Allen who was plainly shocked. His gaze was filled with admiration and question of since when she noticed him, and also a little bit of happiness mixed there.

Chief Magdanese displayed a wry smile at Kousuke's gaze while she shook her head.

"I didn't notice you or anything. However, thinking of the number of the operating forces, their affiliation, the base's

location, the information sharing with Paradis, and so on, I thought that you will be coming soon. I'm glad you are really here. If not, then I would be a pitiful person who is talking to empty air there.□

□.....As expected from the chief. You've got me completely there.□

Kousuke smiled wryly while his back moved from the wall. Surely his face looked very slightly regretful was because his hope of□By any chance, the number of people noticing me increased!□had crumbled away.

Kousuke walked until in front of the desk and he took the USB memory. And then, he crushed it inside his fist without confirming its content.

□Is this all the data?□

□Yes, that's right. With this, it means that the data of Berserk only remain inside Doctor Grant's head.□

□You are sure?□

□You can just make sure can't you? I believe you have the method to know with certainty whether the data and drug of Berserk still remain or not in this world if you feel like it. I don't plan to be an idiot that make a bluff to that kind of opponent.□

Indeed, if Kousuke hypnotized the authorized people and asked them the information, he would be able to ascertain the truth. Also, Chief Magdanese didn't know, but if he relied on that person to have him use the "Compass of Crossing Guidance", then the truth would be ascertained in an instant.

Chief Magdanese seemed to be resolved even if she got hypnotized, so she stared straight at Kousuke. Kousuke who received that gaze shrugged and shook his head.

□I'll believe your words chief. Besides, I don't want to do something really cruel to the side that will protect my friend and her family from here on.□

It felt like a threat was mixed into it just for a bit. Chief Magdanese scowled while asking back.

□.....You are telling us to protect Grant family?□

□Even if the chief advocate that Berserk is unnecessary to the VIPs, there surely will be those who question the uproar this time. If Grant family is aimed and Emily meet misfortune then.....yeah? This too is for the sake of the national defense isn't it?□

□Because if that happen then what we will face won't be the people of that side, or even the very Berserk itself, but the "abyss lord" huh. Indeed, this is the most important matter that concern the national defense.□

'If something happen to Grant family then it not gonna end well'——Chief Magdanese made a slightly tired expression at that veiled warning, even so she promised that she would protect Grant family from the stupid bunches.

Surely within a few days there would be pairs of lovers or spouses with a lot of friends moving to the neighborhood of Grant family. Those people would watch over the Grant family with handgun hidden in their pocket while rousing up themselves with□Whether the lord will rampage or not is hanging on our shoulder!□.

□Well, I'll agree to the matter of the protection. However, I have one condition——no, a request.□

□.....I don't think that this is a situation where there will be a condition attached normally. Just as I thought, as expected from the chief.□

□It's an honor to receive the praise. It's not like I plan to ask for anything excessive. Just, if you are going to do something in this country, or if by chance someone related to this country is going to do something, I wish you will contact us beforehand.□

This was the promise that Chief Magdanese wanted to extract from Kousuke by talking to him. It was too dangerous to leave him without supervision. But, it was impossible to attach a collar or anything to him. Then at the very least she wished to know what he would do and where. She wasn't telling him to ask for permission, but at least she wanted him to keep them informed.

□Depending on the situation, surely there will be time where it will be better for me to be one that take care of it. I believe that you are able to take care of most things, but surely it won't be troubling to have a connection to the authority.□

□Hm~m. Well, as long as that authority doesn't reach out their hand to us. There would be nothing more depressing then having someone move to try to get our information even if just non~chalantly.□

□The consideration of that area would be something we wish for you to trust us with.□

Seeing Kousuke hesitated with 'h~m', Chief Magdanese muttered a few words.

□.....The cleaning up was really difficult this time.□

□.....□

□We got severely criticized by the intelligence bureau, and then the water supply for that aream and also the information control..... After this we have to falsify the written report about Berserk Case in various things, and surely I will be severely criticized again when I advocate that Berserk is unnecessary at the meeting.....□

□.....□

□I don't want to say this, but I'm really past my prime now. Recently, it become hard to endure my stomachache. Do you know that medicine is not effective anymore? Perhaps this is already time for me to think of retiring. Well, I don't know whether my successor whoever he is will be able to build connection nicely or not though.....□

□.....□

□Come to think of it, my arm that got shot really hurt. Even though Allen got healed, I need to normally depend on modern medical care here. As I thought perhaps I should just retire. The motivation necessary to win the argument against the intelligence bureau at the meeting is just.....□

□Got it! I got it already! I'll contact you properly if I've business of something in this country okay! That's why, stop suddenly looking at far away with an expression like an old man that has sensed his time of death like that! Feels like your image is crumbling down!□

□Wonderful. Then, leave the protection of the Grant family and the clean-up of the Berserk case to us of the security bureau. I will hand over a private line to Abyssgate that

connect to the staff under me, so if there is something please exchange information through it. —I wish that from here on the security bureau can continue a good relationship with the demon king faction.□

Even though just now she had been pretending like an old man that was going to be led away by the death god, Magdanese instantly returned into the face of the chief of the state security bureau clad in a dominating aura and concluded the talk. Inside his heart, Kousuke's cheeks were twitching while thinking□As I thought, I'm no good with this person huh□.

After that they talked for two, three more minutes. And then hearing Chief Magdanese added a terrifying request like 'if there is a chance, please let me talk with his majesty the demon king no matter what', Kousuke once more felt admiration that this woman was really a big shot before he put his hand on the door knob.

And then, just before he exited the room, Kousuke suddenly recalled something and turned around.

□Come to think on it, thanks chief-san. I planned to confirm it myself before this, but it helps that you told me.□

□?Aa, about her you mean.□

Chief Magdanese tilted her head for a moment thinking just what was Kousuke talking about, but she immediately realized and she then surprisingly smiled. Allen was taken aback.

□Thanks is unnecessary. Although it's the fact that we had no breathing room due to the situation, but if only we could confirm it quicker, it would be a relieve for that girl's anxiety.□

□I wonder. There is no use talking about ‘what if’. If she can think of it that as the prize of working hard, the world can be a little kinder to her, that won’t be bad won’t it?□

Perhaps feeling a little embarrassed of his own speech, Kousuke scratched his cheek awkwardly after saying that. Chief Magdanese looked even happier at that while she nodded.

□I don’t have the qualification to answer thatbut if that’s really the case, than certainly it won’t be bad. I think it’s great that there is a salvation for her even if just one.□

Those words from the great woman of iron and blood that shouldered the country’s protection sounded like her true opinion which she showed at the end. Kousuke also nodded back to her with a calm smile and he exited the room.

Allen who saw the chief’s smile was petrified throughout all that until the end.

Part 2

It was at a café located in a place that could confirm the high-rise building of the state security bureau by sight. There was a girl with her blonde hair put in side-tail—Emily looking absentminded inside.

Her hand kept holding the cup of steamy coffee latte in front of her, however, she showed no sign of drinking it. She was only staring blankly at the rising steam.

Other than emotion of sadness and pain, her side profile also contained various other things. There were people who were mysteriously charmed with that. In the first place Emily was a beautiful girl, yet right now she felt like a “woman” rather than a girl of her age. Surely that was because the experience she had gone through these few days was an unusual experience.

The young men and male employees inside the café kept sending glances at the beautiful girl that was sitting alone in melancholy. That was the proof of the charm Emily was emitting.

Her long and slender legs wrapped in black stocking were crossed. Finally a young man whose gaze was attracted to that resolved himself and stood up. It appeared that he would call out to Emily.

But, right after the young man took a step forward, his foot stopped still.

That was because Emily suddenly lifted her face. It seemed that was because she noticed the young man's secret intention. Her reaction looked as though she was called by someone. Yet, he couldn't hear anything that called the girl's name other than the sound of cars' engine.

The young man tilted his head in wonder of what happened, even so he was about to step forward again——

□Ah, Kousuke! Over here!□

He saw a flower blooming proudly. The melancholy until just now disappeared like a lie, and its place was a dazzling flower that was blooming in full. Emily made a full smile and waved her hand, which caused the young man to stop walking once more. However, this time he was purely fascinated.

□.....Emily, looks like you have become able to notice me normally huh.□

The one who appeared while saying that was of course Kousuke. The young man too finally noticed after he heard that voice, that there was a male that had approached this spot until nearby without anyone noticing. The male was a Japanese without any particular characteristic that stood out.

For a moment, the young man compared himself with Kousuke and he self-assessed himself that he won, but he instantly withered when he saw the trust and affection that emerged on Emily's expression. His shoulders dropped in dejection while he returned to his seat with heavy steps. The other customers and male employees were looking at the young man with a complicated expression.

□I guess. Somehow, when Kousuke come near, the area around my forehead goes tingling.□(TN: Imagine in Gundam when the newtype sense danger or formidable enemy)

□You are awakened to a strange ability huh. Well, I'm happy though so it's fine.□

Kousuke saying that he was happy made Emily to smile even happier instead.

□So, you are finished? Did it go all right?□

□Yeah, everything went well. With this, Berserk doesn't exist anymore in this world. Looks like the security bureau has also work hard.□

□I see.....thank you, Kousuke. Really, saying this is not enough at all but, thank you.□

Emily leaned her forehead to Kousuke's shoulder naturally. Seeing that, several males including the young man just now clicked their tongue. Surely they wanted to say 'damn show off'.

Kousuke reflexively smiled wryly while hearing those clicking tongues. He then gently tapped on Emily's back while urging her to exit the café.

Kousuke started walking on the street. Emily asked him where they were going.

□H~m, there is a place I want to go for a bit. Can you come with me?□

□Yep, it's fine. But Kousuke's plane schedule is.....it's fine because it's at the evening isn't it?□

Today Endo was going back to Japan. He had finished reserving ticket for an evening flight. Naturally Emily was feeling a lot lonely, but there was no way she could neglect her parents who were piling up mental worry due to the attack against their daughter, so she was planning to spend her time in her home for a while and couldn't go with Kousuke.

Although, there would be a clone body staying with her for a while to guard her, and Kousuke also firmly promised to her that this separation wouldn't be forever, so she wasn't that sad.

□Which reminds me, what about Vanessa? Midway she said that she has a business so she went somewhere but, is it about security bureau's business?□

□No, it's another matter. Vanessa is also going to the place we are heading to right now. There is something I want her to check a bit just in case.□

□Hm~m. You are speaking ambiguously.It's just me that is out of the loop here.□

Emily's lips pouted a bit sullenly. Kousuke reflexively almost said□How cute□, but the body blow of his heart made him shut his mouth decisively.

□That's not it though..... Rather, this is about Emily. Well, you will understand when we go there. Depending on the situation, perhaps it will be necessary for me to go on ahead for various measures but.....you know, there were things I wanted to take care first at the security bureau. Just in case.□

□I don't really get it but.....fine then. If that's what Kousuke and Vanessa think as the best then okay.□

Emily smiled gently. The height of her trust to the two could be peeked at there.

It would take about thirty minutes of walking with the distance, so the two didn't use taxi or anything and walked to there while strolling at the same time.

There was no word, however, the atmosphere wasn't awkward by any means. Both of them were walking with a relaxed pace. After a while, Emily leaked out her words in a mutter.

□You see, I'm thinking of teacher even now.□

□Hm?□

Kousuke tilted his head. Emily continued while slightly looking up to the sky.

□He betrayed us, did inhuman things like that, and in the end he tried to take along a lot of people with him in death.....even so, I cannot hate him. Even now, somewhere inside me, I'm thinking of that person as "our teacher". Do you think it's strange?□

□I wonder. After all I don't know, what has been accumulated between Emily and Down.□

Emily smiled a bit happily that Kousuke didn't make any denial.

□Yep, there are a lot, things that we had accumulated. I cannot forget them. Whether when he reached out to me, or how he saved me, or the warm place and important teaching that I received, I cannot forget them.□

□Because, those weren't a lie, right?□

□.....Yes. Those weren't a lie.□

At that time, the young Emily who was cornered by the environment was saved, it was a fact. The fact that she was given the warmth of family, and also everything else, the important things residing in Emily's heart, weren't a lie.

A shadow of melancholy fell on Emily's expression once more.

□That's exactly why, I feel it's scary.□

□.....□

Emily kept looking down without showing any sign whether she noticed or not the gaze of Kousuke who was looking at her from the side. She continued talking in mutters.

□Surely, Berserk is inside everyone. Just a little impetus, something that is trifling for other people will become the trigger, awakening it. Surely it's easy to occur at particular field. That's what I think.□

Everyone had the seed of madness at the bottom of their heart. Kousuke couldn't deny that. The face of the classmates that didn't manage to go home together with them passed through in Kousuke's mind. The binding of their heart slipped off under a unique situation.

Just as Emily said, even in a situation that wasn't that unique, it was still something that could possibly occur. And then, her remark that meant that the binding of the heart was easier to come off for those who tried to walk through a path to the extreme was likely to be an accurate statement.

□Even now, I'm thinking it. If teacher didn't meet me, perhaps teacher will be able to live normally as an excellent

educator.□

It was a meaningless what-if. Emily also understood that. But, she couldn't help but thinking it. She thought and thought, even so, she continued to wander the labyrinth of her pondering, of what she actually should do.

It was terrifying. Thinking that perhaps ahead of her path, she would once more pull the trigger of someone's Berserk. She didn't have any intention of giving up her dream, even so, no matter what, when she thought of the future ahead at her path of research, her hands and feet stiffened, and something cold and heavy was sinking at the bottom of her guts.

Kousuke averted his gaze from Emily and looked up to the sky. It was likely that Emily wasn't asking for anything from Kousuke by talking about this. The proof of that, was how the light of determination could be seen inside her eyes that were tinged with melancholy, that even if that was the case she wouldn't draw back, she couldn't draw back. Therefore, she was making Kousuke heard her heavily agonizing thought even just for a little was merely her depending on Kousuke.

Kousuke scratched his head awkwardly at Emily who was showing such awkwardness in depending on others. And then, he started a strange talk.

□In the past, at a certain place long time ago, no wait, it wasn't that long ago, it was something relatively recently, anyway, at a certain place there was a single hero.□

□Heh? Err, Kousuke?□

'What's up so suddenly?' Emily tilted her head. Ignoring that, Kousuke continued to talk.

□The hero was super handsome, he excelled in both brain and physical aspects. He was fair and kind, overflowing with sense of justice, and a super popular male. He made others feel ‘just explode’, but anyway he was a really good guy.□

□Yo, you wanted him to explode even though he was a good guy?□

□Nn, well, just ignore that. Anyway, one day the perfect superhuman hero was summoned to another world together with his comrades. He was kidnapped along with the people around him by a damned shitty god somewhere just out of curiosity.□

Seeing Kousuke who was talking in annoyance caused Emily to go ‘hah’ in realization. The fairytale that Kousuke was suddenly talking now was surely not a fairytale. It was a part of the tale of the beginning when this profoundly mysterious hero was born.

Emily closed her mouth and concentrated to her ears. The person she loved was trying to tell her something by going as far as disclosing his secret. She focused so that she wouldn’t overhear even one word.

□Putting aside the intention of the shitty god, the people of that world said to the hero and his group. Save us they said. Defeat the enemy they said. The hero responded, that if there are people in trouble then of course they should help. The hero and his comrades who had crossed through world had managed to obtain great power, so surely it will go well he thought. But——□

It didn’t go like that.

□Bit by bit, bit by bit, something black was starting to pile up inside the hero.□

□Something, black.....□

Emily could guess. That must be the seed of Berserk. Something everyone possessed, a negative emotion.

□The justice of hero that he believed, it didn't work at anything. He lost his fairness and he became as though he was possessed by the deep-rooted delusion that he should be the correct one. His comrades and childhood friends also remonstrated him but, the hero who was instigated by the enemy——betrayed everything.□

□-□

Emily had her breath taken away. Emily didn't know what happened with the hero. But, she could somehow see her teacher overlapping with the hero. Just what did the hero feel at that time? Just with what kind of feeling the hero betrayed his comrades? And then——how did the hero end up in the end?

Matching Emily who came to a stop, Kousuke also stopped walking and he continued while staring at Emily.

□The hero, pointed that tremendous power of his toward us. He pointed it toward his childhood friends who should be important for him. He pointed it, toward the people that he said should be protected. At the time of the decisive battle when that guy was needed the most, that guy was at the enemy side. Everything, was in order to proof that he was exactly the correct one. In order to take back the time when everything went well for him.□

□.....What happened then, to the hero?□

Emily asked with by squeezing out her voice. In respond to that Kousuke,

□Yeah, he got beaten up black and blue by a girl, his childhood friend until he apologized tearfully. He came back with his face still swelling up so much it made us felt 'seeerves you right you handsome'.□

□Eh?□

This was the aftermath of a grand betrayal. Emily thought, that surely this would be a tragic story but with a bit of salvation in it even then. But seeing Kousuke laughed casually while talking□Oh mann~, at that time that guy came back with pathetic face! He apologize while looking like he was going to cry, but his front teeth were all broken up that everyone almost broke laughing! That was seriously s serious breaker y'know!□, Emily's face went blank in a daze.

Kousuke who noticed Emily who couldn't follow at all then cleared his through *cough* once.

□Well, what I want to say, that.....sorry. I couldn't save your teacher.□

□Eh? E, ah, no, that's not-. I, don't mean something like——□

Emily tried to make excuse in panic, but Kousuke stopped her with his hand and smiled wryly. However, he then directed a strong gaze at Emily that made her heart jumped.

□I know. But, even so, I swear here, Emily. If, ahead in this path Emily is walking through someone got their madness awakened, that time I won't let you lose them. Even if I have to sock them in the face, I will drag them back to you without fail.□

□u, a□

She was at loss for words. While Emily's mouth was opening and closing wordlessly, Kousuke gifted her with words that illuminated her path.

□That's why, don't make that kind of pained face and just advance ahead through your path.□

Emily leaped. Where to? That was obvious. Toward the chest of her beloved hero. Emily leaked out sobbing 'hics hics' from something hot filling inside her chest while Kousuke gently caressed her hair.

It was unknown how long they were like that. Before long Emily lifted her face. Kousuke pulled her hand and began walking once more toward the destination.

Silence was descending once more, but this time it was with a really awkward atmosphere. Emily kept glancing at the side of Kousuke's face with moist eyes, while Kousuke being Kousuke was writhing inside from his own speech.

Trying to change the atmosphere a little, Kousuke spoke a proposal that he actually had been thinking about since some time ago.

□Hey, Emily□

□Whaaat, Kousuke□

Her voice was sweet. It was dripping sweet. The sugar content in the air was increasing. Kousuke went□I, I might have really done it now.....□while sweating coldly.

□About your research from here on□

□Uh huh. Continuing it in the university.....will be hard I think. But, somewhere else——□

□About that, if you want, how about trying to go to another world?□

□Another world.....□

Inside Emily, it already had become a fact that Kousuke was summoned to another world together with his comrades. She didn't think that his story was a fiction. Rather, she comprehended that Kousuke's mysterious power had its root from there.

And now, she might be able to go to the world where Kousuke obtained his power of hero. That was enough to fill Emily with happiness.

□Is it okay?□

□Yeah, you more or less need the permission from the demon king to go to the world over there but, well, surely there won't be a problem. You see, at the other side there are a lot of mysterious plants and minerals that doesn't exist here. There is also something like pharmacy study there more or less, and if Emily learn that and put it into use for your research, won't that become a shortcut for breakthrough?□

□Pharmacy study of another world.....certainly, that is really interesting. That healing medicine is also made from there isn't it?□

□H~m, I guess. Though it roughly not pure chemicals but a magic medicine though.....□

Emily's eyes were sparkling bright with the idea of going to Kousuke's world, and also that it might be useful for her lifework. Her gaze looked even far better than her enraptured gaze before this. For Kousuke it was a poison in various meaning. Though it was him reaping what he sowed.

□Also you see, because there is magic at the world there, the technology there is not that developed. Currently I'm studying medical science here, but I'm doing that with the objective of wanting to heighten the medical technology there without magic.□

□.....Kousuke, by any chance, you are planning to go to that other world in the future?□

Emily looked up anxiously at Kousuke. He nodded in respond without hesitation. A shadow fell on Emily's expression.

□Well, currently the demon king is taking measures so that it will be easier to come and go from here to there, so I'm not going to be at that side forever without coming back though.....□

Hearing that, Emily began pondering something. Kousuke went□Hm?□seeing that and he tilted his head. And then Emily suddenly snapped up his head and declared to Kousuke.

□Then, at that time I will accompany Kousuke too! At that time, I'll show you that I can develop the other world's pharmaceuticals more!□

Seeing Emily declaring 'I absolutely will be useful to Kousuke!', Kousuke was thinking from the start that he wished for Emily's cooperation in improving the medical treatment without using Tortus's magic, so he accepted immediately. However, he somewhat felt a strange weight from the word□accompany□that Emily said was.....

No, let's stop lying to himself. Kousuke was convinced. That word absolutely meant□accompany□in that meaning. Kousuke was sweating coldly. Emily's cheeks were dyed red and her eyes were sparkling fierily perhaps from thinking of

the future. There was no doubt that in her brain she was surely imagining the development where the two of them were examining patients at the clinic in another world.

Even though she would be at another world, but if there was a method to return to earth, then it would be safer to do her research at another world rather than at earth where there was a possibility she would be targeted. She would also be able to defeat Alzheimer with the result of that research.

For Emily, immigration to another world was completely a good thing.

□He, hey, Emily. There is also something that I have to tell you.....□

Kousuke was opening his mouth to speak about the matter that he missed the chance to say until now because of one thing and another. Right now he was going to say it loud and clear. But it seemed that the goddess of fate was quite detestable.

A familiar ringtone interrupted Kousuke's words. It seemed that Vanessa was the caller. Kousuke cursed□Vanessaaa□ inside his heart, but thinking of the thing that he asked her to confirm, he couldn't ignore this.

Like that, what entered the ear of Kousuke who took the call was a good news that came in with a truly miraculous timing.

Epilogue Second Part

AN: This is the second part of the two parts epilogue.

There is the first part before this, please pay attention.

□Hey, Kousuke. Is this the place you want to take me to?□

□Yeah, this place.□

The gaze of Emily who couldn't hide her perplexity was wandering around without any calm. That was reasonable. The place Kousuke brought her to with fast pace after the call from Vanessa——was a hospital.

The question of□Why?□was whirling inside Emily's head.

□You see, this hospital is under the influence of the security bureau. They make use of it for the criminal or the victim of a case, or people with circumstance.□

□Security bureau's.....eh, wait, then□

□Yeah, the people related with Berserk case are also hospitalized here.□

Emily gulped. The people who got Berserk stored inside their stomach yet didn't have it exploded and the people who were confined for experiment but luckily could be rescued just in time, and the research facility personnel who got injured at the suppression operation and so on, they were all here.

Emily looked around with a sorrowful expression, but she suddenly noticed. Even with all those people here, it wasn't a reason to bring her here. If someone was turned into berserker then it was too late for them, and in the case that they hadn't turn into berserker then it would completely be the domain of a doctor. There wasn't any turn for Emily who was a researcher here.

Yes, if there was a reason for her to be brought here, then it would be the same reason with the families of patients who were gathering in the patient room or corridor even now——

With a shudder, an indescribable emotion that was different from a chill was welling up inside Emily.

□Wa, wait, wait Kousuke! By, by any chance, in, in here..... but, I, definitely remember that everyone was-□

□It kept bothering me all this time. In Emily's story, it was only your parting with her that was different. I didn't say anything because I thought that it was a slim chance, but I believed that the possibility wasn't zero.□

“Her”——Emily understood who that word referred to.

That's right. Indeed it was right. It was only her who Emily didn't see directly. When they parted from each other at the end, she lured away the immediately approaching Berserker and vanished. But Emily didn't confirm her last moment at all.

The repeated death, the overwhelming presence of death of Berserk, the heavy tremor that was chasing after her, all of those pushed Emily into despair. That was why, she thought that must be the last moment for that person, yet.....

□I was thinking to confirm it by myself, but before I could, chief-san found her and then contacted me. It looked like she hadn't recovered her consciousness, so just in case, in order to confirm it directly and find out the detail of her condition, I asked Vanessa to go ahead.....□

There was already no more word. The hope rising up inside was making Emily's heart quivered.

□The call from Vanessa just now. —She said that she was awake. She was heavily wounded and need complete bed rest but, there is nothing threatening to her life.□

□a, a.....□

Emily covered her mouth with the hand that wasn't pulled by Kousuke and then her blurry gaze caught the figure of Vanessa talking with a person who seemed to be a doctor.

Vanessa who noticed Kousuke and Emily then lowered her head to the doctor before turning her gaze to the two of them. Her expression was a gentle and relaxed one that they had never seen until now. Just from that expression, Emily discerned that there wasn't anything bad at all. She grasped that her hope wasn't a lie.

□She is all right, Doctor Grant. She is also really lucid, and the doctor also said that there will be no problem if she is going through treatment. Now, she is waiting. Please meet her.□

□Vanessa.....yes, yes-□

Kousuke let go of the hand he held and gently pushed Emily's back. Vanessa sent her off with a gentle smile. Emily couldn't endure it and tears were trickling down her face

while she opened the door into the patient room, and she entered inside.

pi-pi-pi- Other than the resounding sound of a medical equipment, the patient room was enveloped in silence. The sunlight poured in from the window that had its curtain opened, illuminating the patient room brightly.

With staggering steps, Emily approached the bed slowly. There, she saw the woman whose both legs were fixed in place, her head bandaged, and her hand receiving intravenous drip.

Perhaps that woman noticed Emily's presence, because she slowly opened her closed eyes.

And then,

□.....Emily. Aa, I'm glad. You are safe.□

While sleeping on the bed with wounds all over her body, the words that came out the very first from her mouth were words that rejoiced of the safety of her little sister——

□Lizzie-nee-!!□

With her mind still pure white, Emily only surrendered her body to her great joy and leaped to the chest of her big sister——Lizzie Ashton. Lizzie who received the embrace of her beloved little sister naturally,

□Ouch ouch ouch ouch-. Wait-, it hurts, it hurts I told you Emily! Your big sis is dying! I'm dying for sure this time!□

□Fueah!? So, sorry-, Lizzy-neeee!□

She fainted in agony. A person who was in a total bed rest mustn't jumped at. This was important. Emily went flustered and all shook up while Lizzie smiled wryly "What a hopeless girl" with teary eyes that endured the pain.

"It's fine if you do it slowly. Look, come here, Emily."

"Lizzie-neee"

Softly, as though she was touching a delicate artwork, Emily timidly embraced Lizzie, and then she began to leak out sobbing 'hics hics'. Lizzie partly closed her eyes at her little sister that was like that while caressing Emily's head with a gentle hand manner.

"Fufu, you really have become a crybaby while I fainted just for a bit aren't you? Just where has the usual obstinate person has gone to I wonder."

"Fho, fho cares.....hics, sniff-"

Emily grumbled while hugging tightly without any sign of letting go. Lizzie's smile was getting increasingly broader.

"I heard about the matter this time, just for a bit from that cool female agent. Looks like you have gone through a great adventure."

"I'm, not. It wasn't, adventure..... I just, needed to do, something somehow.....but, I couldn't, do anything.....I only, kept getting, helped....."

"Yeah. That Paradis-san also said, that she wanted to protect Emily because you were working very hard. Also, there is one more hero-san? I heard that he too lent his strength, because Emily worked really hard."

Emily stirred restlessly and lifted her face from Lizzie's chest, and then her face that turned terrible because of the tears and mucus distorted.

Lizzie wiped up the face of Emily that was like that while she proudly gifted Emily her words along with a gentle smile that Emily idolized.

□You have worked hard aren't you, Emily. As expected from the little sister of us all. Surely those guys, and Rick, and also teacher, they must be proud of you.□

□Lizzie-neee-□

□Ah, ah, geez. Even though you are a beauty but it is wasted like this.....come one, blow your nose, blow□

Emily blew her nose just as she was told. And then, she restlessly buried her face into Lizzie's chest once more. Right now, she only wanted to earnestly feel her beloved big sister.

And then, Lizzie also embraced tightly such Emily. She was only showering her love to her little sister who survived, and gritting her teeth against the loneliness toward the person she loved and their comrades who had protected them.

Part 2

The airport's lobby was really bustling with people waiting for their departure and people waiting for the arrival of flight passengers. At a waiting place where there were several rows of bench seat in place, Emily whose eyes were still red was staring at Kousuke apologetically.

□Sorry, Kousuke. Because of me there is barely any time left. In the end, you cannot go buy souvenir or do anything else.□

□No, it's fine. That was a special reunion for you. I'm not that boorish that I would be a nuisance with that.□

In the end, after that Emily who had transformed into a sticky burr on Lizzie was finally pried off after the nurse noticed that Lizzie was almost fainting with the white of her eyes half exposed. (TN: A burr is prickly seeds or seedheads that stuck to fur and clothes)

However even with that, it seemed that Emily hated to exit the room, and when she was scolded by the nurse and got dragged outside, Emily spontaneously yelled□ONEE-CHAAAN!□and reached out her hand. Lizzie whose eyes snapped open in a flash hearing her little sister's shout then reached out her hand□EMILY——□, which got the intravenous drip torn off from her hand which turned it into even more commotion. The two of them were really sisters that were similar with each other.

The nurse who was treated like a mafia who was trying to tear apart loving sisters from each other because of unpaid debt was then got a throbbing vein on her forehead. Even then the nurse kept treating the situation. It went without saying that Kousuke and Vanessa then earnestly apologized to the nurse.

Because of this and that, in the end they arrived at the airport with barely any time left until the departure, which caused Emily to be apologetic.

□Well, at any rate, it's great that Lizzie-san is alive.□

□Yes-□

It was a blunt topic change, but Emily responded with a broad smile. The lost things wouldn't come back, and the wound from that wouldn't vanish for the whole life. But, even so, there was a salvation even if just one. It was really as though the world rewarded a little, to someone that had done their best.

And, at that time Vanessa who left them for a bit because she received a call returned to them.

□Kousuke-san. Bernard is coming to see you off.□

□Yoo, Aby. I came as the troops' representative.□

It seemed Vanessa had gone to the entrance to welcome Bernard who came to the airport to see off Kousuke.

□Coming expressly here like this, is your work okay?□

□No, it's not okay. That's why I need to go back right away, but it will be no good if we don't give even a single parting salute when you return home to your country like this. Besides you see, here is souvenir from the guys in the troops.□

□Eh, my bad, troubling you like this. But, if that's the case then I'll accept gratefully——□

Saying that, Kousuke got a bit shy while he peeked inside the bag before his cheeks convulsed. Inside there were various combat knives and bullets that were carved with strange letters. There were also hand grenades that were written with obscene jokes, Zippo lighter, and high-class cigar crammed inside.

□Are you idiot!? There is no way I can bring this back!□

Kousuke turned into a straight-man reflexively, but Bernard replied with a puzzled expression.

□Eh, but, you. You are normally carrying something like this right? Remember, that small katana, or the knives.□

□Ah.....yeah, I guess. Sorry. Also thanks.□

He had no word to retort to that. Like that Kousuke put the souvenir into his rucksack. He planned to throw them into the Treasure Warehouse later.

Bernard who finished handing over the souvenir then nodded in satisfaction before he swiftly turned around. It seemed that it was true that was busy.

□See ya, Aby. When next you come here, show your face no matter what. I'll introduce you to a delicious restaurant.□

□Aa, thanks. Bernard too, don't be too reckless.□

Kousuke smiled wryly while saying his thanks to Bernard who he could only think as someone that was loved by the death god and the goddess of luck simultaneously. And then,

□What are you saying? I have a wife and a cute daughter waiting at home for my return. No matter what happened, I will go back home for sure.□

□That's why-, don't say that kind of line so easily like that!□

□Just you wait Annie (the six years old daughter). Father will get home soon.....□

□Wai-, Bernard! You, seriously be careful! There is absolutely a death god right behind you there!□

Bernard so easily built a dangerous flag as naturally as breathing like always. And then his figure vanished into the crowd.

□What should I say, in a sense, it feels like he is the one nearest to Kousuke-san. I cannot help but feeling amazed that he doesn't die with that.□

□I can agree with that.□

Vanessa for some reason was staring at Bernard vanishing into the crowd with a gaze that seemed like she was looking at a rival while saying such thing.

□Kousuke, it will be time soon.□

□Oh, is that so. Then, perhaps I should go soon.□

Saying that, Kousuke stood up and shouldered his rucksack. And then, he was about to walk toward the boarding gate. But then his sleeve got pulled.

□Hm? Emily, what's wrong?□

□.....□

While staring on the floor, Emily pinched at Kousuke's sleeve tightly without showing any sign of releasing it. Kousuke reflexively looked at Vanessa looking for help, but Vanessa only shrugged and didn't say anything.

□Eeer, Emily. I'm leaving behind my clone, and I also told you my contact number right? We will be able to meet again soon, don't look that reluctant, it's embarrassing somehow.□

□.....□

Kousuke said that kind of thing with an exaggerated gesture a bit jokingly, but Emily's state didn't change. No, her ears that could be seen from between her blond hair were in progress of changing. They were getting redder gradually. Looking closer, her neck and cheeks were also dyed red.

Kousuke then grasped the situation—Come to think of it, in the end I failed to say anything of it! No good!—and he opened his mouth to say something. But, before he could,

“Yo, you see-. You see-, Kousuke!!, I actually-, that, about Kousuke I——”

The face of Emily that snapped up in a flash was truly that of a bright red apple. Her eyes were moist where inside them there was immeasurable heat. In a glance it was obvious that she was about to liberate into words the flame that was already blazing up thunderously inside her chest currently.

The voice of Emily that unexpectedly reverberated loudly stopped the activity of the surrounding people and the walking people from walking along. Their attention gathered at the two of them. The onlookers guessed the atmosphere between the two—Oh my? Could this possibly be.....—and their eyes sparkled with deep interest.

And then, Emily-chan who was already at her wits' end was about to carry out her first confession in her life, and her mouth formed the shape of saying—lo—, it was at that instant

“Ah, there you are! Kou-ku~~~n-♡”

A dignified and clear voice rang in the lobby. That voice was so refreshing and also vaguely contained a sweet sensuality that everyone spontaneously searched for the owner of the voice.

Naturally, Kousuke who was familiar with that voice thought
□Don't tell me-□while he reflexively averted his gaze from Emily and turned his face toward the direction of the voice.

It was in the middle of her once in a lifetime confession, yet Kousuke turned his gaze toward other. That caused Emily's expression to turn 'funya' into a pitiable look. But, it was no good for her to be like that. Emily had to take her battle stance right away before it became a sorrow for her.

After all, right there the person who would become the fated enemy of Emily was approaching near.

□Kou-kun!□

□Rana!?!□

Emily and Vanessa also turned their gaze when Kousuke called a name. There, they could see a super beautiful onee-san running toward them from the other side of the crowd.

Two hills were jiggling up and down with each step of the run. Beautiful dark blue hair. Tight waist and beautiful legs that looked unreal. A beautiful well-proportioned body of body 8 times longer than head which was realized in real life. And a looks that harmonized both cuteness and beauty perfectly.

That beautiful onee-san was rushing toward them with attractive movement like a rabbit hopping forward *pyon pyon*. She decided that the crowd was a hindrance and she shifted her route a bit.

And then, while the people were paying attention to her in various meanings, she leaped and used the nearby pillar as foothold to easily fly over the crowd with beautiful rotation midair. The onlookers unconsciously raised admiring voice

□Ooh□seeing that acrobatic performance, but the beautiful onee-san Rana Hauria ignored them and leaped toward Kousuke with *pyon*.

□Kou-kun, long time no see. I wanted to meet you.□

□Eh, ah, yeah. I also wanted to meet you but, no, before that, why are you here!?!□

Kousuke asked with his eyes darting about in surprise. Rana chuckled seeing that while answering.

□You see, boss opened the gate for me. He said that it was for experiment. And then, boss said that it seems Kou-kun is in trouble, so he asked me if I want to meet you for a bit, and then he helped sending me here.□

□So, this is Nagumo's doing.....□

□Yes, I'm grateful with boss's consideration. But, it's strange you know. For some reason, boss was really impatient just now. □It's no good if you wait until he come back. Go there right now. Right now! It's better if you ambush him at the airport. Perhaps there will be someone near him, but don't worry of it and just jump at him!□boss said.□

□Tha, tha, that bastaaard-. He knew and still did this!□

Kousuke guessed. The reason why the demon king sent Rana here. It was completely a harassment. Or perhaps he did this from a sentiment of□Comrade♪ Comrade♪□.

In any case, Kousuke was swearing inside his heart while trying to separate himself from the clinging Rana for the time being because of the attention he was showered with——

□Kousuke, that woman, who?□

□Hih□

He could hear a broken language. It was a voice without any emotion in it, a mechanical voice that sounded like machine. Kousuke moved his gaze with a crude motion like a machine that forgot to be oiled. Toward the girl who was about to confess to him.

□Hih□

And then, he shrieked for the second time. Because Emily-chan's eyes, they were completely a single color. She was smiling faintly, but the pupil of her largely opened eyes was opening. It was a face that must not be shown for a beautiful girl.

□Kousuke? Who. That woman?□

□Hm? Ara, nice to meet you young lady.□

The one who reacted first to the repeated question was Rana. It seemed that Rana noticed Emily's existence for the first time when she separated from Kousuke. She then smiled sweetly. And then, she guessed from how Emily called Kousuke name that she must be his acquaintance and so she introduced herself.

With the decorous method Hauria-style.

First of all, sunglasses was necessa~ry!

□Mine name is Ranainferna Hauria! The wind shadow of the head reaper clan, and the lover of the right-hand of the demon king Lord Abyssgate! If you are a friend of the lord, then I welcome you without any reservation. However,

please never forget that I'm a woman that belongs to darkness. You won't get away with just mere scald near me.□

There was a rotation. There was a cool pose! From the sunglasses that was slightly lowered, there was a perfect wink *pachin-*. □

It was done. The perfect greeting was done toward the friend of her beloved lover. Ranainfe——Rana went□fuh□and her face turned into a triumphant look.

Kousuke crumbled down. The onlookers couldn't catch up at all with the development! Vanessa was nodding□Hohou, so there is a lover already□with an expression that was somewhat admiring.

And then, as for Emily,

□Lo ve r? Lo ve r.....Lo ver.....Lover!?!□

She recovered her sanity. And then, she turned her face toward Kousuke with a motion just like Kousuke before this, it felt like there would be *gigigi* sound ringing out from her neck with how crudely it moved. And then, with an expression that looked half-smiling, or perhaps it was half-crying, with an indescribable expression on her face, Emily asked.

□Kousuke.....you have, lover?□

□.....err.....yes.□

The onlookers were starting to make noise 'A carnage, it's a carnage'. Kousuke glanced at the commotion with cold sweat while searching for words. Rana was looking alternately at Kousuke and Emily with a puzzled gaze, while Vanessa was staring fixedly at the transition of the situation.

After knowing the fact that Kousuke had a lover, Emily's body was trembling all over while her eyes were looking down.

□He, hey, Emily? I thought many times of telling this——□

□WHYYYY! WHY DO YOU HAVE A LOVER! WHYYYYYYYYY-!!□

□Whoaa!? Ca, calm down Emily!□

□UWAAAAAAAAAAN-, this is just strange-. Just why didn't you tell mee! I would still absolutely fell in love even sooo-, but all the same this is just too muuch-. UWAAAAAAAAAAN-□

The loud scream echoed in the airport lobby. Even the staffs of the airport were approaching in wonder of what was going on.

Kousuke who got his collar grasped and shaken back and forth tried to stop Emily, but Emily in her deranged state was unstoppable.

In that chaotic scene, Rana was holding her chin with her hand while thinking of something□Uu~n□, then she clapped her hand *pon-* and walked closer toward the two briskly.

□Yes yes, Emily-chan, can I call you that? How about stopping at that, and talk a bit with me?□

Rana who took off her Hauria mode talked at Emily consolingly.

By the way, Hauria mode referred to the chuuni mode in full power. It was always on 24-hour when she was together with Hauria clan. But, at the time when she was just alone with Kousuke, and at time when there was no Hauria around, Rana had become able to talk normally in normal mode!

Rana was taught that this was the decorum in earth by Shia. It was a secret art that she learned desperately for the sake of greeting Kousuke's parents!

□Uu, what do you want? Is this where you tell me to not approach your man-?□

□No? I just want to confirm to you, Emily-chan.□

□Just whaaat□

□You like Kou-kun? Not as a friend, but as a man?□

□Uuh.....that's right-, I like him! I love him! I'm sorry! FUEEEeEEEEEN-□

Emily confessed that she loved him by throwing all caution to the wind, and then right after that she thought that she had done wrong to Rana and apologized, and then she wailed once more. Seeing that, Rana judged that Emily's feeling was a serious one——

For some reason her eyes were sparkling brightly. And then, she tightly hugged the wailing Emily *mugyu-* and,

□You did it, Kou-kun! The wife is multiplying!□

She blurted out such thing.

□Eer, Rana-san? Just what could you possibly talk about desu?□

Kousuke's speech was turning into a polite language for some reason while he asked with convulsing cheeks. In respond to that,

□Eh? That's why, 'finally the second wife get!' I said.□

Rana responded back with a puzzled expression.

The surrounding fell silent. Kousuke also fell silent. Emily's wailing stopped.

Kousuke's expression looked like he was enduring a headache and he asked while massaging his temple.

□Wh, what's with multiple wives? Isn't the premise strange? I'm planning to marry with Rana though?□

□Eh? It's not strange isn't it? Kou-kun marry with me, then marry Emily-chan, after that you need at the very least five more people!□

□Why!? Why do I need seven wives!? Polygamy is forbidden you know! Or rather, normally wife is just one person!□

Kousuke shouted. Toward that, Rana tilted her head with an expression that was confused as expected,

□That's if at Japan isn't it? Kou-kun will come to my place right? Besides, one day you will become the clan head, so having just one wife—that's no good right?□

□Ka, Karm-san only has one wife right!□

□That's true, but the elder folk usually has multiple wives you know? Don't you know that? Besides——□

□Besides?□

While hearing the sound of his common sense crumbling, Kousuke asked Rana timidly. Rana clinched a broad smile and a thumbs up while she said.

□Even though our boss created a harem, if Kou-kun who is his right-hand man only has one wife then you will get

looked down! It's fine! You don't need to be that worried, because I have arranged so I can get along well with the fellow wives!

□That's not the proble——m-□

Kousuke cradled his head in his hands. In Kousuke's mind, he had imagined a future where he and Rana would be a husband and wife like a pair of swan as the head of the clan, yet the Rana in question was actually having expectation 'won't the next wife get found out soon already'. Somehow, Kousuke felt like various things inside him got smashed.

He felt like he could vaguely heard the voice of the demon king□You too, have a taste my feeling, my bosom friend□. He got the mood of wanting to punch him flying very much.

□Wai-, just wait a second. You, you are saying that it's fine even if I'm included?□

Emily somehow managed to pull out from Rana's chest and asked in agitation.

□But of course. Let's support Kou-kun together okay?□

□No no no, that's absolutely no good! Something like that! That's just, im, impure! As I thought a married couple has to be a pair that is being the best partner for each other.....□

Emily whose head was messed up already inside was talking about what a married couple was. But, Rana was directing a meaningful expression□Fu~hn□at such Emily. Seeing that Emily bluffed□Wha, what is it□to which Rana smiled complacently and said.

□Then Emily-chan, you just give up on Kou-kun. If you say that it's no good unless there is only one wife, then that

position is mine. There is absolutely zero chance for you to replace me.□

□-. Tha, that's.....□

'Fufuhn', Rana showed a fearless smile. Emily was plainly flustered from that. Rana wore her sunglasses once more and made a rotation.

□Hmph, it's absurd to believe that you can win against this me. The heart of Abyssgate is the prisoner of my hand of darkness. There is no hope for anyone to liberate it from me. Fufufu-□

Well, in other words, it seemed that Rana was saying 'Kousuke is deeply in love with me, and I also have no intention of letting him go at all~'.

Emily saw Rana sharply pointing her finger at her, and she understood one thing.

□.....I got it. So you are the cause.□

□Hm? What are you saying I wonder? Oh cute little kitty?□

□That's why-, I'm saying that you are the cause! That speech and act of Kousuke that was painful to look at, that's because of you right!□

□Gafuh!?!□

Kousuke was shot. A girl who said that she loved him, but it seemed that actually she was thinking that he was painful to look at. Cracks entered his heart.

□Actually he is a cool and lovely person! Yet the moment the battle start, he became strange! It's you who make Kousuke

to become like that isn't it!

Gofuh!?

Fuh. Indeed, it's not an exaggeration to say that it was me who awakened Lord Abyssgate. And? If that's the case then what are you going to do? Do you think that a kitty like you can do anything?

Rana chuckled 'ku-ku-ku-' looking really crooked. She was in high spirits. She was in super high spirits.

Not noticing Rana's mood who was absurdly enjoying this, Emily-chan who was resolved to rescue her beloved proclaimed a war declaration.

I swear, I swear that I'll turn Kousuke back into a proper human!

Gahah!?

I wonder if you are able of that?

It's not about being able or not. It's about doing it or not! Besides, I also won't let you get away.

Me?

That's right. Even though you are this beautiful, but you are doing embarrassing act like that! It's unforgivable as a fellow woman! I swear I'll turn you back into a proper human too!

Ku-ku-ku-, you can howl really loud, small hero! Then just try it! I won't run or hide anywhere! However, never forget. When you peek into the abyss, the abyss will also peek back toward you!

□I won't lose! I will not lose! Just watch Kousuke! Because I won't let you be that kind of pitiful human!□

□.....□

Rana's loud laughter that couldn't hide her feeling of 'This is super fun!' was reverberating, the war cry of Emily who was threatening like a cat going *fushaa-* was echoing, Kousuke felt his heart died.

The airport was enveloped in chaos.

In the middle, Vanessa appealed□This loyalty, is higher than mountain. This love, is deeper than sea□while announcing her candidacy as the third wife. Hearing that Rana said□You-, are pretty good! I warmly welcome you!□, to which Vanessa said□My greatest thanks□and fell on her knee theatrically. It was at that time that the security of the airport finally arrived.

While everyone was taken to the security office cordially, Kousuke took out his smartphone powerlessly and made a call.

□Ou, Endo. What's——□

□Just you wait, Nagumo.□

□Ha? Ah, you had met Rana already? From that sentence, it looks like it became something interesting huh?□

The voice of Hajime cackling loudly could be heard from the other side of the phone.

Kousuke spoke with a deeply held resentment.

□This time I'll sock you in the face! I'll make you regret handing Last Zell to me!□

□Eh, wai-, you——□

Kousuke cut off the call.

In front of him, there were Emily and Rana who were still continuing to quarrel with each other even while receiving the exasperated gaze of the security staffs. Sure enough, the new objective that was added into Emily's lifework—the grand objective of stopping the chuuni of Rana, and also Hauria clan in addition, would the day it was accomplished come in the future?

□Kousuke-san. Four more wives left. They should be somewhere in the world. Let's do our best from here on. I'm feeling excited for some reason.□

□Which RPG that is huh. Just stay quiet a bit, Danessa.□

Kousuke averted his gaze from Danessa who was staring at him with an excited gaze just as she said, then he let out a deep sigh.

□Come to think of it, I'm not studying at all throughout this holiday.□

It seemed that Kousuke's dream was still far ahead.

The strongest assassin who nonchalantly saved a country, or possibly even the world, was worrying about the national mock exam that would be carried out at the first day after the holidays, and then he breathed out a deep sigh once more.

Credits

Translator : [Bakapervert](#)

Epub by : [raidoukureha](#)